

a



CA
(incor
N.
length
resolv
T
surve
propo
It
from
ensu
F

THE LIBRARY
OF
THE UNIVERSITY
OF CALIFORNIA
LOS ANGELES

41

C

Some of the Gentlemen intending to Emigrate as FOUNDERS
OF THE SETTLEMENT, MEET DAILY at these Rooms, from
Ten till Five o'clock ; and will be happy to receive and co-
operate with those who may wish to join them as the First
Body of intending Colonists, or to give information on the
subject to others, either orally or by letter.

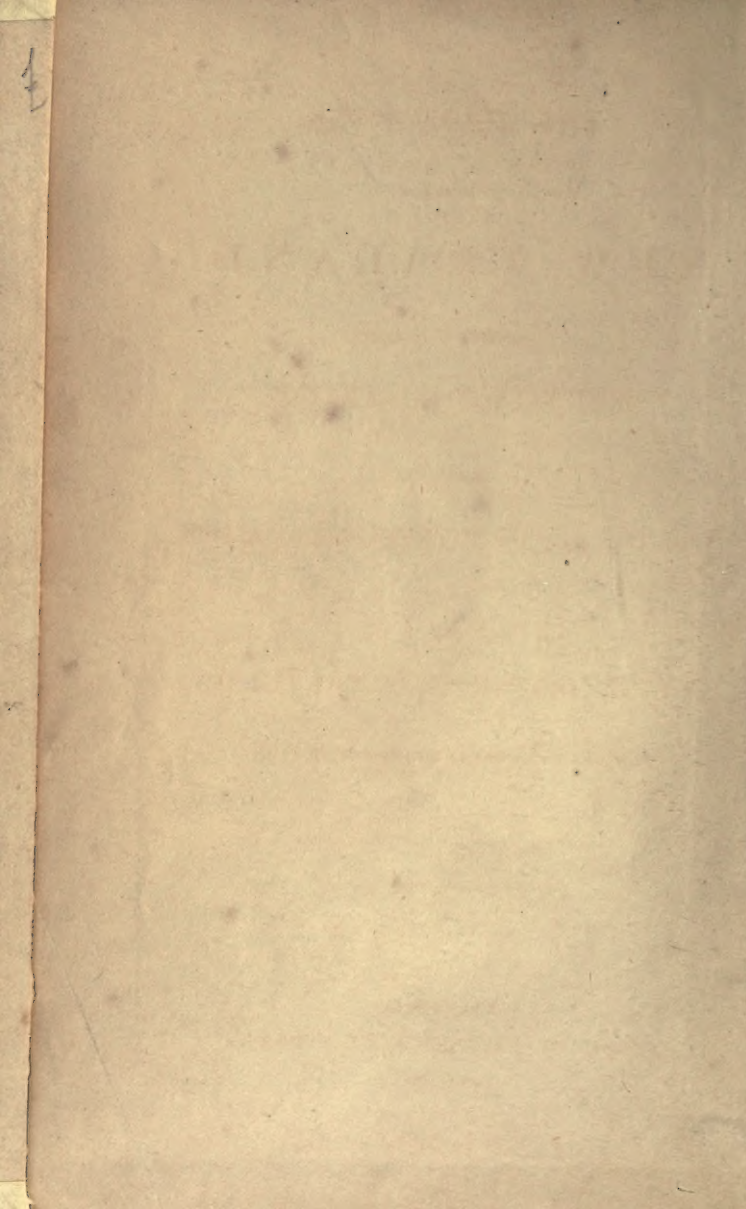
1 A, Adelphi Terrace, Jan. 12, 1850.

EW

7
2
2
11
2
2
5
4
2/8

W. Turner
1850

Digitized by the Internet Archive
in 2007 with funding from
Microsoft Corporation



THE HAND-BOOK
FOR
NEW ZEALAND:

CONSISTING OF THE
MOST RECENT INFORMATION.

COMPILED
FOR THE USE OF INTENDING COLONISTS.

BY
A LATE MAGISTRATE OF THE COLONY,

WHO RESIDED THERE DURING FOUR YEARS.

Edward Jerningham Wakefield

LONDON:
JOHN W. PARKER, WEST STRAND.

MDCCCXLVIII.

8 4 8

DU
405
W13h

OWING to the fact, that several Maps of New Zealand have already been published, and also to the knowledge that a new one, including all recent discoveries and amendments, is actually on the point of publication by a leading hydrographer, it has been thought unnecessary to furnish a Map with the present work.

DECEMBER, 1848.

745354

CONTENTS.

CHAPTER I.

	PAGE
Summary of Information contained	1

CHAPTER II.

Canterbury Association—Sketch of their plan—Preliminary arrangements—Proceedings—The Old English spirit of Colonizing	3
---	---

CHAPTER III.

Capabilities of New Zealand—Extent and Position—Communication with England—Mountains—Lakes—Resemblance to Italy—Mineral Wealth—Rivers—Face of the Country—Harbours—Climate—Vegetation—Strong Winds—Salubrity	27
--	----

CHAPTER IV.

Historical Summary—1769, Cook—1793, Conflicts—1814, Missions founded—1822-27, Native Wars—1831, British Resident—1835, Independence—Association of 1837—1838, Baring's Bill—1839, Land Company—1840, Treaty of Waitangi—British Sovereignty—New Zealand Company—Colonization—Governor Hobson—1841, Bishop—Land-sharks—Controversies—1843, Obstacles to progress—Governor Fitzroy—1845, Debate, and promises of Ministers—1845-6, Constitution Act—Governor Grey—1846-7, Otago Settlement—Government Arrangements—Details of Constitution—1848, Suspended—Proclaimed . . .	50
---	----

CHAPTER V.

District of Wellington—Port Nicholson—Sailing Directions—Town of Wellington—Karori—Wade's Town—Pitone Road—Pitone; the Chief, Epuni—Lower Hutt Valley—Aglionby—Gorge of the Hutt—Upper Hutt Valley—Wairarapa Road—Watt's
--

Peninsula—Happy Valley—Ohariu—Porirua Road—Johnsonville—Porirua Harbour—Parramatta—Ferry—Waikanae—Otaki—Native Civilization—Ohau—Manawatu River and District—Steam Saw-mill—Wairarapa Plains—Progress of Sheep-farming—Entry and Table Islands—Climate—Gardening Calendar—Meteorological Tables—Varieties of Soil—Natural Productions—1. Vegetable:—Indigenous;—Introduced—2. Animal: Indigenous;—Whale Fishery—Whale Hunt;—Introduced—3. Mineral—Land—Original Distribution—Price—Rent—Cost of Clearing and Average Produce—Latest Prices Current—Exports—General Statistics—Directory	87
---	----

CHAPTER VI.

Coast, Country, and Rivers, N.W. of Wellington District—Wanganui River—Sailing Directions—Rural District—Town of Petre—Statistics—Native Rebellion—Climate—Hams and Bacon—Native Population—Coal—Inland Navigation—Foot-paths—Garrison	208
--	-----

CHAPTER VII.

Nelson District—Mountain Ranges—Waimea Plains—Nelson Haven and Town—Facilities for Building Steam-Docks—Sailing Directions—Massacre Bay—Coal—Motueka—Moutere—Suburban—Coasts of Blind Bay—Port Hardy—French Pass—Admiralty Bay—Pelorus Sound—Port Gore—Queen Charlotte Sound—Newton Bay and Waitohe Pass—Projected Town—Tory Channel—Te-awa-iti—Tide in Cook's Strait—Port Underwood—Wairau River—Plain—White Bluff Hills—Kaipara-te-ao—Massacre of 1843—Cape Campbell—Sheep-runs—South Wanganui—West Coast—Rivers Buller and Grey—Lakes Howick and Arthur—Summary of Available Land—Climate—Meteorological Tables—Soil—Roads—Natural Productions: 1. Vegetable—2. Animal; Agricultural Society, 1847; Sheep-farming—3. Mineral; Coal and Limestone—Distribution of Land—Revised Plan—Cost of Clearing Land, &c.—General Statistics, &c.—Latest Prices Current—Directory	214
--	-----

CHAPTER VIII.

District of Taranaki, or New Plymouth—Mount Egmont—Geological Formation—Face of Country—Streams—Town of New	
---	--

Plymouth—Devon Road—Roadstead—Sugar-loaf Point and Islands—Inland Bridle-path—Country to S.E. of District—Waitera River—Country Northwards—Mokau River—Climate and Soil—Natural Productions—Minerals—Distribution of Land—Cost of Cultivation and Average Produce—Prices—Statistics—Directory	273
---	-----

CHAPTER IX.

Free Church of Scotland Colony projected in 1843—Exploring Expedition to select site—Country on the East Coast of Middle Island—Authorities—Otago District—Inland Water Communication—Face of Country—Otago Harbour—Proposed Sites of Dunedin and Port Chalmers—Sailing Directions—Rural Districts—Downs—Taieri Plain—Waiora Lake—Tokomairiro Plain—Clutha, or Molyneux, River—Lagoons—Plain of the Clutha—Bluff Harbour—New River—Jacob's River—Chalky and Dusky Bays—Milford Haven—Country between Banks's Peninsula and Otago—Irregular Settlements—Climate—Weather-Tables—Natural Productions—Minerals—Coal—Greenstone—Free Church Association—Plan of Colonization agreed upon—Completion of Surveys—Departure of First Colonists—Provision for Education—Land Sold—Subsequent Emigration	291
--	-----

CHAPTER X.

Country between Cape Campbell and Otago—Grassy Plains—Kaikora—Banks's Peninsula—Isthmus, and Plains adjoining—Ports Cooper and Ashley—Communication with Plains—Rivers flowing into Pegasus Bay—Pigeon Bay—Akaroa Harbour—Settlement of Nanto-Bordelaise Company—Claims to Land—The Bishop of New Zealand's remarks on these harbours—Coast and Rivers between Akaroa and Otago—Sites for Settlements compared	326
--	-----

CHAPTER XI.

Auckland District—Official Information—Gulf of Hauraki—Valley of the Thames—Harbour and Town of Auckland—Adjacent Harbours and Districts—Climate—Natural Productions—Distribution of Land, &c.—Prices and Wages—Statistics—Directory	339
--	-----

CHAPTER XII.

Country North of Auckland—Dr. Dieffenbach the best authority— The Land's End—Mount Carmel—Awaroa River and Valley— Kaitaia—Large Native Population—Land alienated—Hilly Range—Mangonui Harbour—Putekaka River—Wangaroa Har- bour—Marble—False Hokianga—Hokianga—Wet Climate— Lake Maupere—Thermal Springs—Waimate—Church Mission —Bay of Islands—Harbour—Town-sites—Statistics—Wairoa River—Kaipara Harbour—Tributary Rivers—Kaipara proper— Portage to Auckland—Climate of the Northern Extremity of New Zealand	333
--	-----

CHAPTER XIII.

Officers of the New Zealand Company—Its Objects and Powers— Summary of Operations up to 1845—Capital and Dividends— Latest Accounts Audited—Agreement of April, 1847—Crown Grants held—Regulations for Sale of Land, and Passage—Me- morandum for Passengers—Colonists' Room at New Zealand House	407
--	-----

CHAPTER XIV.

Former Local Government of New Zealand—Evils—Present Go- vernment possesses equal Evils—List of Ordinances passed by the Legislative Council	423
--	-----

CHAPTER XV.

Preparations necessary for a Colonist—Special Education—What to Learn—Languages—Mathematics—Arts founded on them— Geology—Botany—Chemistry—Surgery—Agriculture—Music —Cookery—Various other useful branches of knowledge—Po- litical Economy—What to buy for Exportation, and how to Export—Clothes—Saddlery, Harness, &c.—Carriage—Cattle— Sheep—Horses—Dogs—House—Furniture—Fire-arms, &c.— Agricultural Instruments—Boats—Mathematical Instruments —Musical Instruments—Cricket Apparatus, &c.—Birds—Game —Seeds and Plants—Money—Land-Orders, or Land—Books, &c.—Engravings—Hints for the Passage—What to do on Ar- rival	436
--	-----

APPENDICES	465
----------------------	-----

THE HAND-BOOK FOR NEW ZEALAND.

CHAPTER I.

SUMMARY OF INFORMATION CONTAINED.

THE proceedings of the "ASSOCIATION FOR FOUNDING THE SETTLEMENT OF CANTERBURY, IN NEW ZEALAND," have excited, especially among members of the Church of England, a very general interest in the plan of colonization promoted by that body; and a demand appears thereby to have been created for some detailed information, not only as to that plan, but also as to New Zealand, the country which the Association have selected as the field most suitable for their operations. Such information as to New Zealand has hitherto been lying scattered through a mass of books and other publications, put forth by travellers, missionaries, Colonists, non-colonist officials, journalists, Committees of both Houses of Parliament, the Colonial Department of Her Majesty's Government, and the New Zealand Company which has now become a branch of that department, at different periods between Captain Cook's voyages in the middle of the last century, and the present time. But one portion of these documents is out of print, expensive, or difficult of access; another relates only to a particular portion of the Islands, or has been superseded by more recent publications; and the remainder is little more than a desultory record of the wearying disputes which have taken place, either in the Colony or in England, between various parties concerned. In short, scarcely one, among recent publica-

tions, has been entirely devoted to the sort of information desired by intending Colonists of New Zealand.

Such persons, and especially those who are about to take a part in founding the proposed Settlement of Canterbury, it is the object of this work to supply, in as cheap and compact a form as possible, with the details of knowledge which they require on the subject. These will comprise—a statement of the early proceedings of the Canterbury Association, and of the plans for future operations on which they have hitherto determined; a general description of the geographical position and conformation of New Zealand, and of its physical features and capabilities for production and commerce; a brief sketch of its history, from the earliest discovery of the group up to the present time; a separate description of each of the existing Settlements, and of the several districts of country, now lying either totally unoccupied or only partially inhabited, which have been as yet explored, and which appear to offer eligible sites for the Canterbury Colony; all particulars relating to the New Zealand Company and its colonizing arrangements; an account of the political institutions by which the present Colonists are governed, and of those which have been promised them for the future; and a summary of the preparations necessary for departure, with any other information which may suggest itself as of use to the intending Colonist.

This information will be gathered from the most recent and authentic of those abundant sources which have been above enumerated. The compiler has also enjoyed the advantage of personal observation, while travelling over various parts of New Zealand, during the first four years and a half of the colonization which has actually taken place: and he has watched, with the attentive interest of an early Colonist, during a subsequent sojourn of four years in England, the gradual growth of that opinion in favour of systematic colonization, combining ample provision for religious and

educational purposes with the other advantages—namely, due preparation for the arrival of the Colonists, and an adequate supply of labour,—which has resulted in the formation and proceedings of the Canterbury Association.

CHAPTER II.

Canterbury Association—Sketch of their plan—Preliminary arrangements—Proceedings—The Old English spirit of Colonizing.

THE following is a list of the Members of the Association mentioned in the preceding chapter:—

THE ARCHBISHOP OF CANTERBURY, PRESIDENT.

The Archbishop of Dublin.	Right Hon. Sidney Herbert, M.P.
The Duke of Buccleuch.	* Hon. Sir Edward Cust, K.C.H.
The Marquis of Cholmondeley.	The Dean of Canterbury.
The Earl of Ellesmere.	* C. B. Adderley, Esq., M.P.
The Earl of Harewood.	W. H. Pole Carew, Esq., M.P.
The Earl of Lincoln, M.P.	* Hon. R. Cavendish.
Viscount Mandeville, M.P.	* Hon. F. Charteris, M.P.
The Bishop of London.	* Thos. Somers Cocks, Esq., M.P.
The Bishop of Winchester.	* Rev. E. Coleridge.
The Bishop of Exeter.	* Wm. Forsyth, Esq.
The Bishop of Ripon.	* Rev. G. R. Gleig.
The Bishop of St. David's.	* J. R. Godley, Esq.
* The Bishop of Oxford.	* Edmund Halswell, Esq.
Bishop Coleridge.	Ven. Archdeacon Hare.
Lord Ashburton.	* Rev. E. Hawkins.
Lord Lyttelton.	Rev. Dr. Hinds.
Viscount Alford, M.P.	Rev. Dr. Hook.
* Lord Courtenay, M.P.	* John Hutt, Esq.
Lord Ashley, M.P.	* G. K. Rickards, Esq.
Lord A. Hervey, M.P.	* J. Simeon, Esq., M.P.
Lord J. Manners.	A. Stafford, Esq., M.P.
* Sir Walter Farquhar, Bart.	Hon. J. Talbot.
Sir W. Heathcote, Bart., M.P.	Rev. C. M. Torlesse.
Sir W. James, Bart.	Rev. R. C. Trench.
Sir Willoughby Jones, Bart.	* E. Jerningham Wakefield, Esq.
Right Hon. H. Goulburn, M.P.	Ven. Archdeacon Wilberforce.

(Those marked * form the Committee of Management.)

The Secretary is Mr. H. F. Alston; and the Office of the Association is at No. 41, Charing Cross, London.

The following extracts from the earliest publication of the Association, called "A Sketch of the Plan which has been formed for the Establishment of the Canterbury Settlement, and of the views on which that Plan is founded," will be of the greatest interest to all members of the Church of England, and especially to intending Colonists.

"It has now become a truism to say that, as a nation, we do not take, indeed never have taken, a proper view of our duties and responsibilities as the founders of Colonies. The ancients sent out a full representation of the parent state, a complete segment of society, to become the germ of a new nation. They carried with them their gods, their rites, their festivals; nothing was left behind that could be moved, of all that the heart and eye of an exile misses. Under the influence of such consolations for the loss of home, men of all classes yielded to the natural feeling of restlessness and desire for scope and room which is produced by the pressure of population in an old country, a feeling not only excusable but laudable, and evidently implanted by Providence for the purpose of carrying out the scheme by which the earth is replenished and subdued."

"It is humiliating to reflect on the contrast which modern colonizing operations have exhibited; most of our emigrations have been composed almost entirely of one class, and that class the one which is least able to take care of itself, as regards the preservation of all the higher elements of civilization. Driven from their mother country by the difficulty of obtaining subsistence, they found themselves in the British colonies strangers in a strange land. They got comparatively rich, doubtless: at any rate they lived better, and provided for their families better, than they could have done at home; but at what a price were these advantages purchased! If the institutions and arrangements of British society be (as we are in the habit of considering them) wholesome and desirable; or if, whether wholesome and desirable or not, they have become essential to the comfort and happiness of those who have grown up under their shadow, how painful and injurious must be the shock when the habits, feelings, and associations which are produced by them, and which have become so deeply rooted in the moral being of an English emigrant, are suddenly torn away! It is no wonder if we find that society in our Colonies, originating as it did under such circumstances, has so often presented but a defaced resemblance to that of the parent state, while exhibiting, in an exaggerated form, some of the worst characteristics of our age and country. How could it be otherwise? Let us consider the position of the poor and uneducated emigrant in his adopted country. He has been accustomed to seek from the affluent and cultivated class above him,

relief in distress, and advice in difficulty; members of that class rarely emigrate under our present system. He has been used to go to the neighbouring church;—in the new settlement he has access, if at all, certainly with difficulty, to any place of worship. He has children old enough to go to school; he needs religious rites and consolations; the schoolmasters and clergymen are few in number and widely dispersed. In short, no care has been taken to make due provision for the cravings of his moral nature; we have thought of our colonists chiefly as of so much flesh and blood requiring to be renewed by food and covered with clothing; the food of the heart has received but secondary care. Hence have proceeded the materialism, the rudeness, above all, the neglect of religion, which have been but too general in the new countries which we have peopled, but which we have been in the habit of regarding with indifference, if not with contempt. It were well if we oftener recollected that these untoward results are due to our own defective process of colonization, and that our business and duty is, not to complain of reaping as we have sown, but to effect, if possible, such a reform in that process as may correct, in a measure, the evils of the past, and, at all events, provide against their recurrence."

"We are anxious not to state too strongly the grounds for the present attempt, as arising from the actual state of our dependencies. We are aware that, with regard to several if not all of them, higher and worthier views have been entertained and acted on at home, and also that the state of society existing in them, in the important respects which we have referred to, is very much better than it formerly was, and is, we may hope, in a condition of progressive and constant improvement. But we do feel that those efforts after improvement labour under this disadvantage,—that they are, in great measure, efforts to overtake an evil which has been for some time in occupation of the ground, and are necessarily deficient in method and in comprehensiveness. Our present object is, therefore, to set an example of a colonial settlement in which, from the first, all the elements, including the very highest, of a good and right state of society, shall find their proper place and their active operation."

"Such are the first principles of the design; the promoters of it have become convinced that men of station and character, of cultivation and refinement, moral and religious men, such as contribute by their influence to elevate and purify the tone of society, are in great measure deterred from emigrating, by a fear of those moral plagues which have been described as rife in new countries. Especially fathers of families, who see no prospect of providing for their children in their own station of life at home, must be quite aware of the opportunities which a colonial life affords of comfortable independence and advantageous settlement; but they consider, and justly, such benefits as too dearly purchased by the possible loss of

the appliances of civilization and the ordinances of religion. They do not choose to expose their children to the danger of growing up without the means of education, and thus of relapsing into virtual atheism, or of joining, from a kind of necessity, the communion of the nearest sect which bears the Christian name. It is perceived, then, that adequate provision for man's moral and religious wants in the new country contains the primary element of successful colonization, not only on account of the importance of such provision *per se*, but also because thereby alone can a really valuable class of men be induced to join in the foundation and settlement of colonies."

"Upon this idea our plan is founded. We intend to form a Settlement, to be composed entirely of members of our own Church, accompanied by an adequate supply of clergy, with all the appliances requisite for carrying out her discipline and ordinances, and with full provision for extending them in proportion to the increase of population."

"As, by preserving unity of religious creed, the difficulties which surround the question of education are avoided, we shall be enabled to provide amply and satisfactorily for that object."

"The Committee of Management will have the power of refusing to allow any person of whom they may disapprove to become an original purchaser of land, and, as that power will be carefully exercised, it is hoped that ineligible colonists may be almost entirely excluded, and that the new community will have at least a fair start in a healthy moral atmosphere."

"The purchasers of land will have the selection of labourers to be recommended for a free passage; such labourers to be also, exclusively, *bonâ fide* members of the English Church."

After stating that New Zealand has been fixed upon as the site for the projected Colony, and giving a general outline of the arrangements as to the price of land, and as to the collection and management of the contributions required from each purchaser towards the objects of the Association—arrangements which have since been further matured and carried into detail, and which will be found fully described in the ensuing portion of this chapter—the 'Sketch' thus continues:—

"Such are the main features of the plan; those who bring it before the public propose to themselves a high object, being nothing less than a reform in our system of colonization, which might almost appear to have been based on the assumption that colonists have no intellects to be cultivated, no souls to be saved; and that by emigrating they lose their right to the feelings and aspirations, the habits and institutions of Englishmen. They believe that by a

careful application of the means which they have devised, it will be found possible to preserve the blessings of religion and civilization, according to the forms, attachment to which has become a second nature in Englishmen, and at the same time to give a full development to the virtues which are exhibited, and the advantages which are enjoyed, by a young and prosperous people; and they confidently hope that, if the present undertaking be successful, its example will be quickly followed, and will produce, ultimately, the most important and beneficial consequences upon the Church, the Colonies, and the Empire."

"It is conceived by the promoters of the Settlement now contemplated, that the present time is one peculiarly fitted for bringing the plan before the public. Extraordinary changes are taking place in the political and social system of Europe; the future is dark and troubled; "men's hearts are failing them for fear;" and many persons who have been deterred hitherto by dread of change from entering upon the new career afforded by colonization, will now probably be impelled into it by the same motive acting in a different direction. There can be no doubt whatever that the "uneasy classes", in this country are very numerous. They belong to all ranks of society; but we have one, more particularly, in view; we allude to clergymen and country gentlemen who began life, perhaps, with what was then a competency, but who have now to meet the demands produced by large and growing families, who foresee the necessity of descending to a lower station in life than that which they have hitherto occupied, and to whose children the crowd and pressure observable in every walk of life seem to close every reasonable chance of progress, or even subsistence. Such are especially the persons to whom a civilized and well-ordered Colony, such as we propose to found, cannot but appear a welcome refuge. There is in a colonial life an absence of pretension, a universal plenty, a friendship of social intercourse, a continually increasing demand and reward for every kind of labour and exertion, which to those who have been suffering from the struggle between pride and penury, and whose minds are continually filled with anxiety about the future, is very pleasing and enjoyable. Supposing, even, that there be not opportunity for making large fortunes, the class of whom we speak do not aspire to make them; they would be satisfied with living in comfort and plenty, without care for what is to come, on a level, in point of income, with their friends and neighbours; looking upon each additional child as an additional blessing, instead of, as now, an additional burden; enjoying a quiet and happy life in a fine climate and a beautiful country, where want is unknown, and listening from afar, with interest indeed, but without anxiety, to the din of war, to the tumult of revolutions, to the clamour of pauperism, to the struggle of classes, which wear out body and soul in our crowded and feverish Europe."

"It would be easy to swell the list of those whom circumstances have predisposed to emigration, by describing the benefits which it holds out to the struggling yeoman, the small capitalist, the enterprising trader; to these the prosperity promised by good colonization cannot fail to render our Settlement specially attractive; but its peculiar feature consists in the benefits which it is intended to hold out to persons of refined habits and cultivated tastes, whom the moral evils inherent in our present modes of emigration have prevented from availing themselves of its material advantages."

"Our settlement will be provided with a good College, good schools, Churches, a Bishop, clergy, all those moral necessities, in short, which promiscuous emigration of all sects, though of one class, makes it utterly impossible to provide adequately."

"It is hoped that nothing may be left undone which is required to fill the void (so far as it can be filled) which the loss of home presents to the imagination of a Colonist,—to strengthen, instead of weakening, the ties of memory and affection which should connect him with England,—to save him, in short, from losing his old country while he gains a new one."

"The Church of England is now doing that which her sons complain, not without reason, that she ought to have done long ago; she is sending forth a segment of her own body—a complete specimen of her organization—which may perpetuate the preservation of her doctrine and discipline among nations yet unborn."

A pamphlet, containing a much fuller prospectus of the Association's plans, has recently been published.* The first part relates to the "Capabilities of New Zealand for Colonization;" but as it consists chiefly of extracts from several of the numerous authorities which have been consulted in order to complete the subsequent Chapters of the present work, any quotations from it will be unnecessary.

The second part, however, describes the "Preliminary arrangements and economy of the proposed Settlement." It thus commences:—

"The rapidity of the growth of most of the ancient Greek colonies, which was such that, at the expiration of a century, the wealth and population of the colony frequently exceeded those of the parent state, has led many to compare the colonial policy of those days with that of our time and

* *Plan of the Association for founding the Settlement of Canterbury in New Zealand.* Price 6d. John W. Parker, 1848.

nation. The result of the comparison has been the discovery of three most important differences between the two systems, which are quite sufficient to account for the very different measures of success which have attended them.

The Greek Colonies sailed from the parent states perfectly organized, and, for all purposes of internal government, independent societies.

The territory occupied by each was closely limited to that which sufficed for the agricultural industry of the Colonists, by the necessity of a concentrated population, to protect the lives and property of all from the inroads of the original owners of the soil, whom they had dispossessed.

They had slaves, which secured to them abundance of labour.

It cannot be expected that these three conditions will be fulfilled in the proposed Settlement of members of the Church of England in New Zealand; but it may be alleged, with truth, that there will be a greater approach to these, or equivalent, conditions in this, than has been ever accomplished in any other settlement of modern times.

The Colonists will sail from England as far as possible an organized society; and it is the intention of Her Majesty's Government to direct that the Settlement of Canterbury may be, if no local obstacles or other unforeseen objections prevent it, constituted a distinct Province, with a separate Legislature.* If this intention be carried out, they will possess institutions of local self-government to an extent unexampled in the history of new Colonies in modern times, and the enjoyment of this boon, alone, would suffice to stamp the Canterbury Settlement with a peculiar character, and to make it specially attractive in the eyes of all who are acquainted with the evils of the opposite system. Its Colonists will possess complete powers of self-taxation, of legislation upon all matters which concern themselves alone, and of control over all functionaries engaged in local administration, without any interference on the part of other and differently constituted communities, while it is hoped that the care exercised in selecting those Colonists, and their general unity of opinion on topics which form a fertile source of discord at home, will enable them to exercise with peculiar advantage and facility the privileges with which it is hoped that they will be entrusted.

The population will be concentrated, not by precautions against the hostile inroads of a warlike aboriginal population,

Form of government.

Concentration.

* See page 23.

but by the large sum of money required to be advanced in the purchase of every acre of land.

Supply of
labour.

It will not have the economic gain, with the moral degradation, of a slave population, to develop the riches of the country; but the immigration fund will supply a larger amount of free labour to the capitalist than has hitherto been procurable in recent British Settlements.

Other dis-
tinctive
features.

We proceed to notice the following distinctive features of the proposed Settlement, which give it, as is conceived, an additional claim to superiority.

These are—the preliminary trigonometrical survey of the territory to be occupied by the Settlement;

The method of free selection of land, by every purchaser of a land order;

The arrangement for the selection of immigrants of the labouring classes;

The preparation of roads, sawn timber, and other conveniences, before the arrival of the first body of Colonists;

The pasturage system;

Religious and Educational endowments.

Price of
land.

To secure the advantages proposed by the Association, it will be necessary to demand an outlay of 3*l.* an acre from purchasers of rural land. This will doubtless appear a large price to those persons who have not made the elements of the value of land the subject of a particular study, but judge principally from the prices at which they hear that land in such countries as Canada and Western Australia may be obtained.

On the other hand, it is believed that few, who are qualified to form a correct judgment on this important subject, will deny that land in this Settlement will be really cheap to every resident proprietor. Let us analyse his outlay.

Application
of proceeds.

In the event of 1,000,000 acres of rural land being sold, which would produce 3,000,000*l.*, this sum will be expended in the following manner:—

One-sixth, or 10 <i>s.</i> per acre, will be paid to the New Zealand Company for the land . . .	£500,000
One-sixth will be appropriated to surveys and other miscellaneous expenses of the Asso- ciation	500,000
Two-sixths to immigration	1,000,000
Two-sixths to Ecclesiastical and educational purposes	1,000,000
Total	<u>£3,000,000</u>

The price of rural land is 10*s.* per acre, which is not more than will suffice to repay the New Zealand Company the out-

lay and risk of loss incurred in opening New Zealand to colonization, in purchasing the land from the natives, and in maintaining the establishment which is necessary in the Colony to protect its property and carry on its operations; and in England to represent its interests to the Imperial Government, and to promote its colonization.

Nor is the land dear at this price, considered in itself, without reference to the outlay at which it may have been acquired by the New Zealand Company. If reference be made to the extracts given in the preceding pages to establish its fertility and climate; if the cost of conveying its produce to market be considered; and if this land be then compared with land at the same price beyond the Mississippi, or the lakes in Canada, (fertility, position, and climate being the principal elements of the value of wild land, in whatever part of the world it may be.) it will appear that not even in those parts of the world where it seems to be cheapest, can land, *having equal quantities of these elements of value*, be purchased at so low a price as in New Zealand.

A contribution of 10s. per acre will be required from every purchaser of rural land, to form a fund to defray the expense of the preliminary trigonometrical survey of the territory; of the subsequent surveys of each section as it may be selected; of commencing the formation of the principal roads, marked on the general chart; of the few temporary buildings required; of the Association in England; and of the necessary staff in the colony.

Preliminary
survey and
roads.

This forms no part of the price of the land. The purchaser from Government in America, or the other British Colonies, neither pays for, nor has, any of these advantages. There the Government land is divided, more or less accurately, into sections, according to the regulations as to not only figure, but size, which may from time to time be prescribed by the Government. Every intending purchaser must choose one of these sections, however wide it may be of the particular lot of land which he may wish to obtain. But an accurate preliminary trigonometrical survey of the whole territory—that invaluable guide to the selection of the best lines of road, and the best lots of land—has never been attempted in any new Settlement heretofore; although, in such a case, every operation of human industry being yet unattempted, its utility would be very much greater than in an old country, where it reveals so much that has been misdirected and misplaced. Even in Europe, the inhabitants of few territories have the advantage of such a survey as the purchasers in this district will possess. In the British Islands, a similar one is not yet completed.

The gain to the settlers in the diminished cost of making the great roads in the best lines, as compared with that of making them in improper lines at first, and afterwards continually altering them, will much more than repay them for the outlay incurred in making this survey. The vast advantage of security and accuracy of boundary, and the facility of the registration and transfer of all landed property, will be clear gain. These advantages will be cheaply purchased by the outlay which this survey will cost.

At no period of a settler's progress are roads so essential to his convenience—almost to his existence—as when he first proceeds to locate himself in the bush. His family, his household goods and agricultural implements, and food to sustain his establishment until the fruits of their labour shall be sufficient, must all be conveyed to his new abode. The loss of time, labour, and property incurred in this operation, in a new country where no roads have been previously formed, will be sufficiently estimated only by those who have had experience in America and Australia. The purchasers of land, in the Settlement to be formed under the auspices of the Association, will make a contribution accordingly to these expenses. If this money be economically expended, (and effectual precaution to secure economy in this and every other expenditure of the funds contributed by the purchasers of land *can and will be taken* by the Association,) it may confidently be asserted that a more judicious investment of part of the settler's capital could scarcely be made.

As regards the expenses of the Association in England, and in the Settlement, the station and character of its members, and their moral responsibility to the Colonists to protect their interests to the utmost, afford, it may be hoped, a sufficient guarantee against any abuses of administration. Moreover, every operation, such as road-making, bridge-making, and buildings of all sorts, the execution of which can conveniently be submitted to public competition, will be conducted in that manner. The utmost publicity will be courted; the most detailed information of its expenditure will be afforded.

Immigration
fund.

Another contribution which will be required from the purchaser—namely, a sum equal to twice the amount of the price of the land, or 1*l.* per acre for rural land, to be expended on immigration, may confidently be asserted to be a most advantageous investment of part of his capital; and, at the same time, one which he could not safely make, unless it were compulsory upon the whole body. Indeed, a larger sum than this might advantageously be applied to this pur-

pose, if all other appropriated land in New Zealand had already contributed, or would now contribute in the larger proportion, as will appear from the following consideration.

Supposing that it be considered necessary, in order to the most profitable system of tillage, that at least one adult male agricultural labourer should be imported into the Settlement for every thirty acres sold; and supposing, moreover, that on the average there be one such adult male labourer in every six individuals among the labouring immigrants of all ages and both sexes;—it will then appear necessary that six such immigrants should be landed for every thirty acres sold. But, as the average cost of passage cannot be reckoned at less than 15*l.* for each individual, the sale of thirty acres will only furnish the passage-money of two individuals.

The contribution, therefore, to the immigration fund, will certainly be insufficient; but, as other owners of land in New Zealand have not contributed so much to the labour fund of the Colony, they would reap the advantage of any larger outlay, at the expense of the Association.

It must, also, be remembered, that there is a considerable elasticity in the last of the three elements—land, labour, and system of agriculture, which have to be adjusted to each other in every agricultural community. In New Zealand, the modification which the system of agriculture must receive, in order to adjust it to the other two elements, is a great increase in the quantity of grass land. After the land shall have been well cleared, fenced, and cultivated for two or three years, it will be laid down for several years into pasture, to which the soil and climate are so well adapted: land, thus treated, instead of one sheep to four or five acres, which is the common power of unimproved natural pasture in Australia, will maintain about four sheep per acre throughout the year, with no more dread of being overstocked in an arid summer, as in Australia, than in an inclement winter, as in Europe and America; so that, although a larger immigration fund could be advantageously applied, if the Association possessed it, and other Colonists in New Zealand contributed in like proportion, the immigration fund actually determined on is sufficient to sustain a productive system of rural economy.

Every purchaser will have the right (subject to the veto of the Association) of nominating persons who shall be assisted to emigrate, in proportion to the amount contributed by his own purchase to the general immigration fund; and, if it be found practicable, some contribution towards the expense of his passage and outfit will be required from each immigrant, as well with a view to obtain the greatest number

of immigrants for a given expenditure, as to secure a better class of labourers.

Town and suburban lands will be sold at higher prices than rural land: but the funds derived from the sale thereof will be expended for the same purposes, and in the same proportions.*

Selection of
colonists.

So far as practicable, measures will be taken to send individuals of every class and profession, in those proportions in which they ought to exist in a prosperous colonial community.

The Association retain, and will carefully exercise, a power of selection among all those who may apply for permission to emigrate to their Settlement, either as purchasers, or as emigrants requiring assistance. They will do so with the view of insuring, as far as possible, that none but persons of good character, as well as members of the Church of England, shall form part of the population, at least in its first stage; so that the Settlement may begin its existence in a healthy moral atmosphere.

Mode of se-
lecting land.

The peculiarity of the method of the selection of land adopted in this Settlement, consists in allowing every purchaser of an order for rural land to select the quantity mentioned in his land order, in whatever part of the surveyed territory he may please, assisted by an accurate chart, which will be made as rapidly as circumstances will permit, representing the natural features, the quality of the soil, and the main lines of road.

Certain rules as to position and figure, embodied in the instructions to the Surveyor, and framed with a view to prevent individuals from monopolising more than a certain proportion of road or river frontage, must be observed in each selection.

But it is not the intention of the Association to divide the whole or any portion of the territory to be colonized (except the sites of the capital and other towns, and a small quantity of suburban land adjoining each town site) into sections of regular size and figure, which has been the system generally pursued in other Settlements.

Every selection will be effected by the owner of the land order communicating to the Chief Surveyor a description of the spot on which he wishes his section to be marked out.

If this selection shall not violate the regulations as to position and figure, and if the area included shall be equal to the amount of land stated in the land order, the section will be immediately marked on the chart, and a surveyor will be sent as soon as possible to mark it on the ground.

* See page 20, Article X.

The right of priority of selection among the first body of Colonists will be determined in some equitable manner, which shall be agreed to by the Association and the purchasers. But, after this first body shall have had an opportunity of selecting their land, every purchaser of a land order will be entitled to select any surveyed land to the amount of his order, which may be unselected at the time of his application.

The last peculiar feature of the economy of this Settlement which deserves notice, is the system according to which the pasture of such land as may from time to time remain unsold within the limits of the Settlement is to be distributed.

Allotment
of pastoral
ranges.

Pastoral ranges will be allotted to purchasers of freehold land in the Settlement, the selection of which shall be determined in an order of priority similar to that which will obtain in the case of freehold purchases, and according to the following regulations.

Every purchaser of rural land will be entitled to demand from the Agent of the Association a twelvemonths' lease of so much of the surveyed and unappropriated land as shall not exceed five times the number of acres which he shall have purchased, at a rent of twopence per acre, paid in advance. This lease will be renewable from year to year on the same terms. The pastoral ranges thus held on lease will, however, not be withdrawn from the market during the twelvemonth, but may be purchased like any other lots. The leaseholder will be entitled to thirty days' notice of the intention of any other person to become a purchaser, in order that he may, if he wishes it, buy the land himself before that period has expired.

The above regulations will apply only while there shall be any portion of the surveyed territory which is unsold, and unappropriated for pasturage. All the unsurveyed land (while any shall remain unsurveyed), and any surveyed land which may remain unappropriated according to the above regulations, will be held in common for purposes of pasturage by all the land purchasers in the Settlement who shall not have obtained special ranges, and subject to such rules and bye-laws as shall be determined upon by the Association after consultation with the Colonists.

With reference to the contribution for the establishment and endowment of Ecclesiastical and Educational institutions, the Association feel that it is unnecessary here to enter into a discussion of the utility of providing a fund for these purposes. The purchasers of land in this Settlement will consist entirely of members of the Church of England; and it is supposed that few of these will question the desirableness

Ecclesiastical and
educational
endowments.

of making adequate provision for the building a sufficient number of Churches and schools, and maintaining, in its complete form, a branch of the ministry of the Church, proportionate to the lay population of the Settlement.

That an excessive provision for this purpose is not made, the following calculation will show

Before going into it, the Association wish distinctly to point out—what is applicable, indeed, to the whole subject, but peculiarly so to the present branch of it,—that such anticipations and calculations are at present wholly hypothetical. They are fully aware that, before they could be realized, the approval and sanction of various authorities must be obtained; without which, indeed, even if they could proceed, they would be quite unwilling to do so. But it has been their object in these remarks to hold out to view the idea of a Colonial Settlement complete in all its parts; and they feel most strongly that such an idea would fall very short of that description unless it included, and that not as a vague generality, but in that amount of details which is here presented, the element which has just been mentioned.

Assuming, by way of hypothesis, that, out of the territory of one million acres to be allotted to this Settlement, two hundred thousand will be sold in the first year or two, and the remainder appropriated to the leasehold pasturages, the Association will have at its disposal two funds, each a little exceeding 200,000*l.*; one appropriated to immigration purposes, the other to Ecclesiastical and Educational establishments and endowments.

The former fund, under the system of partial contributions to passages, instead of defraying the whole cost of them, which the Association intends to adopt, will probably enable the Association to forward 15,000 persons to the Settlement.

The Association, considering the large surface (nearly equal to that of the county of Norfolk) over which the population will be distributed, calculates that twenty Clergymen, and as many schoolmasters, will not be more than are requisite to establish and maintain that high religious and educational character, which the Association hope, with the Divine blessing, that this Settlement will possess.

Assuming that the Churches, parsonage-houses, and schools will be constructed of wood upon foundations of stone carried to a height of three or four feet above the ground, the following will be an approximate estimate of their cost:—

20 Churches, at 1,000 <i>l.</i> each	£20,000
20 Parsonage-houses and Glebes, at 500 <i>l.</i> each	10,000
20 Schools, at 100 <i>l.</i> each	2,000
A College and Chapel	6,000
Residences for a Bishop, the Principal of the College, and an Archdeacon	3,000

Total £41,000

Deducting this sum from the original fund of 200,000*l.*, 159,000*l.* will remain. The interest derived from this sum will probably have to defray the following stipends:—

To a Bishop	£1,000
To an Archdeacon	600
20 Clergymen, 200 <i>l.</i> each	4,000
20 Schoolmasters, 70 <i>l.</i> each	1,400

Total, per annum . . £7,000

To carry on our hypothesis, if 80,000*l.* invested in the British funds, yield three and a half per cent. interest, and 70,000*l.* invested in Colonial securities, yield six per cent. interest, an annual income of 7,540*l.* will be derived from the whole.

This excess of estimated income over estimated expenditure, will appear only too small, if the indispensable expenses of management and the possibility of losses be taken into consideration.

A proportionate calculation might be made on the hypothesis of any greater quantity of land than 200,000 acres being sold, up to that included within the whole territory.

The members of the Association have engaged in their present undertaking in the hope that the knowledge of the principles and practice of colonization, which the history of modern British Settlements is calculated to impart, may enable them to secure the proposed Settlement against some of the main evils which have impeded the prosperity of other Colonies.

In conclusion, it is desirable a short statement should be made of the position in which the Association now stand as regards their resources, and of their intended course of action. They are about to obtain immediately a Charter of Incorporation, and a certain sum of money has been placed at their disposal, as an advance repayable out of the funds which will accrue from the sales of land, when they shall be enabled to offer land for sale, in a specific locality, and to a specific amount. That sum they propose to expend, after providing for the very small necessary expenses of their machinery in this country, in providing the arrangements

Progress of
the Association's
proceedings.

which will be required to prepare the Settlement for the first body of Colonists. Mr. Thomas, a gentleman who has great local experience of New Zealand, and who is eminently well qualified in other respects, has been appointed Agent and Chief Surveyor, and will go out to New Zealand on the third of July next. His instructions will be to select, in concert with the local authorities above-mentioned,* the best site for the new Settlement, which may be obtainable at his arrival. He will take out instructions from the Secretary of State to the Governor to *extinguish* the native title (should any exist) to such site, and to facilitate, by every possible means, his further proceedings. When the site shall have been obtained, he will write word home to that effect, and immediately commence his survey, and other preliminary operations. During the first year it is calculated that a large proportion of the whole territory will be surveyed, and rendered traversable by the formation of main roads; and he will also be empowered to erect such buildings as may appear indispensable to the convenience of the first Colonists; in the performance of this task, however, he must be limited, not only by the time, but by the amount of funds at his disposal. It is impossible to state accurately before-hand how much those funds will enable him to do; and, therefore, all that the Association can guarantee is, that they shall be, so far as lies in their, and (as they entirely believe) in Mr. Thomas's, power, expended economically and effectually, in improving the Settlement, and in promoting the interests of the Colonists.

In the meantime, as about a year will probably intervene before the Association can hear of Mr. Thomas's final selection of a site, and commencement of preparations, they will be employed in collecting a body of intending Colonists, who may be ready to purchase land when the decisive intelligence shall arrive, and in making the necessary arrangements preparatory to their departure.

It is extremely desirable, therefore, that all persons wishing to join the first body of Colonists, should place themselves in immediate communication with the Association, and take, as far as possible, a part in their proceedings."

"41, *Charing Cross*,
1st of June, 1848."

"P.S.—Since the publication of the first edition, Mr. Thomas has sailed in the *Bernicia* for New Zealand, carrying with him the necessary instructions, as well as despatches from the Secretary for the Colonies, to the Governor of New Zealand."

"8th of July, 1848."

* The Governor and the Bishop of New Zealand.

An appendix to the pamphlet consists of two parts, A and B. The first part is the following

"Plan of Colonization agreed upon between the Canterbury Association and the New Zealand Company."

I. The New Zealand Company to reserve as undermentioned, as the site of the proposed Settlement of Canterbury, a tract of about one million (1,000,000) acres, in such spot as may be selected by the agent of the Association, in the Southern Province of New Zealand.

II. The said tract to be so reserved during a period of ten years from the date of receiving intelligence that such tract, selected as above mentioned, is in possession of the Company; provided that within six months from such date land to the value of 300,000*l.* be sold, and that during each year from the said date there be sold at least one-tenth part of the land remaining unsold at the commencement of that year; failing which, the Company to be released from further reservation of the tract for the purposes of the Association.

III. The land, while reserved as above mentioned, to be sold exclusively to the Association or persons recommended by it, or by a Local Committee, mentioned in paragraph XVIII below; the price and the special contributions attached thereto to be paid in full, before the issue of an order for the land.

IV. A general survey of the block, showing its natural features;—such as rivers, lakes, mountains, and whatever else constitutes a permanent natural landmark, distinguishing land clear of timber from forest land, noting the various qualities of the soil, the adaptation of the land to different purposes, the best lines of main road, with other details to be specified in the Chief Surveyor's instructions;—to be commenced as soon as the land is acquired by the Company for the purposes of the Association, and to be carried on as rapidly as possible. A Chart of the surveyed land to be kept in the Land-Office for general reference.

V. A block of about one thousand (1000) acres to be selected as the site of the Capital. The lines of the principal streets, squares, &c., the sites of all public buildings, parks, &c., required for the convenience of the future inhabitants, to be marked out, and such buildings as may be absolutely necessary for the temporary accommodation of the first settlers to be erected; the remainder of the block to be divided into quarter-acre sections, as Town Land.

VI. Adjoining the site of the Capital, a quantity of land not exceeding one thousand (1000) acres, to be selected and divided into ten-acre sections, as Suburban Land.

VII. Power to be given to the Agent of the Association (or to the Chief Surveyor for the Settlement) to select blocks of about five hundred (500) acres each as the sites of other towns, and to cause

them to be laid out on the principle observed in laying out the site of the capital, with similar reserves of Suburban Land, not exceeding five hundred (500) acres each.

VIII. The purchase of the surface to include in every case coal and all other minerals whatever, granted to the Company by the Crown, and lying underneath the allotment purchased. But with a view to the general interests of the future population, and to obtaining more ample funds for carrying out the objects of the Association, *the Company* to have power to reserve from sale any block or blocks of land, not exceeding in the whole five thousand (5000) acres, in which coal or metallic ores shall be ascertained to exist, and which shall not have been appropriated to public or private purposes; such land and minerals as above-mentioned to be afterwards appropriated and dealt with in such manner as the Company and the Association may by mutual agreement determine; it being understood that the sums produced by such land and minerals are to be applied to the same purposes, and in the same proportion, as the sums paid upon other lands.

IX. No order to be issued for a smaller quantity of rural land in the Settlement, than fifty (50) acres. General regulations to be laid down in the Chief Surveyor's instructions with regard to the figure and position of sections, to be observed in every selection, whether for purchase or for lease.

X. The price of Rural Land to be, per acre . . .	£0 10 0
Of each quarter-acre section in the Capital . . .	4 3 4
Of each quarter-acre section in other Towns . . .	1 13 4
Of each ten-acre Suburban section adjoining the Capital	25 0 0
Of each ten-acre Suburban section adjoining other Towns	13 6 8

XI. Each purchaser to make the following contributions, in addition to the price of the land for which he may apply—namely:

1. To the Fund for Ecclesiastical and Educational purposes, to be vested in the Society for the Propagation of the Gospel, (until the Association shall have obtained a Charter of Incorporation,) a sum equal to twice the amount of the price of his land.
2. To the Fund for Immigration purposes, to be vested in the Company, (until the Association shall have obtained a Charter of Incorporation,) a sum equal to twice the amount of the price of his land.
3. To the Fund for defraying the expenses of the Association in England, of the Survey Department, of road-making, of buildings, and other necessary objects which may not be properly chargeable to the other Funds, and the expenses incurred by the Company for the special purposes of this Association, to be vested in the Company, (until the Association shall have

obtained a Charter of Incorporation,) a sum equal to the amount of the price of his land.

XII. The mode in which the above Trusts shall be from time to time administered, to be left wholly to the Association. But till such time as the Association shall obtain a Charter of Incorporation, the said Trusts to be executively carried out by the Society for the Propagation of the Gospel and the Company respectively, in order to relieve the members of the Association from personal responsibility. When the Association shall have obtained a Charter, the whole price of the land sold, with the contributions attached to it, to be paid to, and administered by, the Association, subject to the liabilities which it shall have incurred to the Company, in respect both of repayment of advances and of price of land.

XIII. The priority of choice among the owners of land-orders sold before the expiration of the six months mentioned in paragraph II. to be determined in such manner as the Association, after consultation with the purchasers, shall think fit.

XIV. Until such owners of land-orders shall have exercised their right of selection, a day to be fixed, within a reasonable time after the arrival at the Port of the Settlement of each vessel chartered either by the Company or by the Association, for receiving applications for sections from all owners of land-orders who may have made their selections, according to their respective rights of priority of choice. The boundary lines of each section, so selected, to be marked on the Chart, provided that the general regulations as to figure and position of sections be observed.

XV. But after opportunity shall have been given to the first body of purchasers above described to exercise their right of selection, all owners of land-orders to be permitted to select the quantities of land specified in their orders, according to priority of application for particular sections at the Land-Office in the Settlement. Every section thus selected to be measured off, without any charge to the purchaser, within a reasonable time after its selection.

XVI. Every purchaser of rural land in the Settlement to have a right (according to a priority of choice, to be determined in the same manner as in the case of freehold purchases) to demand a lease for a year, with the right of renewing it each year until the expiration of the ten years above mentioned, at the rate of twopence (2d.) per acre, of a quantity of land, not exceeding five times the quantity of his purchase, for the purpose of pasturage, until the whole of the surveyed land appropriated to this Settlement shall have been leased or sold; provided always, that at any time during the continuance of such lease, any part of the land so leased may be sold, according to the general arrangements now made; but provided also that the person holding such lease shall have thirty days' notice of the intention of any other person to become a purchaser, in order that, if he wish it, he may buy the land himself; such rent

to be applied to the same purposes, and in the same proportions, as the money produced by lands sold.

XVII. The unsurveyed and unappropriated land of the Settlement to be held in common by the purchasers of freehold land therein, subject to such regulations as shall be framed by the Agent of the Association, after consultation with the purchasers.

XVIII. Persons in the Colony, who may be approved of by a Local Committee appointed by the Association, to be permitted to purchase land in the Settlement, on the same terms as those on which it shall be sold in England.

XIX. The foregoing plan to be altered in detail (if it be found necessary or expedient) by the Company and the Association concurrently."

The concluding portion of the Appendix contains copies of a correspondence between Lord Lyttelton, on the part of the Association, and Earl Grey, the Secretary of State for the Colonies.

Lord Lyttelton's first letter, dated May 10, 1848, informs Earl Grey of the formation of the Canterbury Association, and of the negotiations into which they have entered with the New Zealand Company for the acquisition of a million of acres of land, and for the advance of funds for their preliminary operations, and requests that his lordship

"will address to the Governor of New Zealand such a communication as may facilitate the accomplishment of the object for which Captain Thomas is dispatched."

After noticing that

"the Association, as at present advised, are inclined to consider that the Wairarapa Plains offer the best site for their intended Settlement, and one which they hope there is a fair prospect of their being able to secure,"

but that Captain Thomas will have discretionary power to select any other available site, Lord Lyttelton thus concludes:—

"The earnest request of the Association to your Lordship is, that you would be pleased to instruct Sir George Grey, should there be no objection to such a course, in the first instance, if possible, to acquire from the natives with the least possible delay, for the Agent of the New Zealand Company and for the purposes of the Associa-

tion, about a million of acres at or near the Wairarapa Plains, should the Agent decide in favour of that locality, on as favourable terms as may reasonably be obtained; or, failing this, a similar amount in any other part of the unappropriated lands in the Colony which the Agent may fix upon. The Association trust also, that your Lordship will instruct Sir George Grey to afford to their Agent, during the period which he must employ in the surveys and other preparatory arrangements for the reception of Colonists, every assistance in his power."

Earl Grey's reply, dated May 18, 1848, expresses satisfaction at hearing of the formation of the project, and interest in its success. He says:—

"The Governor of New Zealand shall receive my instructions to afford the Association all the assistance in his power towards securing the land which may be required, and shall be placed for that purpose in communication with the gentleman whom the Association have selected for their Agent, as soon as the latter may arrive in the Colony. He shall be directed to use his best endeavours to obtain available land to the amount specified in your Lordship's letter, and to extinguish the native title to it, if any be found to exist in such locality as the Agent shall point out to him."

Lord Lyttelton, in a second letter, dated May 23, 1848, makes two applications to the Secretary of State. The first is for the grant of a Charter of Incorporation, so as to avoid the evils of divided responsibility and conflicting direction, involved in the assistance which, without a Charter, it had been necessary to obtain from the New Zealand Company and the Society for the Propagation of the Gospel, and so as to enable the Association to act as an independent body.

"The second point," says Lord Lyttelton, "on which the Association wish me to make application to your Lordship, is even more important, and relates to the question of Government for the Colonists.

"In an interview which Mr. Godley and I had with your Lordship on the 17th inst. at the Colonial Office, and which we had requested for the purpose of ascertaining whether an application from us for the grant of a Charter, generally similar to those given to the Companies who founded the early American Colonies, would be entertained, your Lordship stated that you did not think such a grant would, under existing circumstances, be possible or advisable, but that you would be prepared (if the Canterbury Settlement were founded in a part of New Zealand where no difficulty would be interposed by the

vicinity of other Settlements, or the presence of the natives, or any other considerations) to advise Her Majesty to exercise in our favour the power conferred on Her by the New Zealand Government Act, and to constitute the Canterbury Settlement into a distinct Province, under the terms of that Act. Our report of that interview was received by the Association with the greatest satisfaction; they are convinced that if the expectation thus held out be fulfilled, a most important stimulus will be given to the Colonization of the territory which is to be the scene of their operations, and that they will be enabled to carry out their views in a far more complete and satisfactory manner than they could otherwise anticipate. They believe, moreover, that the care with which the first inhabitants of the proposed Settlement will be selected, and the unity of opinion and sentiment which upon many important topics is expected to prevail among them, will give to them peculiar advantages and facilities in the exercise of the privileges with which they may be entrusted.

"I have therefore to lay before your Lordship the earnest request of the Association, that the Governor of New Zealand may be empowered to form the site of the Canterbury Settlement into a separate Province, subject to the conditions above-mentioned, as specified by your Lordship."

Earl Grey's reply, dated May 31, 1848, states that he sees no objection to the proposed Charter of Incorporation, and will give his immediate consideration to the draft of such a Charter, which the Association may lay before him. As to the second point, he says he will instruct the Governor of New Zealand to report whether the district selected may be capable of erection into a distinct Province, as recommended, and if so, what boundaries can be conveniently assigned to it; suggests that the Agent of the Association should communicate his choice immediately to the Governor for the purpose of such report; and expresses a hope that a district may be fixed upon which shall unite such capability with other favourable conditions.

"In transmitting," he concludes, "copies of this correspondence to the Governor, I will not fail to express to him the desire I entertain as far as possible to meet the wishes of the Association, as I am convinced that the success of this undertaking will be attended with very great advantage both to New Zealand and to this country."

During the interval which must necessarily elapse before the receipt of Mr. Thomas's report, that he has

selected, according to his instructions, an appropriate site, and has commenced the work of surveying and other preparations, the Association are prepared to receive applications from intending purchasers of land, from labouring people recommended by such purchasers for free passage, and from persons anxious to obtain any of the proposed Clerical or Educational appointments. But, of course, the reply to these applications can only be conditional on the receipt of a favourable report from the Agent; as although there is no reason to suppose that anything will occur to prevent such a report from being made, yet, if it should not be made, no land can be sold, and no funds can accrue for the religious, educational, or immigrational purposes.

It is, however, important that those who intend to join the first body of Colonists should at once come forward, in order that they may be consulted in all the details of arrangement for their departure, voyage, disembarkation, and location. It is also important that they should become well acquainted one with the other, and form themselves, to a certain degree, into an organized society, possessing an *esprit de corps*, and devoting their whole time to the object for which they shall have associated themselves, even before the receipt of the expected intelligence. Twelve months is by no means too long a space of time for the preparations which every good Colonist individually, as well as the body of Colonists collectively, ought to make for the new life. A few of these preparations are described in the concluding Chapter of this work: but many others will doubtless suggest themselves to every one who has, after mature deliberation, made up his mind to colonize.

The swallows, before they wing their flight, at the approach of winter, to a more sunny clime, often collect and appear to consult together respecting their important migration. So ought the Canterbury Colonists to form themselves into one flock, with one mind, ready in every way to depart immediately on the re-

ceipt of the Agent's report. They ought not to become first acquainted with each other on the voyage, or after landing in the Colony.

But in order to this end, it is necessary that some of the bolder and more determined among those who propose to go should be the first to declare their intention, as many persons shrink from doing so, until they know that they will be countenanced, by others of the same rank in life as themselves, in what has lately come to be considered rather as a disgraceful expatriation than as taking a share in the founding of a nation. In recent times, it appears to be supposed that no one would go to a Colony who could manage to live decently in the old country. But those who are still impressed with this belief should read the following extract from a former work on New Zealand, which thus describes "the Old English spirit of colonizing:"—

"One of the most illustrious of Englishmen spoke of the plantation of a Colony as an 'heroic work.' In such works, the great men of Bacon's time delighted to engage; and for many years afterwards, the spirit of Colonizing held possession of the highest ranks in this country. Nearly all our old Colonies were projected and founded by men of the first station in point of property, birth, or personal qualities. The author, he may be termed, of British Colonization in America, was Sir Walter Raleigh; not to say Queen Elizabeth, who took a personal interest in the subject. Virginia was founded by the Earls of Salisbury, Suffolk, Southampton, Pembroke, Lincoln, Dorset, Exeter, and Montgomery, Viscount Lisle, the Lords Howard de Walden, Bishop of Bath and Wells, Zouche, Delawarr, Monteagle, Ewre, Sheffield, Grey, Chandos, Compton, Petre, Stanhope, and Carew; not to mention a great number of the most eminent gentry. Maryland was founded by Cecilus, Lord Baltimore. The Colony of Massachusetts was founded by Sir Henry Rosewell, Sir John Young, and their associates. William Penn, the founder of Pennsylvania, embarked a fortune in the undertaking, and obtained his Charter, as is therein set forth, 'in consideration of the divers services of his father, Sir William Penn, and particularly his conduct, courage, and discretion, in that signal victory fought and obtained against the Dutch fleet in the year 1665.' Carolina was founded by Lord High Chancellor Clarendon, the Duke of Albemarle, Earl Craven, Lord Berkeley, the then Chancellor of the Exchequer, Lord Ashly, and Sir George Carteret, Vice-Chamberlain; and the Constitution of

government for this Province was drawn up by John Locke. Georgia was founded by Viscount Percival, and several other persons of condition. It would be easy to multiply such examples; but these are sufficient to justify the assertion, that it was once a practice with the leading men of this country to take an active part in the Colonization of distant lands. And the fashion was a good one for England.*

CHAPTER III.

Capabilities of New Zealand—Extent and Position—Communication with England—Mountains—Lakes—Resemblance to Italy—Mineral Wealth—Rivers—Face of the Country—Harbours—Climate—Vegetation—Strong Winds—Salubrity.

IN considering whether a sound judgment has been exercised by the Canterbury Association, while determining which portion of the British empire should be the scene of their comprehensive operations, it is satisfactory to peruse the following recorded opinions of different persons,—authors, travellers, eminent statesmen, and others,—as to the excellence of the field which exists in New Zealand for a vast amount of British Colonization, and as to the positive advantages which that country holds out to the intending Colonist.

The Reverend Doctor James Dunmore Lang, Principal of the Australian College and Senior Minister of the Church of Scotland in New South Wales, after sixteen years' residence in New South Wales, during which time he had made five voyages to England and back, published *Four Letters on New Zealand* in 1839. In this work he says:—

“Unquestionable as are the facilities for Colonization in Southern Australia, as well as in New South Wales, they are not to be compared with those which New Zealand at this moment affords. In one word, whatever may be the destinies of the Australian Colonies,

* ‘*The British Colonization of New Zealand.*’ Published for the New Zealand Association by John W. Parker. 1837. Chap. I., p. 1.

I am confident that if colonized on right principles New Zealand will one day be the Great Britain of the Southern Hemisphere."—p. 115.

J. Montefiore, one of the leading merchants of Sydney, after visiting New Zealand, was examined before a Committee of the Lords on the 6th of April, 1838:—

"I have always compared New Zealand, and still do so, to be just as Great Britain is to the rest of Europe,—the great country of that part of the world."—Lords' Report, 1838, p. 60.

Captain Fitzroy, afterwards Governor of New Zealand, was asked in the same Committee:—

"Are you not of opinion, taking into consideration the position of that country, and the fertility of the soil, and the salubrity of its climate, that it must grow into great importance?"

"Answer.—Certainly; it corresponds in that hemisphere to Great Britain in this hemisphere. It must go on holding out temptations to settlers of all descriptions; it is quite impossible it should remain in its present state."—Lords' Report, 1838, p. 174.

Mr. Walter Brodie, who has

"travelled over the greatest part of New Zealand with the view of ascertaining, among its other resources available for colonization, the natural products of the islands," says:—"No spot in the world affords so wide a field for enterprise, or offers the same combination of advantages to the English settler."

And again:—

"I have seen nearly the whole of the British Colonies, as well as the States of North and South America; and I here conscientiously and honestly state that I have never seen any country to equal New Zealand." *

A long string might be adduced of similar opinions from those who have visited the Pacific and New Zealand.

The Hon. Francis Baring, who has travelled through Cuba, Mexico, the United States, and Canada, was asked by the Lords' Committee:—

"Should not you think, considering the abundance of timber, the position of the island, the harbours, and the climate, that in all probability it will be the great seat of naval power and commercial importance in those seas?"

* *Remarks on the Past and Present State of New Zealand, &c., the result of five years' residence in the Colony.* By Walter Brodie, Esq. Whittaker & Co., 1845.

"Answer.—I have not the slightest doubt of it, if it had been originally a question of planting a Colony, that it would have been very preferable to Australia or any other part of the world. It is not only preferable to Australia, but it is very important to Australia: for in case of war, the possession of it by a foreign country would be very inconvenient to us; as the best course home from New South Wales is through Cook's Strait, round Cape Horn; the wind would be more favourable for that voyage; therefore the possession of Cook's Strait is most important to us, holding as we do New Holland; and it is important as a place for ships to touch at." *Lords' Report*, 1838, p. 153.

The late Lord Ashburton stated, at a public dinner on the 13th of February, 1841, given to Lord John Russell:—

"The position of the New Zealand islands on the map, their climate, fertility, abundant harbours, surrounded with the seas most suited to the whale fisheries, and, above all, the character of the native population, led him to anticipate that these islands were likely to become the great seat of wealth and naval power,—in short, to be in the Southern Ocean what the British Isles were to the Northern."

The Earl of Devon said:—

"It was his lot to have first called attention in the House of Peers to the Colony of New Zealand, and to have taken an active part on the subject, in conjunction with his noble friends then present, Lords Petre and Ashburton; and he could truly say that the result of the inquiry had been fully to satisfy the House of Lords of the importance of New Zealand as a Colonial Dependency of this country; and that it offered a fair field of enterprise for the Colonial spirit of the country."

Lord Eliot (now Earl of St. Germans) said:—

"He had felt that the Colonization of New Zealand afforded an opportunity of establishing our mutual prosperity upon a solid foundation; that it afforded an opportunity of promoting the greatest amount of emigration at the smallest possible expense;" and that he was "deeply impressed with the importance of the Colonization of New Zealand, as a field for British labour and British capital."

Mr. H. G. Ward (now Secretary of the Admiralty) said:—

"New Zealand, the Queen of her own Hemisphere, the Britain of the South, has been added to the domain of the Crown without a violence, &c." (*Extracted from a Report of this Meeting, at pages 45 and 46, New Zealand Journal*, vol. ii.)

In a petition presented by Mr. Masterman to the House of Commons, in March, 1845, and which was signed by 115 of the leading Merchants, Bankers, and Traders of the City of London, the following passages occur:—

“Your petitioners regarded with equal interest and satisfaction the establishment of British Settlements on the islands of New Zealand, and the subsequent declaration of British Sovereignty therein; anticipating with confidence, from the geographical position of those islands, and their peculiar advantages of soil, climate, and natural productions, combined with the character of the native population, that their possession could not fail to ensure great national and commercial benefit, and that they would, in a comparatively short period, rank among the most valuable appendages of the British Crown.” “They entertain a confident belief that, aided by the boundless capital and redundant labour of the mother-country, the magnificent islands which have so recently been annexed to the British Crown are calculated, at no distant period, to become important sources of national wealth and prosperity, and to increase the strength, influence, and stability of the Empire.”

Lord John Russell said, in the House of Commons, on the 14th of March, 1845:—

“I believe that New Zealand, if its resources are properly cultivated and if it is rightly governed, is destined to have a great influence on that part of the world. I believe that the 18,000 or 20,000 Englishmen who are there are destined in all probability to be the progenitors of the governors of a great part of that Hemisphere.”

In a subsequent debate of the same Session on the subject, which occupied the House of Commons three nights,—the 17th, 18th, and 19th of June,—Lord John Russell again referred to

“the glorious destiny to which he believed New Zealand to be called;”

And concluded by urging the House to

“assist in laying the foundation of a noble Colony,—a Colony to form a branch of this mighty Empire, and in future times to extend the English language, English institutions, English love of liberty, and the English name over distant regions of the globe.”

Sir Robert Peel, then First Lord of the Treasury, said, in this debate:—

"I willingly admit that the interests of that Colony are recommended to us by many considerations. I look at the extent of that Colony, at its line of coast, at the quantity of land in it capable of cultivation and improvement; I look, above all, at its position and the new importance which it has acquired by the events which have been passing in the Pacific, and by the opening of the trade with China. I agree with the noble lord (Lord John Russell) that there appears every probability, as far as we can form a judgment, that that Colony, if its interests are duly regarded and its welfare fostered, is destined to occupy a most important station in the world. I agree that its relation to this country is most important. Surveying the unoccupied portion of the globe, I know of no part of that globe more calculated to afford a profitable field for employment to the superabundant population of this country."

Mr. Benjamin Hawes, now Under-Secretary of State for the Colonies, on the same occasion said:—

"English interests, both domestic and colonial, became of importance. The position of the islands, their capacity for trade, their value as a naval station, the climate, the soil, had attracted the attention of capitalists at home. They had the power and the will to force upon the Government the value of these islands."
"This must be conceded, that to the energy of the New Zealand Company we owe the possession of these important islands, the Southern England of future ages."

Sir Howard Douglas (formerly Governor of the Ionian Islands, and at that time Member for Liverpool) said:—

"I do most fully admit the vast capacities and capabilities of the New Zealand Islands, as rich and extensive fields for British Colonization."

Sir James Graham (then Secretary of State for the Home Department) said:—

"I am far from underrating the great importance of the subject we are now discussing, because I am deeply impressed with the immense national importance of the Colony of New Zealand. When I consider its peculiar position, the fertility of its soil, the excellence of its climate, and when I connect these advantages with our colonial position generally, and with our colonial trade, which is the foundation of our naval supremacy; moreover, when I remember the geographical position of these islands, placed, as was most truly said by the honourable and learned gentleman who introduced this subject to our notice, as the key of the traffic between the Pacific and the China

Seas, I do think that these islands constitute an appendage of great value, whose position and maintenance are of primary importance to the British Crown. I must also express my opinion, when I consider the crowded multitudes within this narrow island, that every prospect of successful Colonization, well regulated and ordered, is a prospect conducive to the interests of the people of this country, and affords hopes of future advantages by no means to be neglected. On these grounds, therefore, I entirely concur in estimating very highly the importance of these islands, and I concur also in an earnest desire that their possession should be maintained."

Mr. Charles Buller (now President of the Poor Law Board) had introduced the subject in a masterly speech, from which the following is an extract:—

"I do not believe that there ever was a field on every account so inviting to British Colonization as that presented by the islands of New Zealand; none, in truth, to which necessity, as well as policy, so imperatively called us. With the one drawback of a long sea-voyage, it seems to be the most available field for the capitalist and emigrant within the whole extent of our Empire; and it is the quarter of the world in which it would appear to be most distinctly the interest of Great Britain that a large community of its people should be established. The extent of the islands comprises an area almost identical with that of the United Kingdom; and after making allowance for lake, morass, and vast chains and groups of Alpine mountains, I see that the Legislative Council of the Colony, in a formal address to the Crown, states the total amount of available land to be not less than sixty millions of acres. It is no little advantage that this large area is not contained in a vast continent accessible only from a limited portion of coast; but that the far greater and richer portion is immediately accessible from a long line of no less than 3000 miles of coast, abounding in safe and commodious harbours. The evidence of all the most competent witnesses before the Committee of last session, corroborated as it is by every writer on the subject, shows that the natural resources of this country are great and varied. But I will quote only one authority on this point, because it is that of one to whose opinion her Majesty's Government cannot refuse the respect they have always paid to it. Captain Fitzroy, in a letter written by him in September last, which you will find at page 141 of the papers laid before this House in April, says:—'Your lordship may ask, is New Zealand, as a British Colony, worth any great expenditure of public money? My lord, its value is far greater than the public believe, or even your lordship, with access to every source of information, can yet be aware. There is very much more available fertile and rich land than has been supposed.' I may add, that the difficulties

anticipated from the expense of clearing the forest turn out to have been much overrated, and that it is now considered that the settler may calculate on repaying that expense by the first year's crop. Inquiry too has made known the existence of a vast extent of open country, admirably adapted for pasture. Governor Fitzroy goes on to say, 'The climate favours every kind of production, animal as well as vegetable, in an extraordinary manner. It is singularly congenial to English constitutions.—I may add,' says the Governor, 'that mineral riches abound; their extent and variety becoming more known and better ascertained every month. Since I last wrote to your lordship, and mentioned this subject, tin has been found in this neighbourhood, close to the sea. Copper, sulphur, iron, and coal had been previously known to be most abundant. It has been found,' he says, 'that the flax hitherto sent home bears no comparison with a peculiar kind called by the settlers silky flax. This is now being cultivated (though perennial, it is comparatively scarce), and promises to be a really valuable export. In fact, the improvements already made justify us in believing that New Zealand flax will ere long be a cheap and valuable substitute for Russian hemp. Whales,' he says, 'are again frequenting these coasts in numbers, after having for a time almost deserted them.' And here I must beg particularly to remind the House of the great importance of the South Sea whale fishery, on which the world now almost entirely depends for its supply of oil and whalebone, the North Sea whale fishery being almost destroyed. Of this, New Zealand is the natural emporium. Captain Fitzroy then goes on to comment on 'the valuable qualities and abundance of the timber;' and it is now well known that New Zealand produces the greatest possible variety of beautiful furniture wood, and timber for all domestic purposes. 'The natives,' he adds, 'are well inclined to labour for very small remuneration, and are anxiously seeking for employment. There are all the means for prosperity, except capital; but that, with our mineral wealth, is sure to be found, if good feeling is kept up between the natives and Europeans, and the security of property as well as life fully maintained.'

"Captain Fitzroy then goes on to say, 'I have here referred only to the commercial bearings of this grave question: the political aspect will be before your lordship's eye in England.' Considerations of the greatest moment do indeed give great political importance to the possession of New Zealand. Our trade with the Pacific is daily increasing in extent. Our relations with other Powers in that Ocean are getting to be very delicate. France has possession of the Friendly Islands and the Marquesas. The United States have virtual possession of the Sandwich Islands. The American coast of this great ocean presents the important dominions of Chili, Peru, Mexico, with the possible, the very probable, communication across the Isthmus of Darien, and our valuable territory of the

Oregon. On the Asiatic side, you have the far greater commerce of China, the Philippine Islands, and the Indian Archipelago. A British Colony in New Zealand would be the natural master of this Ocean, the irresistible arbiter of all its complicated relations and important interests. Its position would command the Pacific; its numerous harbours would supply shelter, its vast forests materials, for the greatest navy in the world. You might make it in truth the Britain of the Southern Hemisphere: there you might concentrate the trade of the Pacific; and from that new seat of your dominion you might give laws and manners to a new world, upholding subject races, and imposing your will on the strong."

New Zealand consists of two large islands,—called the North and the Middle,—a smaller island called Stewart's, and several adjacent islets. The group extends from north to south between the 34th and 48th degrees of south latitude, and from east to west between the 166th and 179th degrees of east longitude. The extreme length, from the North Cape to the South Cape, exceeds 900 miles. The greatest breadth is about 300 miles; diminishing to 200, and to 100, and to greatly less towards the northern extremity of the North Island; the average breadth is perhaps rather more than 100 miles. The North and Middle Islands are separated by Cook's Strait, in latitude 41° S.; and Stewart's Island is divided from the Middle Island by Foveaux's Strait, in latitude $46^{\circ} 40'$ S.

The North Island has been estimated to contain 31,174,400 acres, the Middle Island 46,126,080, and Stewart's Island about 1,000,000 acres of land. A more distinct notion of their size may be conveyed to the reader by reminding him that the North Island is only about one thirty-second part less than England, exclusive of Wales and Scotland; that the Middle Island is about one-ninth part less than England and Scotland together; and that the whole group contains 78,300,480 acres, or only about 50,000 acres less than the whole of Great Britain and Ireland, with all the little adjacent islands.

Of these 78,300,480 acres, there appears good reason to believe that, after allowing amply for mountainous districts, water, and irreclaimable morasses or sandhills, at least two-thirds, or upwards of 52,000,000 acres, are susceptible of beneficial occupation for the purposes of agriculture or pasturage.

This country was first seen by the Dutch navigator Tasman, in 1642: but, as he never landed, and supposed it to form part of a great Southern continent, the honour of its discovery belongs to Captain Cook, who first proved it to consist of islands by circumnavigating the group, and sailing through the strait which bears his name. He visited New Zealand at various periods between the years 1769 and 1777, and surveyed a great part of the coasts with such remarkable accuracy, that modern surveyors down to the present day have only confirmed his charts, except where they have laid down portions of the shore which he had not approached closely enough to examine.

New Zealand is the land nearest to the Antipodes of Great Britain. It lies 1200 miles to the east of the continent of Australia, and nearly in the centre of an immense semicircle formed by the continents of America, Asia, and Africa; which extends from Cape Horn, by Behring's Strait, to the Cape of Good Hope, and contains within its compass the several groups of islands which compose the Eastern and Polynesian Archipelagoes.

The following is a table of distances, in round numbers, from Wellington, on the north shore of Cook's Strait, the principal port of New Zealand, to various remarkable spots within this vast semicircle:—

	Miles, about.
To Sydney, the capital of New South Wales . . .	1200
To Hobart Town, the capital of Van Diemen's Land . . .	1300
To Melbourne, the capital of Australia Felix . . .	1400
To Adelaide, the capital of South Australia . . .	1800
To Perth, the capital of Western Australia . . .	2500
To the Mauritius	5800

	Miles, about.
To the Cape of Good Hope	7200
To Aden, at the mouth of the Red Sea	7600
To Bombay	6300
To Ceylon	5700
To Madras	6000
To Calcutta	6600
To Singapore	4300
To Hongkong	5400
To Manilla	4800
To Labuan, in the island of Borneo	4300
To Tahiti	2400
To the Marquesas Islands	3100
To the Sandwich Islands	4800
To Vancouver's Island, in the Oregon Territory	6900
To Panama	6000
To Lima, the capital of Peru	5800
To Valparaiso, the principal sea-port of Chili	5500

The length of the voyage from England to Wellington, round the Cape of Good Hope, is about the same as that to Sydney, averaging nearly 120 days, although it has been accomplished, on more than one occasion, in less than 90.* Westerly winds blow steadily in the latitudes south of 40° S., all round the world, for about nine months of the year; so that the distance northward to Sydney, from Bass's Strait, or from the South Cape of Van Diemen's Land, is practically greater than from the same point of separation to Wellington. In return-voyages to Europe, by way of Cape Horn, the whole distance between the two points of departure is gained by ships coming direct from New Zealand, over those from any part of Australia, which pass frequently through Cook's Strait.

In the very probable event of the establishment of regular steam communication across the Atlantic and Pacific Oceans, with land-conveyance by railway over the Isthmus of Darien, the voyage from England to New Zealand may be reduced, at no distant day, to the compass of eight or nine weeks. And it seems also

* In Appendix A, is given an account of a passage made in the end of the year 1846, by H. M. steam-sloop *Inflexible*, from England to New Zealand, calling at the Cape of Good Hope and Sydney.

likely that a branch of the steam communication already existing between England and Singapore will soon be extended, through Torres' Strait, to Australia and New Zealand, a Company for that purpose having been already formed, and having procured a Charter of Incorporation. The existence of an abundant supply of coal, in several convenient situations on the coasts of New Zealand, points out that country as certain to be an important station for steam-ships taking either of these routes.*

Intending emigrants often object to New Zealand, in common with the other Australasian Colonies, on account of the length of the voyage in comparison with that to North America. The following extracts from an article on the subject, which appeared in the *Times* of the 13th November, 1845, will be perused with interest by persons who may be yet undecided on this ground:—

“Notwithstanding all the before-named facts and grave authorities in favour of New Zealand, there is yet a circumstance of paramount importance, which is as applicable to all the Australian colonies as to New Zealand—viz., the passage. The three great fields of emigration are the United States, the Anglo-North-American colonies, and of late years the Pacific. Floating hotels, propelled by steam, make the passage to the St. Lawrence and the United States in ten or twelve days; still that has nothing to do with the passage of emigrants. The prevalence of westerly winds is such that there is a great difference between the passage to and from America. Then, again, the climate is such, that for half the year the passage cannot be made at all (by sailing ships) north of New York. Nor is this all: the ice of the northern regions breaks off, floats southwards in immense masses, and renders the seas on the north coasts of America dangerous, even as late as the month of June.”

“The average length of passage of emigrant ships to the British North American states, as officially returned by Mr. Busby, is forty-nine days; and even the finest ships of war,—for instance, the

* New Zealand coal has already been tried on board H. M. steam sloops *Driver* and *Inflexible*. See Appendix A, for a report made by Captain Hoseason, R.N., upon its capabilities for the purposes of steam-navigation.

Warspite, which carried out Lord Ashburton, was forty-seven days between Portsmouth and New York; the *Illustrious*, with Sir Charles Bagot, was fifty-one."

"But then of what is composed by far the greater number of the voyages which form Mr. Busby's average? They are the voyages from the Clyde, Liverpool, Belfast, Londonderry, Cork, and Limerick; and ships sailing from these places must make the opposite shores of the Atlantic at least ten days sooner than ships from the Thames. The average voyages of ships from England to New Zealand may be calculated at 120 days, and these are placed in comparison with the vessels from the western ports to the coasts of America. Send vessels from these ports to any of the Australian colonies, and the average voyage would be reduced to 110 days; or, calculate the length of voyage by sailing vessels only from the Thames to the St. Lawrence and New York, ten days at least must be added to Mr. Busby's average."

"Whichever way you take it, the voyage from Britain to Australia and New Zealand cannot occupy more than double the time of that to America, and this alone is to be considered. In as far as maintaining emigrants is concerned, the advantage to the ship-owner is greatly in favour of the Australian voyage:—1st. He can work all the year round. 2nd. He can, in going to Australia or New Zealand, receive the freight of two voyages to America with only once loading and discharging, whilst in the American voyage this must be done twice."

"It is probable that at present the want of back freight for the return voyage occasions necessarily a high price of freight outwards; this, however, is mending every day; the day is not very far distant when Sir R. Peel will carry his opinion out, 'that the Colonies should form an integral part of the British Empire.' Let England receive corn from the Polynesian sea at the same duty as from Canada;—give a title of the land of New Zealand to the settlers, and there will be back freights enough."

"All this, however, is little more than a comparative examination of the interests of shipowners between America and Australia, from which it is evident that a human being can be carried, and will be in a very short time, at rather less the double price to Australia than is paid to America."

"But when landed,—the sea between Great Britain and America is, as it were, the first bridge,—that passed, comes the land journey; and this is generally as far west as the funds of the emigrant permit him to go. The majority of those without, and who consequently have no means to proceed inland, beg the means to return. Upon this subject the words of Mr. Buckingham, in his recent work on the United States, shall be quoted:—

" * * * It is ascertained as a fact, that more than one-third of the emigrants from Europe die within the first three years of their

residence in this country, though they generally come out in the full vigour of life.’”

“ * * * * Those who, as soon as landed on the quays at New York, beg the means of returning, in the year 1842 amounted to 10,000 from that port only.” * * * *

“ Putting, however, political reasons on one side, all these American countries are the same in point of climate as the European Baltic. They are all existing under the scourge of a Scandinavian climate—freezing their seas and ports between four and five months out of the year—forcing shipping and trade to partake of the same torpidity that it has imposed on its vegetation.”

“ The Polynesian seas—the ports of Australia and New Zealand—are open all the year round; and these colonies are destined, under proper management, in the course of a few years, to supply our maritime empire with all the produce which half-yearly is drawn from the Baltic; and when once colonized, all the trade which now goes to these (North American) colonies will go all the year round to the Pacific, of which it may be well said that New Zealand is the Queen and the Britain of the Southern Hemisphere.”

The following extract from the first part of the “Plan of the Canterbury Association,” also affords a striking comparison of the distances between England and the Colonist’s location in America and New Zealand respectively:

“ As regards the question of distance and facility of Communication, it will be well to bear in mind the following considerations. The principal elements which enter into the cost of conveying bulky commodities from one country to another are—

“ The insurance against the total loss, and that against the wear and tear of the vessel that carries them;

“ The insurance against the total loss, and that against the damage of the goods carried;

“ The expense of loading and unloading; and

“ The wages and provisions of officers and crew during the voyage.

“ Now, if the premiums of insurance be taken as a measure of the risk of losing or damaging vessel or cargo in any voyage, New Zealand will be in a slightly less favourable position in this respect than New York, but will claim a considerable advantage over British North America for more than half the year; the premium on marine assurance to New Zealand in the winter months being 60s., whilst that to Halifax, nearly the only port in British North America accessible in those months, is 100s., per 100l. value.

“ The charges for loading and unloading, warehousing,

brokerage and commission on the goods, for light and harbour dues, and pilotage on the vessel, will be the same in both cases.

“The wages and provisions of the officers and crew, a comparatively unimportant element in the cost price of freight, will be proportionate to the length of the voyage.

“Therefore, whenever the exports of Australia and New Zealand shall be of sufficient volume to fill readily the largest ships—and that time is not very distant—the expense of conveying to, and selling in, the British market, Australian and New Zealand produce, will little exceed the cost of the same operations on American produce shipped from the wharfs of Quebec, or even New York.

“But it may be remarked, as regards most of the American farmers, that the cost of conveying their produce to the port of shipment far exceeds that of conveying it thence to the British market. To obtain cheap land, the emigrant to America must now travel more than 1000 miles from the sea-board to the interior of Michigan or Illinois. The cost of conveying his flour from these distant inland districts is generally 4*l.* or 5*l.* per ton, or six times that of conveying it from New York to Liverpool. Thus the total cost of conveying it from Illinois, for instance, to Liverpool, will probably exceed that of conveying it from the New Zealand farm (which, from the form of the islands, can rarely be far from the sea) to the same port.

“Two important improvements in the means of communication between distant countries are now in process of introduction—namely, a great increase in the size and strength of merchant vessels, and the application of steam to marine locomotion. Already the average capacity of the packet-ships trading between New York and Liverpool exceeds 1000 tons, and before many years shall have passed, it is not improbable that their average capacity will approximate to 2000 tons. These vessels, from their smaller prime cost, and the smaller crew required to work them, in proportion to the cargo which they can carry, are enabled to convey goods at a low rate compared with those of less tonnage. This will become a very important consideration, as soon as the exports from Australia and New Zealand shall be of sufficient magnitude to give full employment to ships of the same size as that of the New York packet ships.

“The voyage from London to Wellington in New Zealand has been accomplished in eighty-nine days; but the average length of it is somewhat under four months. It is, however, certain that steam communication is about to be immediately established between Singapore and Sydney, and

there is no doubt that its establishment will be followed by that of a branch service from Sydney to New Zealand, unless, indeed, the progress of the latter colony be found to justify a more direct communication between it and India. The time which will then be required for the whole voyage from London to Wellington will not generally exceed half the present average—that is, two months."

Like many other of the South Sea Islands, New Zealand is of volcanic origin. A chain of lofty, sharp-peaked mountains intersects the Middle Island from N.E. to S.W. The highest peaks of the chain are clothed with perpetual snow, like the Alps; and in the winter, when the whole range is snow-covered, their appearance is strikingly grand. None of them have yet been ascended or accurately measured. No volcano in active operation has yet been discovered on the Middle Island.

The mountains in the North Island do not form so continuous a chain, and, with the exception of a few detached peaks, do not attain so great a height. Apart from these exceptions, the ranges in the North Island are only clothed with snow during two or three winter months. The isolated peaks remarkable for their height are—Mount Egmont, Tongariro, Ruapehu, and Mount Edgécumbe.

Mount Egmont, an extinct volcano, situated in the south-western extremity of the island, near the shore of Cook's Strait, was first ascended by Dr. Ernest Dieffenbach, in December, 1839; and its height above the level of the sea was reckoned by him at 8840 feet.

Tongariro, a volcano in active operation, and Ruapehu, an extinct volcano, lie close to each other, forming, with two or three lesser peaks, a magnificent mountain-group near the centre of the island. The former was first ascended by Mr. John Carne Bidwill, in March, 1839; and its height is estimated by him at 6200 feet above the level of the sea. Ruapehu must be considerably higher, as its summit is, at any rate, far above the limit of perpetual snow.

Mount Edgecumbe is an extinct volcano, near the shore of the Bay of Plenty. It is not known to have been ever ascended, nor has it ever been accurately measured. It is supposed, however, to rise to the height of 7000 feet.

In a direction from north-east to south-west, between Mount Edgecumbe and Mount Egmont, the whole country is impressed with the traces of volcanic action, which, indeed, is still going on, and appears to have had its principal point of activity in the crater of Tongariro. It is, moreover, studded with innumerable boiling springs, geysers, fumeroles, solfataras, and stufas, in the same line. The easternmost extremity of this line is White Island, in the Bay of Plenty, the summit of a crater, composed chiefly of sulphur, which is still active, and but little elevated above the level of the sea. Besides these proofs of a powerful volcanic action, there is in that geographical line a chain of lakes, which most of them appear to be intimately connected with the eruptive character of the country. Of these, Lake Taupo, nearly at the south-west extremity of the chain, is the largest. This lake is situated about twelve miles north of Tongariro. It has an irregular triangular shape; its greatest length is about thirty-six miles, and its greatest breadth about twenty-five; its borders are in many places deeply indented. Several rivers fall into the lake from the southward, and the common outlet of them all is the Waikato river, which flows into the sea on the west coast, in about latitude $37^{\circ} 25' S$. Dr. Dieffenbach reckons the waters of this lake to be at an elevation of 1337 feet above the level of the sea.

A considerable portion of the country, for many miles around Lake Taupo, consists of level table-lands, lying at an equal elevation. There are lower table-lands in many places between these and the heads of the valleys through which the waters drained from the table-lands, and from the higher ranges and peaks, reach the coast. Throughout the island, detached ranges, of less height

than the remarkable peaks which have been described, intersect both the alluvial plains near the coast and the highest table-lands. These ranges almost invariably lie in the general direction of north and south.

In the Middle Island, there are also several fresh-water lakes, of greater or less dimensions. The principal ones as yet known are Lakes Arthur and Howick, near the north-western extremity of the island; Lake Waioira, close to the south-west corner of Banks's Peninsula, on the east coast; and two or three smaller lakes near the south-east extremity of the island, between Otago harbour and the Clutha or Molyneux river.

Slight shocks of earthquake are by no means uncommon throughout the islands; the first of which we have any authentic record having been observed by Captain Cook when in Queen Charlotte's Sound nearly eighty years ago, and many having been experienced by the Colonists since the foundation of the British Settlements in 1840. There are vague traditions among the natives of former severe volcanic convulsions, which are indeed sufficiently attested by the appearance of the country: but within the memory of those now living no serious damage has been caused by the shocks, nor do the natives betray the slightest symptoms of fear when they occur. This is probably to be accounted for by the existence of numerous outlets for the escape of the subterraneous power.

A great part of the North Island is covered, as may be easily concluded from the foregoing account, with a rich volcanic tufaceous soil, like that which is found in Italy so well adapted to the cultivation of the vine. New Zealand, indeed, is very similar to Italy in its leading geographical as well as geological features. It is a narrow strip of land, containing many tracts available for cultivation, which are separated one from the other by ranges of mountains, and watered by streams of no great importance for navigation far into the interior. It is therefore especially adapted for a species of colonization similar to that by which Italy was

peopled—namely, the foundation of numerous independent settlements, each in a chosen spot within a district of its own, and having little communication, except by sea, with any of the others.

In several respects, too, New Zealand may be said to bear some resemblance to the British Isles. It resembles them, not only in its irregular and straggling oblong shape, and in its detached position from the nearest continents, but also in matters of greater importance. Like them, surrounded by the sea, it possesses the same means of ready communication and of rapid conveyance between all parts of its coasts; and the same facilities for an extensive trade, within its numerous bays and estuaries. The temperature, too, of the warmer latitudes in which it is placed, is influenced or regulated, as in Great Britain, by the refreshing and invigorating sea-breezes, and the whole line of coast abounds with fish, in great variety and of great delicacy.

As might have been expected from the geological character of the country, numerous indications of varied mineral wealth have been observed. Coal, copper, sulphur, and manganese, have been discovered and already worked to advantage, although on a small scale, for want of capital, each in at least one spot. Sand containing iron in such quantities that measures have already been taken for the erection of smelting-works, and indications of iron ore, tin, lead, and what has been conjectured to be nickel, may also be enumerated. Doubtless further discoveries would be made, were the country to be more minutely examined for that express purpose by some experienced mineralogists; and as the geological structure of the mountain ranges is precisely similar to that of the Andes, it may fairly be expected that even the most valuable minerals will in the course of time be found to exist in them.

In the mountains above described are the sources of numerous streams and rivers, which flow into the sea at various points along the extensive line of coast. As they

rise at a considerable height, and yet have to reach the sea within a comparatively short distance, they are not generally navigable for any great distance; but the courses of some of them, however their navigation may be interrupted by falls and rapids, reach to the length of one and even two hundred miles. It follows that they afford an immense amount of mechanical power by their rapid fall in all parts of the country. Constant moisture from the immediately surrounding ocean is intercepted by the high ranges, so that these streams never fail; and thus there is scarcely a hollow in New Zealand which does not enjoy an unceasing supply of water and of mill-power. In the lower part of their course, too, these rivers have spread out large tracts of the richest alluvial soil, some of which is at once available for cultivation, while another portion requires clearing from timber, or superficial drainage in order to let off the surface water, or sometimes both.

The face of the country is thus divided between mountains and hills more or less precipitous, extensive table-lands at a greater or less elevation above the sea, and alluvial districts, interspersed with fens generally available by drainage, nearer the level of the shores. On each of these different surfaces, the vegetation partakes more or less luxuriantly of four general characters. It consists either of forest, or of grass, or of high fern;* or of a mixture of grass and fern together with the indigenous flax-plant† and a few shrubs of small size, including the cabbage-tree or Ti-palm‡.

New Zealand is remarkable for the excellence of its harbours, and their great number in proportion to the extent of its coast line. They would afford a safe and central rendezvous to the immense shipping trade of the whole Southern Archipelago;—an expanse not less than fifteen thousand miles in circumference, covered with myriads of islands, many of them exceeding greatly in size the whole British Islands. The prin-

* *Pteris Esculens*.

+ *Phormium Tenax*.

‡ *Dracæna Australis*.

cipal harbours of New Zealand will, however, be described hereafter in their appropriate order.

The climate of New Zealand is better adapted to an English constitution than that of any other of our Colonies. The great preponderance of water over land in the Southern Hemisphere causes a lower degree of heat in any latitude, than in a similar latitude of the Northern Hemisphere, where land preponderates over water. The temperature of New Zealand, therefore, somewhat resembles that of the land between the south of Portugal and the middle of France; or rather, from its insular character, that which Great Britain would enjoy, if its centre lay twelve hundred miles to the west of Cape Finisterre. The extremes of heat in summer, and of cold in winter, are within very narrow limits; for the immense expanse of ocean, which surrounds these narrow islands on all sides, moderates alike the heat of the tropics, and the cold of the antarctic regions. The phenomena of climate in which we observe England to differ very much from New Zealand, such as the greater cold in winter and during certain winds, appear to arise from the greater proximity of the nearest continents.

The seasons are nearly as follow: Spring commences in the middle of August; Summer in December; Autumn in March; and Winter in July. But the summer is without scorching heat, and the winter free from severe frosts. Except in the most southern parts, or on the high table-lands, or on the sides of the highest mountains, ice is never seen after the sun has fairly risen, and snow never lies on the ground: and even at the extreme south, evergreen plants of the myrtle kind grow to the edge of the sea, and thrive better than in Devonshire or the Isle of Wight. Hot winds and droughts, such as occur in New South Wales and at the Cape of Good Hope, are wholly unknown in New Zealand; for, as has been already observed, a never-failing supply of moisture is shed on the moun-

tain-tops and forest lands, by the winds which blow from all quarters over a vast expanse of ocean.

On the high table-lands of the interior, even in the Northern Island, frosts sometimes occur which affect such plants as acacias and potatoes; but this is a circumstance which never happens near the coast, all along which the potato is planted at all seasons of the year, and the opening of the flower-buds is hardly retarded during the season of winter, the presence of which is only indicated by more frequent rains and winds.

And yet there is no distinct rainy season. Although it is rare for a fortnight to elapse without at least refreshing showers, determined rainy weather seldom lasts longer than three days without clear intervals, during which everything, including the atmosphere, becomes quickly dry. With this last qualification, it may be considered as a moist climate. There seems little doubt but that more rain falls during the year in New Zealand than in England. It rains during all the months of the year; but the greater quantity falls in winter and spring, when there is also the greater number of rainy days; and the longest intervals between rain, and the smallest quantity when it does rain, generally occur about the end of December and January, or at the best period for the harvest of grain.

The dews are heavy, particularly during the winter months. In the interior, mists rest over the lakes and river-courses in the mornings, but are soon dispelled by the rising sun, or driven away by the winds.

Besides the disposition of the atmosphere to dry quickly, which has already been mentioned, it may be remarked that the physical configuration of New Zealand, and the geological formation of the hills, are in general such that the water is rapidly carried towards the coast—the lakes have always an outlet—and, considering the unreclaimed state of the country, swamps are not excessively numerous or extensive.

Such as do exist are generally attributable to the clayey nature of the sub-soil. They are certainly not of sufficient importance to influence the general state of the humidity of the air, or to render it insalubrious.

In consequence of this great quantity of moisture, the vegetation is remarkably vigorous, even in places where only a thin layer of vegetable earth covers the rocks. Sandy places, which in any other country would be quite barren, are covered with herbage in New Zealand. Everywhere trees and shrubs grow to the margin of the sea, and suffer no harm even from the salt spray.

On the coasts of New Zealand, and especially near those parts of it which are high and mountainous, wind is frequent, and tolerably strong. The general direction of strong gales is W. or S., varying, however, from these points according to the form of the coast.

Near the shores of Cook's Strait, which is about the centre of the islands, you may sleep agreeably during three-fourths of the year with your bed-room window open; and yet, when you are confined to the house by rain or violent gales, you can generally enjoy a small fire in the partially weather-tight residences of the early colonists. Except in those rare cases, it is most pleasant to be employed out of doors; for not only is vegetation highly luxuriant, and the verdure, whether of the trees or of the pastures, perpetual, but the atmosphere is so clear that objects are visible at a great distance, and the varying but ever beautiful tints of the bright sky and picturesque scenery are the constant source of admiration.

Cattle and sheep never require to be housed, as there is no frost or excessive damp to injure them, and the pasturage lasts throughout the year.

Fogs, excepting always the morning exhalations above-mentioned, are almost unknown, except in the southern extremity of the islands: and even the southerly winds, bringing as they do some cold from the Antarctic regions, are so tempered by the extent of

water over which they pass, as to be totally free from the unpleasant qualities of our English easterly winds.

It is almost needless to add, that the most robust health is enjoyed by almost all persons who live in such a climate. The doctor's occupation would be nearly gone, but that marriages are undoubtedly rendered more prolific by the same genial air, which rears all the children in such rosy vigour. Dr. Dieffenbach, who paid especial attention to the meteorology of New Zealand, affords us the following testimony to the salubrity of its climate:—

“As the atmosphere, by its moderate warmth, its humidity, and constant current, is peculiarly favourable to the vegetative powers, as we see in the luxurious growth of plants, so from the same causes it suits the human frame. In the families of the missionaries and settlers, I observed no deviation from the original stock; the children grow well and strong, with fresh and rosy faces, and I am satisfied that in this respect, New Zealand is in no way inferior to Great Britain. A humid and temperate atmosphere acts especially upon production, both as it regards growth of the body and the numerical strength of families. Nutrition and re-production are in good order; in respect to the numerical strength of families, the climate seems to be particularly favourable to the increase of population—at least, all the Europeans have large families. We see the effect of this humid climate in certain diseases, to which Europeans first arriving in this country are often subjected. These are abscesses, or boils, and eruptive diseases; neither, however, of a malignant character, and both disappearing without medical aid. Amongst the natives, carbuncles and diseases of the mucous membranes are common: here, however, other causes are acting, of which I shall speak more hereafter. The European, when once acclimatized, does not suffer from any of these causes. True inflammatory diseases are uncommon: the south-east wind of New Zealand is never as keen as our north-easter; but, in consequence of the moist climate, such diseases always assume the character of catarrh. I am not aware that any endemic diseases exist in New Zealand; influenza, however, and sometimes croup, appear epidemically. If care is not taken, rheumatisms also make their appearance. But it is certain, that causes, which in England would produce violent colds and other injurious results, pass over in New Zealand without any bad effect, even to those colonists who are in delicate health.”

“The purity of the atmosphere, resulting from the continual wind, imparts to the climate a vigour which gives elasticity to the physical powers and to the mind. Heat never debilitates, not even

so much as a hot summer's day in England; and near the coasts, especially, there is always a cooling and refreshing breeze. The colonist who occupies himself in agriculture can work all day, and the mechanic will not feel any lassitude, whether he works in or out of doors.

"From all this, I draw the conclusion, that, as regards climate, no country is better suited for a colony of the Anglo-Saxon race than New Zealand; and were this its only recommendation, it would still deserve our utmost attention, as the future seat of European civilization and institutions in the southern hemisphere; since, in the other southern colonies—for instance, in that of New South Wales—Europeans undergo more or less alteration from the original stock.

"Invalids rapidly recover in this climate: and there is no doubt that the presence of numerous thermal waters in the North Island, and the attractive scenery, will make New Zealand the resort of those who have been debilitated in India, and are in search of health."*

CHAPTER IV.

Historical summary.—1769, *Cook*.—1793, *Conflicts*.—1814, *Missions founded*.—1822-27, *Native Wars*.—1831, *British Resident*.—1835, *Independence*.—*Association of 1837*.—1838, *Baring's Bill*.—1839, *Land Company*.—1840, *Treaty of Waitangi*.—*British Sovereignty*.—*New Zealand Company*.—*Colonization*.—*Governor Hobson*.—1841, *Bishop*.—*Land-sharks*.—*Controversies*.—1843, *Obstacles to progress*.—*Governor Fitzroy*.—1845, *Debate, and promises of Ministers*.—1845-6, *Constitution Act*.—*Governor Grey*.—1846-7, *Otago Settlement*.—*Government Arrangements*.—*Details of Constitution*.—1848, *Suspended*.—*Proclaimed*.

It will not be within the scope of this little volume to dwell at any great length on the former history of New Zealand, or on the various circumstances which have promoted or impeded the foundation of British settlements in various parts of the islands. The details of this subject, up to the beginning of 1844, are very fully

* '*Travels in New Zealand*,' by Ernest Dieffenbach, M.D., 2 vols. London, Murray, 1843. The observations contained in the above quotation have been fully confirmed, as will be seen in subsequent chapters, by the experience of the British colonists from 1840 to the present time. The number of births, compared with that of deaths, is in each settlement extraordinary. In the year 1847, in-

related in an earlier and larger work;* and those of a subsequent period are recorded in the *New Zealand Journal*,† a newspaper which has been published in London every fortnight since 1840, in order to furnish persons interested in the progress of the Colony with all news relating to it. Of that mass of information a mere abridgment is required here.

The islands of New Zealand were first seen by Tasman, in 1642; but he did not land.

New Zealand was supposed to form part of the great *Terra Australis Incognita* until the year 1769, between which date and 1777, Captain Cook circumnavigated and roughly surveyed the two principal islands, gave his own name to the strait by which they are separated, landed at various places, and took formal possession of the country for the King of Great Britain.

Cook suggested the regular colonization of New Zealand; but no attempt was made to carry his recommendation into effect, though many schemes for the purpose were formed by various persons, including Dr. Franklin.

In the Parliamentary Debates which led to the establishment of New South Wales, in 1788, New Zealand was mentioned as very suitable for an experiment of penal colonization, and narrowly escaped, through a terror of its savage inhabitants and their cannibalism.

As early as 1793, the whaling-ships of different nations began to touch on the coast. Their intercourse with the natives was marked by great cruelty and injustice on one part, great treachery and dishonesty on

fluenza prevailed throughout the Australasian Colonies; but in New Zealand the cases of death were very rare among Europeans. The salubrity of the New Zealand climate has also been treated upon by Mr. Wm. Swainson, F.R.S., an eminent naturalist, in a small book, called '*Observations on the Climate of New Zealand*,' published by Smith, Elder, & Co., in 1840.

* "*Adventures in New Zealand, from 1839 to 1844; with some Account of the Beginning of the British Colonization of the Island*," by Edward Jerningham Wakefield, Esq., 2 vols. 8vo. Murray, 1845.

† Price 6d.; published on every alternate Saturday, by Stewart and Murray, Old Bailey.

the other, and revolting blood-thirstiness and a strong spirit of revenge on both sides. Excepting in the solitary instance of an English sailor, the sole survivor of a shipwrecked and massacred crew, who lived for some years among the natives about the year 1807, we can hear of no white man having lived on shore between the years 1793 and 1814.

In the latter year, the scenes of barbarism acted between the savages of both races had attracted general attention. This state of things suggested to the Rev. Samuel Marsden, Colonial Chaplain of New South Wales, the project of establishing at the Bay of Islands a mission of the Church Missionary Society. In 1814-15, this benevolent scheme was carried into effect by Mr. Marsden himself, under the sanction of the Governor of New South Wales, who issued a proclamation on the occasion, whereby he treated New Zealand as a "Dependency of the territory of New South Wales;" appointed the first missionary, Mr. Thomas Kendal, "resident Magistrate at the Bay of Islands;" and made three native Chiefs, who had visited Sydney, and who accompanied the expedition, also Magistrates.

The first Wesleyan Mission was founded in 1823, by Messrs. Leigh, White, and Turner, at Wangaroa, north of the Bay of Islands. They endured great hardships, dangers, and privations among the turbulent natives of those parts, with but little success in their endeavours for four years. It was not till 1828, that they established the head-quarters of the Wesleyan Mission at Hokianga, on a more secure footing.

In course of time, the works of travellers in the country who published their observations,* together with the periodical reports of the Church Missionary

* "*Some Account of New Zealand*," by John Savage, Esq., Surgeon: London, 1807. "*Narrative of a Voyage to New Zealand, performed in the years 1814 and 1815, in company with the Rev. Samuel Marsden, Principal Chaplain of New South Wales*," by John Liddiard Nicholas, Esq., in 2 vols.: London, 1817. "*Journal of a Ten Months' Residence in New Zealand*," by R. A. Cruise, Esq., Major in the 84th Regiment of Foot: London, 1824.

Society, partly removed the impressions of fear which had been made by the savage character of the natives. This result was further promoted by a visit of two Chiefs, Hongi and Waikato, who accompanied Mr. Kendal to England in 1820, and who so artfully adapted themselves to the predilections of the circles into which they were introduced, as to pass for perfect and very devout Christians.

Among other places at which Hongi and Waikato were exhibited as Christian converts was the University of Cambridge. Here, by means of Mr. Kendal, they became acquainted with Baron de Thierry, a Frenchman by birth. They led the Baron to entertain the hope of acquiring extensive territories and rights of Chieftainship in New Zealand; and Mr. Kendal undertook to act as his agent for that purpose. This circumstance deserves notice, as having laid the foundation of the attempt made by the French Government in 1840 to establish a penal settlement in the Middle Island. Mr. Kendal received a large sum of money from Baron de Thierry as the intended purchase-money of lands; and, in 1822, bought a small portion of land for him at Hokianga in consideration of a very trifling payment.

While the two Chiefs were at Cambridge, Professor Lee, from their pronunciation, reduced the *Maori*, or aboriginal language, into a written one, and composed a grammar and dictionary of it. This afforded the means of translating the Catechism, Prayer-book, and parts of the Bible into the native language. The demand for these books gradually increased; and some years later printing-presses were introduced into the islands, first by the Church, and afterwards by the Wesleyan missionaries.

In 1825, a Company was formed in London for the purpose of establishing a Settlement in New Zealand.*

* It was composed of the following members:—George Lyall, Esq., Stewart Marjoribanks, Esq., George Palmer, Esq., Colonel Torrens, the Earl of Durham, Edward Ellice, Esq., the Hon.

Its views were submitted to Mr. Huskisson, then President of the Board of Trade, who highly approved of the undertaking, and promised them the grant of a Royal Charter in case their preliminary expedition should accomplish its object: but the expedition was confided to incompetent management; its leader was alarmed by a war-dance of the natives, performed, there is every reason to believe, as a mark of welcome; and he abandoned his task after purchasing some land at Hokianga and in the Frith of the Thames.

The very ideas which belong to contracts for the transfer of land as private property had been unknown to the natives until 1814, when Mr. Marsden, desirous of obtaining a site for the first missionary establishment according to the forms of European law, carried with him a technical deed of feoffment prepared by lawyers at Sydney. This instrument, when its blanks for the names of places were filled up, was signed by the mark of certain Chiefs in consideration of a trifling payment. It became the model of a vast number of contracts for the sale of land to Europeans, into which natives were induced to enter by the number of Whites who now straggled into New Zealand from the neighbouring Colonies, from French, American, and British shipping, and even from England. This mode of acquiring land from savages is now well known as *land-sharking*; a name which implies preying on the weakness of childish ignorance.

Although the natives were even unconscious of the purport of the deeds which they executed, because they had not even conceived the idea of private property in land according to European notions, they nevertheless set great store by the European goods paid to them for signing the deeds. Of these commodities muskets and gunpowder formed the principal item. During the residence of Hongi and Waikato in England, their

Courtenay Boyle, J. W. Buckle, Esq., Ralph Fenwick, Esq., Jas. Pattison, Esq., Lord Hatherton, A. W. Robarts, Esq., George Varlo, Esq., Anthony Gordon, Esq., John Dixon, Esq.

attention was steadily directed to the acquisition of fire-arms. Hongi had no sooner returned home with Mr. Kendal than he armed his own tribe, and its allies, with the warlike presents which he had received in England; and, throwing aside the mask of Christian meekness which he had worn in this country, he appeared in his true character of an ambitious and bloodthirsty warrior. His superior weapons gave him an immense advantage over the tribes which he attacked in all directions from the seat of his own tribe near the Bay of Islands. Besides a bloody raid to the northward, he directed all his strength against the powerful tribes which inhabited the western coast of the North Island, between Kaipara and Waikato. These, driven from their home, employed against weaker tribes the skill and hardihood which they had acquired in resisting Hongi. Those weaker tribes, again, headed by Rauperaha and other chiefs, advanced upon the northern shore of Cook's Strait, crossed the sea into the Middle Island, and extended their ravages as far as Otago, almost exterminating the aboriginal inhabitants in their progress. The waves of destruction, to which Hongi with his muskets gave the first impulse, passed over nearly the whole length of New Zealand, a distance of more than seven hundred miles. The population of the North Island was thinned and scattered; and that of the Middle Island destroyed, with the exception of a miserable remnant.

About the year 1827, some of the rough White adventurers from the Australian Colonies, who had for many years previously pursued the arduous life of a sealer, in boats and small craft, along the coasts of the Middle Island and Foveaux's Strait, were encouraged to engage in the pursuit of the whale, and to form establishments for that purpose on the shores of Cook's Strait. They had to share in the hardships and losses of the invading tribes under Rauperaha, with whom they had fraternized. The expelled inhabitants made many savage forays, and the European protégés took

part in retaliatory measures of equal ferocity. All over New Zealand, indeed, the irregular settlement of Europeans, which was now making rapid progress, led to numerous instances of crime for which no punishment could be inflicted. In addition to the spectacle of savage warfare in its most destructive excess, the country exhibited that of perfect anarchy as respects the European settlers.

Such a state of things urgently required some remedy. It would be difficult to conceive one more inefficient than that which was applied. In 1831, a letter, applying for the protection of the King, William the Fourth, and signed with the names or marks of thirteen Chiefs, residing in the immediate neighbourhood of the Bay of Islands, was transmitted to England by the Rev. William Yate, then head of the Mission in New Zealand, and supported by the managers of the Church Missionary Society in England; and accordingly Lord Goderich, then the Colonial Minister, wrote to the thirteen Chiefs, granting their request in the name of the King. Instructions were at the same time transmitted to the Governor of New South Wales, which induced him to appoint an officer of the British Government to be "Resident" at the Bay of Islands. Mr. Busby, the person so appointed, appeared, from the title of his office and from the tenour of his instructions, to be accredited, with something like diplomatic functions, not to any natives, but to the missionaries inhabiting the small peninsula at the northern extremity of the North Island. Defined functions he had none. His authority for the repression of evil was never more than merely nominal. He was described as resembling a man-of-war without guns.

During the years immediately following this unmeaning arrangement, the wars of the natives continued with all the aggravation of destructiveness occasioned by the use of fire-arms: outrages were committed by the white settlers upon each other, and upon the natives,

and by the natives upon them: European vices and disease were spread among the diminished native population: and, according to the testimony of every eyewitness who has given evidence upon the subject, including that of the most intelligent and zealous of the missionaries, the numbers of the aborigines visibly decreased. At length, in 1835, another attempt was made to establish some kind of authority in New Zealand.

The Baron de Thierry, before mentioned, had not lost sight of the project which he had formed at Cambridge during the visit of Hongi and Mr. Kendal. From more than one place in the South Seas he gave out that the acquisition which Mr. Kendal had made for him in 1822 amounted to a right of Sovereignty over the islands, and that it was his intention speedily to take possession of it. Some interest in his proceedings had been excited in France, by means of the newspaper press. Not a little alarmed at the prospect, however slight, of a French dominion, the leading missionaries now joined with the more decent of the settlers at the Bay of Islands in desiring the establishment of a national power in the country. But instead of applying to the Crown for the full exercise of that British dominion which had resulted from the acts of Cook and the Government of New South Wales, they induced thirty-five Chiefs of the little northern peninsula to sign a paper, by which they declared the Independence of the whole of New Zealand as one nation—formed themselves into an independent state, with the title of “the United Tribes of New Zealand”—agreed to meet in congress, “for the purpose of framing laws for the dispensation of justice,” and other ends—and invited the southern tribes to join the “Confederation of the United Tribes.”

There cannot be the least doubt that this document was composed by the missionaries at the Bay of Islands, and signed by the Chiefs with as little real comprehen-

sion of its meaning as had attended the signature by natives of the deeds of feoffment drawn up by Sydney attorneys, with blanks for the names of places.

So little were these or any other Chiefs of New Zealand capable of performing such an act as the document describes, that their own language wanted the most important words expressive of its purport, such as *independence, sovereignty, government, confederation, legislative*, and even a name for the country over which their new authority purported to extend. This mockery, however, was recognised by the British Government; and the captain of a man-of-war, acting on behalf of William the Fourth, requested the Chiefs in question to select from a number of flags the one which they should prefer as an emblem of national independence.

The new Government was found so unreal, that no meeting of the confederated Chiefs ever took place; nor was either the confederation, or the declaration of independence, or the national flag, even known to any natives out of the small peninsula which forms about a twelfth part of the country.

Various representations were now made to the Government, setting forth the evils of a continued anarchy in New Zealand. The merchants of London joined in a memorial, signed by the principal houses engaged in the South Sea trade. A petition from the more respectable of the white settlers in New Zealand, including the principal members of the Church Mission, was sent to England. But, through some influence at the Colonial-office, every application was disregarded; and it seemed the fixed purpose of the Government to leave undisturbed the experiment of training up a native republic under missionary control.

In 1836, a Committee of the House of Commons, on Aborigines, set before the British public, in a form to make a deep impression, a grievous picture of the state of things in New Zealand.

In the same year, another Committee of the House of

Commons inquired into the subject of the Disposal of Waste Lands, with a view to Colonization. In the evidence given before that Committee, New Zealand was pointed out as a field peculiarly eligible for the purposes of British Colonization, provided some regular system should be adopted. This suggestion made a deep impression at the time upon Mr. Francis Baring, a member of the Committee, and, after the publication of the Committee's Report, upon the minds of several gentlemen out of doors.

In 1837, a society was formed in London, for the purpose of inducing the British Government to establish a sufficient authority in the islands, and to colonize them according to a plan deliberately prepared with a view of rendering Colonization beneficial to the native inhabitants as well as to the settlers. The Association published a little book, containing as much information respecting the actual state of New Zealand as was attainable at the time, and developing their plan.*

The members of the Association whose position in public life attracted attention to the project, and whose zealous exertions ultimately saved New Zealand from becoming a French penal Colony, were Mr. Francis Baring (the chairman), Lord Durham, Lord Petre, Mr. Bingham Baring, Mr. Campbell of Islay, Mr. Charles Enderby, the munificent promoter of Antarctic discovery, Mr. Ferguson of Raith, the Rev. Dr. Hinds, Mr. Benjamin Hawes, Mr. Philip Howard, Mr. William Hutt, Mr. Lyall, Mr. Mackenzie, Sir William Molesworth, Sir George Sinclair, Sir William Symonds, Mr. Henry George Ward, and Mr. Wolryche Whitmore.

The Association having matured their plan, but apprehensive of opposition from the Colonial Office, which might nip the project in its bud, addressed themselves to the Prime Minister, Lord Melbourne, with a view of obtaining the sanction of the Executive Govern-

* *'British Colonization in New Zealand.'* London. Parker, 1837.

ment: and they imagined themselves to have received such cordial encouragement from his Lordship, as well as from Lord Howick (now Earl Grey), to whom Lord Melbourne referred them for the settlement of matters of detail, that they felt justified in collecting a body of intending Colonists as an indispensable means of carrying out the undertaking.

Among other steps taken by the Association, were two applications to the Church Missionary Society, with a view of establishing a friendly feeling and active co-operation between the two bodies. The first was made by a deputation which waited upon Mr. Dandeson Coates; by whom they were frankly informed, that, "though he had no doubt of their respectability and the purity of their motives, he was opposed to the colonization of New Zealand in any shape, and was determined to thwart them by all the means in his power." The second was a letter from Dr. Hinds, in behalf of his colleagues, and addressed to the Committee of the Society, but of which the receipt was not even acknowledged.

The views of the Association were openly and covertly opposed by Mr. Coates, now by a published pamphlet in the form of a letter to Lord Glenelg, at that time Colonial Minister, and then by a pamphlet marked 'Confidential,' which was privily but extensively circulated. These documents flatly charged the members of the Association with being influenced by motives of personal gain.

When it became necessary again to apply to Lord Melbourne, this time for his ultimate sanction of a Bill which was now ready to be submitted to Parliament, his lordship received a deputation from the Association. Lord Glenelg was present at the interview, and spoke on behalf of the Government. He warmly censured every principle of the Association which Lord Melbourne had formerly approved; and above all, disclaimed any right on the part of the

British Crown to exercise any sort or degree of authority in New Zealand.*

It seems more than probable, however, that the Prime Minister's sense of justice was affected by the remarks made to Lord Glenelg in his presence; for it was presently intimated to the Association, that if some of their body would wait upon Lord Glenelg in the ensuing week, their application would be more favourably received.

A number of them accordingly attended at the Colonial Office, and were received by Lord Glenelg; who informed them, that very recent despatches from the Resident in New Zealand, and the commander of a man-of-war which had visited the coasts, had induced Her Majesty's Government to abandon their objections to the systematic and regulated colonization of the islands; that they still objected to the instrument of colonization proposed by the Association, namely, a Board of Commissioners acting under the immediate control of the Colonial Minister, as public officers having no private interest in the matter; but that they were prepared to grant to the Association a Royal Charter of Incorporation for colonizing purposes, similar to those under which the English Colonies in America were established in the sixteenth and seventeenth centuries. Lord Glenelg further explained, that a condition of the grant of a Charter would be the subscription by the Association of a joint-stock capital to be embarked in the undertaking.

The Association declined† this offer, on the ground

* For a detailed description of all these negotiations, the reader must turn to the evidence of Mr. Edward Gibbon Wakefield, before a Select Committee of the House of Commons on New Zealand in 1840. The Report and Evidence of this Committee is numbered 303, and Mr. Wakefield's Evidence commences at page 1.

† See the Correspondence on this subject between Lord Durham and Lord Glenelg in the Appendix to the Report of the Select Committee of the House of Commons on New Zealand in the year 1840, No. 303, page 148.

that its members had invariably and publicly disclaimed all views of pecuniary speculation or interest, and were thereby, as well as by a continued disinclination to acquire any private concern in the national work which they sought to promote, entirely precluded from assenting to the proposed condition of raising a joint-stock capital.

Early in 1838, a Select Committee of the House of Lords was, on the motion of Lord Devon, appointed to inquire into the state of New Zealand; and it collected a mass of information which but too fully confirmed previous representations of the deplorable condition of the islands, and further exposed the necessity of subjecting the materials of disorder to the restraints of British law.

In June of the same year, Mr. Francis Baring brought into the House of Commons the Bill which had been prepared, and which embodied the views of the Association as modified by suggestions which they had received from Lord Melbourne and Lord Howick. It was strenuously opposed by Her Majesty's Ministers, and accordingly thrown out.

Among the body of intending Colonists which had been collected by the Association, were several gentlemen who had disposed of property and abandoned professions with a view to emigrating. These, after the defeat of Mr. Baring's Bill, determined to act upon Lord Glenelg's proposal of a Charter, and exerted themselves to form a joint-stock company. By degrees they were joined by many members of the now defunct Association; whose anxious desire to accomplish the national object which had engaged them so long, at length overcame their repugnance to the condition on which Lord Glenelg had insisted. Thus was formed the New Zealand Land Company of 1839.

The Government, however, and the Colonial Office, to which the Marquis of Normanby had now succeeded, exhibited even a greater hostility to this body than to

the Association which it succeeded. It only remained, therefore, to adopt the views of the Colonial Office by considering New Zealand as a foreign country, and by proceeding to acquire land and form settlements in the manner hitherto sanctioned by the Crown.

The new Company were thus forced into the adoption of what has been termed land-sharking, as far as acquiring lands by assignment from savages: but they redeemed their reluctant compliance with this usage, because the only one recognised by authority, by adhering to the same systematic disposal of lands for public purposes, and the same ample provisions for the future benefit of the natives, which formed the leading features of Mr. Baring's Bill.* In order to establish a uniform system in these respects, it became requisite that they should obtain control over a much larger extent of land than could be required for the use of any possible number of settlers for years and years to come. With this view, and in accordance with the alleged National Sovereignty of the native Chiefs, they resolved to send an expedition to New Zealand under the direction of an agent, instructed to adopt the usual method of acquiring land from the natives, but if possible upon a far greater scale than was ever necessary for the purposes of cultivation or even of speculation by individuals. This charge was confided to Colonel William Wakefield. He was further instructed to select the spot which he should deem most eligible as the site of a considerable Colony, and to make preparations for the arrival and settlement of the emigrants.

He sailed from Plymouth in a fine ship, the *Tory*,

* The views of the projectors relating to the conduct to be observed by the Colonists in amalgamating with the natives were embodied in a beautiful Essay, which forms the Appendix to "*British Colonization of New Zealand*," written by the Rev. Montague Hawtrey, who was one of their number, and also a member of the Committee of the Church Missionary Society.

well fitted out for this preliminary expedition, on the 12th of May, 1839.

On the 16th of September, before hearing of the proceedings of the preliminary expedition, the first body of the Company's emigrants sailed from Gravesend in three ships, a rendezvous having been appointed with Col. Wakefield for the 10th January, 1840, at Port Hardy, in Cook's Strait, a known good harbour.

The circumstances of their departure were striking, and in many of the spectators awakened thoughts of the embarkation of "the Pilgrim Fathers," in the time of Charles the First. The Directors of the Company, having no belief in the existence of any settled government in New Zealand, had attempted to provide a substitute. With this view, they visited each ship in succession to obtain from the emigrants a voluntary agreement to a simple but comprehensive system of regulations for the maintenance of order, and establishing a machinery for the administration and enforcement of British law. The articles were subscribed openly on the deck of each ship of the expedition, amid enthusiastic cheers and discharges of cannon.

A British Government in *posse*, had, however, been already provided for New Zealand, while the Land Company were making their arrangements. From about the middle of December, 1838, a correspondence had been in progress between the Foreign and Colonial Offices, the Admiralty, and the Treasury, with a view to devise some method of establishing law and order in New Zealand. In August, 1839, matters were so far advanced, that Captain Hobson, R.N. received a commission as Consul, and "eventual Lieutenant-Governor" of New Zealand, under the Governor of New South Wales, if he should succeed in obtaining the cession of the Sovereignty of any part of the islands to the British Crown. The agreement among the settlers was, of course, not followed up.

The preliminary expedition of the New Zealand

Land Company reached Cook's Strait on the 17th of August, 1839. At the time of Colonel Wakefield's arrival, the British settlers in New Zealand scarcely amounted to 1000 in all; of whom about 500 were settled in the Northern Peninsula, and about as many on Cook's Strait, at Banks's Peninsula, or further South. The Church of England Missionaries had settlements at the Bay of Islands, and a short way inland, and in the Valley of the Thames. The Wesleyan Missionaries had stations on the Hokianga and Kaipara. Whalers and sealers had founded the irregular Settlements in the central and southern parts. In addition to these, who might be reckoned settlers of some standing, a growing belief that the British Government contemplated a settlement in New Zealand, had attracted a number of land-speculators from Sydney.

Colonel Wakefield experienced some attempts at obstruction from the Sydney land-speculators. The more respectable whalers favoured his views, while others of their class tried to frustrate them. But the most strenuous opposition he experienced was from the Church Missionaries, who despatched a vessel with one of their body for the purpose of warning the natives against the New Zealand Land Company, and obtaining a right of pre-emption before Colonel Wakefield could effect any purchases. Colonel Wakefield was induced to select Cook's Strait as the scene of the Company's operations, partly by the superior eligibility of that district, partly by its remoteness from the irregular settlements in the North. He found the natives attaching little value to their lands, and anxious to procure a share in the advantage which the northern tribes had derived from traffic with the whites who had settled among them. After deliberate and protracted negotiations with the Chiefs of all the tribes on Cook's Strait, interrupted occasionally by the wayward passions of some of the more ferocious Chiefs, and the jealousies which Sydney land-speculators, whalers, and

missionaries, had instilled, Colonel Wakefield obtained a formal cession, signed by all the principal Chiefs, of their rights to the land on both sides of the Strait, as far north as a line drawn from Kawia to Point Turnagain, and as far south as the 43rd parallel of south latitude. The emigrants who sailed from Gravesend in September, 1839, were received at Port Nicholson with open arms by the natives, early in 1840.

Consul and "eventual Lieutenant-Governor" Hobson reached Sydney nearly at the same time that the Company's first body of emigrants arrived at Port Nicholson. At Sydney, Captain Hobson was furnished by the Governor, Sir George Gipps, with a staff of civil officers and advances of money to commence operations. Thus provided, he arrived in the Bay of Islands about the end of January, 1840.

Early in February, Captain Hobson met assemblies of the natives at Waitangi (in the Bay of Islands) and Hokianga, and induced them to agree to the Treaty which has been named after the former place. The missionaries, and some of the gentlemen attached to Captain Hobson's civil staff by the Governor of New South Wales, were despatched to different parts of the islands to procure the adhesion of all the tribes; but long before the signatures of that portion of the Chiefs who eventually signed the Treaty were obtained, the Sovereignty of the British Crown over New Zealand was formally proclaimed by the Governor.

In little more than a month after his arrival in New Zealand, Governor Hobson suffered from a paralytic attack; from which, there is reason to believe, he never entirely recovered. The government was carried on from that time till the arrival of Governor Fitzroy, in December, 1843, by his Colonial Secretary, Lieutenant Shortland, the gentlemen from Sydney, and Mr. Clarke, a missionary catechist, who had been appointed Protector of Aborigines. For the seat of government, Captain Hobson selected what is now Auckland; though there

was not a single British settler there, and the place is distant 150 miles from the nearest northern settlement, and 600 miles by sea from the settlements in Cook's Strait. The limited means of the new Government rendered its influence, except for the collecting of customs-duties, entirely unfelt beyond its immediate neighbourhood.

If the Auckland Government was ineffective in the northern settlements, its influence was still less felt in the more distant settlements on Cook's Strait. For eight months, the only visit the settlers of Wellington received from the authorities at Auckland was in the person of Lieutenant Shortland, sent with some soldiers and mounted police to suppress the Council chosen by the settlers to administer amongst themselves a substitute for law in the absence of a regular Government. He was received with obedience and submission by the settlers; but the appearance of the soldiers left an impression on the minds of the Aborigines that the Queen's Government was hostile to the settlers, and that the latter were unwarlike.

Events had occurred in Europe, subsequently to the departure of Governor Hobson, which materially modified the Home Government's views of New Zealand policy. The publication of Captain Hobson's instructions, containing a virtual disclaimer of British Sovereignty in New Zealand, had roused the emulation of France to take part in the colonization of those islands. The precursors of a French penal settlement on Banks's Peninsula sailed from France in November, 1839. Instructions were transmitted to Sir George Gipps, to accelerate whatever measures might have been adopted for annexing the islands of New Zealand to the British Crown. They were barely in time. Major Bunbury had proclaimed the Sovereignty of England in the South and Middle Islands in June, and Lieutenant-Governor Hobson in the North Island a few weeks earlier; but the British flag was hoisted and British courts held for

the first time at Akaroa by Captain Stanley, whom Sir George Gipps had despatched for that purpose, only *four days* before the arrival of the French expedition.

The danger of French interference in New Zealand roused the apprehensions of the great merchants and bankers of London. They held a meeting at Guildhall, on the 15th of April, 1840, at which a petition to Parliament was proposed and carried, urging the adoption of measures to preserve those islands to the British Crown. This petition, presented and supported by Lord Eliot (now Earl of St. Germans), was referred by the House of Commons to a Committee. A Report, favourable to the views of the petitioners, was moved in the Committee by Mr. Hutt, and supported by Mr. G. W. Hope (afterwards Lord Stanley's Under Secretary of State for the Colonies), but it was rejected through the influence of the official members—Lord Howick, Messrs. Vernon Smith, and Robert Stewart. Though Government, however, obtained the suppression of this report, they appear to have acted on its suggestions. Lord John Russell (who had succeeded Lord Normanby as Colonial Secretary) showed, not long after, that he could appreciate the importance of the Company as an instrument for accelerating the settlement of the new Province. Negotiations were commenced, which terminated, in November, 1840, in the offer of a Charter to the New Zealand Company, then first so called, on these main conditions,—the Company was to waive all claims to lands in New Zealand on the ground of purchases from the Aborigines, and was to receive from the Crown a free grant of four times as many acres as it could prove it had expended pounds sterling for the purposes of colonization. This offer was accepted. The Charter was issued on the 12th of February, 1841; the Company's capital fixed at 300,000*l.*, whereof two-thirds were to be paid up within the year; and an accountant was named to investigate their expenditure.

The period to which the preceding narrative relates may be called the ante-colonial period of New Zealand history. The history of New Zealand as a British Colony may be held to commence from the proclamation of British Sovereignty in the islands, by Captain Hobson, in May, 1840. The islands continued a Dependency of New South Wales till May, 1841, when they were proclaimed a separate Colony under an independent Government. A few months before this event, Governor Hobson had established himself, with the Government-officers, at Auckland.

On the strength of their agreement with Lord John Russell, the Company resumed their operations with great vigour. Besides the Settlement of Wellington, the Company had founded, in February, 1841, the Settlements of Petre, on the Wanganui river, and New Plymouth, near the Sugar-Loaf Islands. After obtaining their Charter, they continued to colonize at these three Settlements, and, moreover, planned the foundation of a fourth, called Nelson. After some obstruction from Governor Hobson and his officials, it was planted in October, 1841, on a site chosen at the head of Blind Bay, by Captain Arthur Wakefield, who commanded a preliminary expedition of three ships, carrying a surveying-staff, &c., which had been fitted out by the Company for the express purpose. Emigrant ships succeeded; and active colonization was thus in progress on both shores of Cook's Strait.

Legislation was still carried on entirely at Auckland, by the Governor and a Council composed of four officials and three non-official nominees, removable at his pleasure. The executive government of the Company's Settlements was entirely managed at each place by a Stipendiary Magistrate, irresponsible for any of his acts or omissions except to the Governor at Auckland.

About the same time as the agreement between the Company and the Government, Dr. George Augustus Selwyn was appointed Bishop of New Zealand, and,

with a suite of clergymen, sailed for his diocese, by way of Sydney, in the end of 1841, having been consecrated on the 17th October of that year. He arrived at Auckland on the 29th May, 1842. He appointed Clergymen to reside at Wellington, Nelson, and New Plymouth; but afterwards devoted his attention principally to the foundation of a College near the missionary establishments in the north, and to superintending the Church Missionaries in the conversion of the large native population in that part of the Colony. He made but few and very short visits to the Settlements in Cook's Strait, and to the Middle and Stewart's Islands.*

Under Governor Hobson, the community of New Zealand may be regarded as composed of three sections or parties.

The first were the Aborigines; to whom the appointment of a Protector, representing them at the seat of government, and assumed to speak their sentiments and assert their interests, gave the coherence and weight of a political party. Their representative maintained on their behalf—1st, That previously to the assumption of the Sovereignty of New Zealand by the British Crown, the tribes or Chiefs possessed an absolute right of Sovereignty over the whole of the islands, and a perfect right of property in all the lands: 2nd, That though the Treaty of Waitangi had transferred the territorial Sovereignty from the Chiefs and tribes to the British Crown, it reserved to the natives the privilege of being governed immediately by their own Chiefs, according to their old customs;† and to the tribes and Chiefs an absolute right of property in all the lands of the islands, which they could only alienate to the Crown.

The second party was composed of the old settlers, lay

* The interesting journals of the Bishop, since his arrival in his diocese, have been published in a very cheap and compact form by the Society for the Propagation of the Gospel in Foreign Parts. They are to be found in certain numbers of the "*Church in the Colonies*," and in "*Annals of the Colonial Church; New Zealand Diocese*."

† This view is utterly unsupported by any clause or word in the Treaty.

and missionary, in the northern parts of the North Island, and the adventurers who had been recently attracted thither by the prospect of its becoming a British Dependency. Most of these claimed an absolute right of property in lands more or less extensive, which had been ceded to them before the proclamation of British Sovereignty, by Chiefs or tribes, for considerations more or less valuable. The greater number of the missionaries had been gradually laying the foundation of such claims during their residence of a quarter of a century in the land. So had the old-established woodcutters on the Hokianga and in the vicinity of Wangaroa, and the traders of the Bay of Islands. The acquisitions of the lately-arrived adventurers were mere land-sharking transactions, which they hoped to induce the new Government to recognise. But all these classes concurred in asserting that the land-rights to which they laid claim were absolute; that Government, in justice, was bound to recognise them in full, equally with those of the natives, on the ground of their having been already in existence at the establishment of British authority.

The third party was composed of the settlers on Cook's Strait, and the New Zealand Company, from whom their land-titles were derived. Their claims rested on the Crown grant promised by Lord John Russell. Their views of the actual state of property in land in the islands, at first somewhat vague, gradually assumed a more definite form, but never materially varied. Before the establishment of British Sovereignty, they had accepted from the native tribes and Chiefs such rights of property in land as they believed them capable of conveying. After the establishment of British Sovereignty, they held that the property of all waste lands ought to vest in the Crown, to be administered for the common good. They believed that the Crown might either claim the wastes as a necessary appanage of Sovereignty, or obtain a cession of whatever rights the natives might claim in them, for a

moderate equivalent; but in either case, they maintained that the disposal of waste lands should be vested exclusively in the Crown. They further maintained, that in order to prevent the acquisition by individuals of tracts of land so large as to obstruct the progress of settlement and cultivation, the Crown should dispose of the waste lands by sale alone; that the proceeds of the land-sales should be mainly devoted to providing a supply of immigrant-labour to the Colony; and that, as an act of justice to the Aborigines, a certain proportion of the waste lands should be reserved for their exclusive use in perpetuity.

In a wish to respect the interests of the natives, the views of the missionaries, especially the managers in England, and of the New Zealand Company and its settlers in the Colony, approximated pretty closely. But the theoretical views of the home directors of the Mission respecting the pernicious effects of colonization on uncivilized tribes, and their horror at the irregularities of a large proportion of the early settlers in New Zealand, had, without due discrimination, been extended to the Company and its Colonists. The alienation thus generated, was widened by the material interests of the resident missionaries; the peculiar nature of whose claims to land gave them a common interest with the old lay settlers and the "land-sharks," to whom they were otherwise strongly opposed. On the other hand, the missionaries, by their original relations with the natives, and by the appointment of one of their number to be Protector of Aborigines, were identified with the native party. The position of the missionaries as teachers enabled them as a body to influence the native mind to a certain extent; while at the same time the necessity of preserving their influence over the natives often obliged them to defer to the passions and prejudices of their pupils.

The local position of the Government at Auckland would of itself have been sufficient to give a prepon-

derating influence to the native party, and the party of the northern settlers. This influence was strengthened by the official character of the Protector of Aborigines, and by the implication of a majority of the officers of the Local Government in land-sharking speculations. The views of the Local Government were naturally received with favour at the Colonial Office; and the views of the missionaries in New Zealand were strenuously supported by the London office-bearers of the Mission. One fatal consequence of this state of affairs was the frustration of every attempt to have the rights of property in land, and the management of waste-lands, definitely settled and subjected to an uniform plan. These ends were urged by the New Zealand Company, of whose original scheme of colonization they formed a part. They were thwarted by the northern land-claimants, lay and missionary, who aimed at securing large tracts of land for themselves. At first, the Government here appeared inclined to adopt the views of the Company, and to take upon itself that charge of disposing of the waste-lands for the common good, of which the Company had denuded itself, after the recognition of the Crown's authority. But the influences brought to bear upon the Government caused the discussion of those points between the Company and the Colonial Office to assume a controversial form. The peculiar temper of Lord Stanley, who held office throughout the greater part of the time during which this controversy was in progress, at once tended to render it more vehement and to procrastinate a final decision.

The Missionary construction of the Treaty of Waitangi was supported generally by the northern settlers, and by those who claimed to be the peculiar friends of the natives. Some adopted this construction with a sincere desire to promote the native interests; others from an idea that it was the most favourable to their own claims. This construction was opposed by the Cook's

Strait settlers, as incompatible with the plan of vesting in the Crown a title to waste-lands that would enable it to administer them for the common good, and as tending to procrastinate the settlement of the land-claims. The representations of the former party were successful; and Commissioners of Land-Claims, appointed to investigate all titles, acted in general conformity to their views. The delay occasioned by the complicated inquiries hence arising, apprehended by the New Zealand Company, was realized. Other delays occurred from the procrastination of the Commissioners and the pedantic technicality of their proceedings. Great oppression was also caused by their exorbitant fees. The extravagant expectations of gain inspired into the minds of the natives by these imperfectly-understood proceedings completed the mischief. All rights of property in land were left unsettled. Cultivation was arrested; resources were wasted. The evil was increased by the large expenditure of the Local Government; and this cause of complaint was aggravated by the circumstance that the revenue was principally derived from those settlements which are at a distance from the seat of government, and which received little benefit from its expenditure. The Government, which cost so much, was found entirely inefficient. The irritation produced among the natives by the unsettled state of the land-question instigated them to acts of violence, which the Local Government proved utterly powerless either to prevent or to redress. Emboldened by the apathy of the Government, two Chiefs, Rauperaha and Rangihæata, with their followers, massacred a number of Magistrates and others in the execution of the law at Wairau, near Cloudy Bay; and those murders were not even judicially investigated.

In England, the action of the Home Government was in a great measure confined to defending or apologizing for the acts of the Government in New Zealand, and in staving off applicants for redress by

referring to the Local Government to decide upon almost every application made to the Office in Downing-street.

The utmost that Lord Stanley would concede to the Company, was the promise of a *conditional* grant of the quantity of land claimed by them under Lord John Russell's agreement of 1840. Captain Fitzroy, R.N., sent in 1843 to succeed Governor Hobson, who died at Auckland in September, 1842, was instructed to issue at once to the Company a *primâ facie* grant of the said land, subject only to be invalidated by proof of a better title on the part of natives or others.

The embarrassments of the Colonists now reacted on the great colonizing body in this country. The New Zealand Company, finding their income continually decreasing, and their expenditure increasing, in consequence of the unsettled state of the Colony, were obliged first to contract, and ultimately to suspend their operations. On having recourse to so extreme a measure, it was necessary to give the country the means of judging between them and the Government, by whose conduct they had been reduced to such straits. The best means of accomplishing this appeared to be an appeal for Parliamentary inquiry; and an appeal having been made to the House of Commons, a Select Committee was appointed in 1844.

In the meanwhile, Captain Fitzroy entered upon the discharge of his office as Governor about Christmas, 1843. Under his rule, no improvement took place in the spirit and manner of administering the government of the Colony. Like his predecessor, instead of governing and guiding Englishmen in a noble enterprise, he merged the duties of Governor in those of Sub-Protector of Aborigines. At his first visit to Cook's Strait, he took advantage of his position to make insulting public attacks on gentlemen who had opposed the Missionary views, and the preceding acts of the Local Government. At Nelson, he declared his intention to exclude from the new Commission of the Peace

the Justices who had, on sworn informations, signed the warrant for arresting Rauperaha and Rangihæata; and told the settlers, before hearing them, that his mind was made up to have no judicial inquiry into the Wairau massacre. At Kapiti, after hearing Rauperaha's artful account of the affair, and it only, he repeated his determination to have no inquiry; and told the natives to be guided by "their true friends the Missionaries, the Native Protectors, and the Government officers,"—thus virtually advising suspicion and enmity towards the settlers.

On the 26th March, 1844, he issued a proclamation intimating his consent "to waive the Queen's right of preëmption over certain limited portions of land in New Zealand." About the same time, he said in a speech to the Northern Chiefs—"The Queen has heard of your wish to sell lands to Europeans, without in the first place selling them to her representative; and her Majesty has authorized me to inquire among you, and make arrangements more pleasing to yourselves." When Captain Fitzroy, before leaving England, had asked permission to take this step of waiving the Queen's right of preëmption, he had been directed to make inquiries on his arrival in the Colony, report any suggestions that might occur to him, and wait the decision of the Government. He proceeded, however, at once to allow purchases to be made from the natives by private individuals, on payment of, in some instances, ten shillings, in others, one penny per acre: thus acting in direct opposition to Acts of Parliament, which forbid that the waste lands of the Crown in the Colony be alienated at a lower price than twenty shillings per acre.

Lord Stanley reminded Governor Fitzroy in a public despatch, that he had been directed "to make to the Company's agents a conditional grant of the lands selected by them." But, encouraged by vague instructions from Lord Stanley, which were not made public till long afterwards, he applied his own interpretation to the conditions of the promised grant, and, far from

obeying this direction, refused to issue any grant whatever, until the Company's agent should have made an additional payment to the natives, nearly fifty per cent. higher than the entire price paid by the Government for the site of the Capital and other places.

In May, Governor Fitzroy announced to the Legislative Council at Auckland, his scheme of "ways and means." He proposed to replenish his empty treasury by new taxes and an issue of debentures. Among the new taxes, were duties on all agricultural stock introduced into the Colony, and a tax on all houses containing more than three rooms. The debentures were issued for sums as low as half-a-crown, and were declared legal tender. In the course of the debates on these financial measures, Governor Fitzroy maintained that members of Council had no right to protest against the decision of the majority; and warned one of the non-official members, that as he (the Governor) had placed him in the Council, he could also eject him from it.

Soon afterwards, in obedience to the rebellious demands of some of the Northern natives, who had been urged to make them by interested white adventurers, he abolished all customs' duties throughout the islands, and attempted to collect a graduated property and income tax.

Thus the action of the Government, both at home and in the Colony, was throughout obstructive.

The Committee of the House of Commons consisted of fifteen Members. Lord Howick was the Chairman; but ten of the Members were habitual supporters of the existing Government. They reported strongly in favour of the Company's claims, and against the Government. They prefaced this verdict with a reprimand to the Company for "irregular and improper" conduct in commencing operations in defiance of the Government: but it is generally allowed that this "irregular and improper" conduct preserved New Zealand to Britain.

Petitions from the Company, and from some of the Colonists sojourning in England, setting forth their respective grievances, were presented during the succeeding Session of Parliament (1845). Several debates took place on the subject, the cause of the Company and the Colonists being chiefly conducted by Mr. Charles Buller (now President of the Poor Law Board.)

The principal debate arose on a motion by that gentleman to the effect that the House should adopt the resolutions of the Committee. It occupied three consecutive nights, the 17th, 18th, and 19th of June; 173 voted for, and 228 against, the motion. In the course of this debate, however, Lord Howick and Lord John Russell stated with great energy, that they concurred in the views of the Company and of the Cook's Strait settlers, as to the construction of the Treaty of Waitangi; and also, that Lord John Russell's intention in 1840, had been to give the Company an *unconditional* grant of the land to which they could prove a title in virtue of their expenditure on colonization, and not a grant as promised by Lord Stanley, and offered by Governor Fitzroy, *conditional* on extinguishing the native title, all claims derived from which the Company had expressly abandoned at the time of the agreement. Sir Robert Peel and Sir James Graham made earnest declarations of the intention of Ministers to act with promptness and decision in remedying the principal evils complained of.

Governor Fitzroy had been recalled, in consequence of his financial absurdities, which transgressed against express instructions from the Colonial Office, and of his land-regulations, which infringed Acts of Parliament. In the meanwhile, however, his vacillating pusillanimity towards the natives had provoked an aggressive warfare on their part, in the course of which the British troops sent from New South Wales were disgracefully worsted, the earliest British settlement at the Bay of Islands was plundered and destroyed, and the out-settlers near Wellington attacked and robbed, with some loss of life, by

parties of marauders directed by Rauperaha and Rangihaeata. Captain Grey, then Governor of South Australia, had been appointed successor to Governor Fitzroy.

The substance of the remedies promised by Ministers was—that effective measures should be taken for the military defence of the Colonists; that they should receive local Municipal institutions, with some view to future Representative government; and that Lord Stanley's qualified agreement of 1843 should be at once completely carried out, so as at least to give the Company a *primâ facie* title to the lands which they claimed, subject to proof of a better title by any rival claimant.

Up to Christmas, 1845, however, when Sir Robert Peel resigned the Ministry for a few days, and then resumed it with the substitution of Mr. Gladstone for Lord Stanley as Colonial Minister, nothing had been done towards realizing the expectations held out, beyond the augmentation of military and naval force in the Colony. An unmeaning arrangement had indeed been made, with the assistance of Mr. Lefevre (Secretary of the Board of Trade) as a kind of friendly arbitrator, which saved the Company from bankruptcy by a Government loan of 100,000*l.*, and postponed the decision of all other questions. This was considered a mere suspension of hostilities.

In February, 1846, the New Zealand Company suggested to Mr. Gladstone the adoption of an improved policy for the future Colonization of New Zealand. They recommended the immediate abandonment of the attempt to enforce British law throughout the islands, which, it was now evident, would require a very large force; and proposed that the Colony should be at once divided between *Municipal* districts, each with its own British institutions for self-government, to be formed round such of the existing Settlements as could be cheaply protected, and *Exceptional* districts, in which the native customs should be allowed to prevail until the natives themselves might sue for the privilege of British law and protection. They, moreover, pointed

out the expediency of effecting such a reform by means of a Company with a Proprietary Charter, similar to those under which most of our North American Colonies were founded in the seventeenth century.

At the end of May, 1846, Mr. Gladstone having up to that time made no progress in the adjustment of the questions at issue, the Company determined to wind up their affairs, and to claim from the Government compensation for the losses incurred, in case Parliament should separate without passing a law for reforming the government of the Colony, as had been promised.

This determination was communicated to Sir Robert Peel and Mr. Gladstone; but still nothing was done before the change of Ministry, in June. In July, similar representations were urged upon Lord John Russell, and upon Earl Grey, who had become Colonial Minister; but with the renewed suggestion of a Company with a Proprietary Charter. In the course of the session, an Act was passed,* enabling her Majesty to grant a Constitution of a certain nature, by means of Orders in Council; and such hopes were held out to the Company of a satisfactory adjustment of their grievances, as induced them to resume their operations.

Governor Grey arrived at Auckland in the end of 1845, and began his career by energetic measures for enforcing British law, and for conquering the rebellious natives throughout the Colony. He also displayed unceasing activity in visiting the different Settlements, and a great anxiety to remedy in some measure the evils which had accumulated under the mismanagement of his predecessors. By a due mixture of conciliation and firmness he commanded respect from the natives, even before he had completely succeeded in subduing them: while, by his affable demeanour and a more equitable distribution of an increased Government expenditure among all the Settlements, he also acquired the admiration of the Cook's Strait Colonists. Among other useful ameliorations, he abolished the office of

* 9th & 10th Vict., chap. 103.

Native Protector; constructed military roads and other public works, by which many natives as well as Europeans were employed, in the neighbourhood of Wellington and Auckland; and refused to acknowledge the validity of extensive claims made by some of the land-shark class to vast tracts, which they had purchased at a nominal price from the natives when the Crown's right of preëmption had been waived by Governor Fitzroy. The last measure, however, procured him the inveterate opposition of the land-sharks, manifested by the exertion of direct as well as indirect influence among the natives, to make them believe that their rights, under the Treaty of Waitangi, were infringed by it: and thus, in many places, the native malcontents seemed to be but temporarily tranquillized.

Colonel Wakefield had succeeded, after several months of negotiation, in obtaining the sanction of an officer, appointed by Governor Fitzroy, to his purchase from the natives of a block of 400,000 acres in the neighbourhood of Otago, near the south-east corner of the Middle Island: and a Crown grant of that block was issued to the Company on the 13th of April, 1846. On the receipt of this intelligence, an Association of Lay Members of the Free Kirk of Scotland, who had for several years projected the foundation of a Settlement under the auspices of the Company, but had constantly declined to proceed until assured of a Crown title to their land, of efficient military protection, and of local institutions conferring a certain degree of self-government on the Colonists, prepared to carry out their undertaking. The Company caused the whole block to be surveyed, as required by the Association, in the course of the year 1846: and, the new Charter, Orders in Council, and Royal Instructions, granting New Zealand a Constitution,* in pursuance of the Act 9 and 10 Vict., cap. 103, having been at length issued by Lord

* These documents are contained in the "*Papers on New Zealand, 1847. Correspondence with Governor Grey, presented to both Houses, in continuation of Papers presented 26th August, 1846.*"

Grey in the end of that year, the first party of Colonists concluded their preparations, and left this country for Otago in two ships, which sailed from London and Greenock respectively, in the end of 1847. Several other Colonists have followed them in succeeding ships.

In the despatches and instructions authorizing Governor Grey to carry out the new order of things, Lord Grey very distinctly enunciated that construction of the Treaty of Waitangi which assumes that all waste and unoccupied lands in New Zealand are the property of the Crown, and that the Crown has the sole right to administer them for the benefit of all Her Majesty's subjects, whether aborigines or Colonists. The Bishop of New Zealand, as "the head of the Church missionaries," protested strongly against this doctrine, on the publication of the documents in the Colony. His Lordship was reprimanded by Lord Grey for the tone and tenor of his protest. The Wesleyan missionaries also addressed a protest, similar in substance, to Lord Grey. Lord Grey's answer disclaims any intention of infringing the rights of the natives. Governor Grey in his despatches expressed a fear lest the course adopted by the Bishop might cause renewed disturbances among the natives. But this expectation does not seem to have been realized.

In April, 1847, Lord Grey concluded an agreement (afterwards sanctioned by the Act 10 & 11 Vict. cap. 112) with the New Zealand Company, of which the principal conditions were:—that the Company should obtain from Government a loan of 136,000*l.* (in addition to the 100,000*l.* already lent), and should pay 1500*l.* a year to a Commissioner appointed by Government to sanction the expenditure of the money; and that if, in three years from the date of the agreement, the Company should find it impossible to continue its operations, its assets and liabilities should be handed over on certain conditions to the Government.

In January, 1846, Colonel McCleverty had been

despatched as a Commissioner, for the avowed purpose of expediting and facilitating a final Crown grant of the Company's lands on both sides of Cook's Strait, so often claimed and promised, but so long withheld. This appointment, however, was unfortunately coupled with that of deputy Quarter-Master general to the troops; and moreover, on his arrival, Colonel McCleverty found himself the senior military officer in the Colony. It was therefore many months before he applied himself to investigate the state of the land question. Further delay consequently occurred: Governor Grey appearing to imagine that the whole question would be peremptorily decided by the Colonial Minister, while the Colonial Office continued to assure the weary applicants on the subject, that Governor Grey was believed to have settled it in the Colony.

At length, in April, 1847, the Governor gave the immediate relatives of Rauperaha and Rangihaeata 1600*l.* on account of the purchase of two disputed districts on either side of Cook's Strait, promising them 3400*l.* more in yearly instalments in case of their good behaviour. By accounts received, dated in March last, it appears that Crown grants of the Wellington and Porirua districts, amounting in all to 278,000 acres, had at length been actually given to the Company's Agent; and news may soon be expected of the same thing having been done with respect to Nelson and New Plymouth.

A kind of guerilla warfare had preceded this arrangement, in the course of which the naval and military forces, ably assisted by bodies of police and militia formed of the younger settlers, and by native allies, had been generally successful in forcing those natives who remained in a state of rebellion to evacuate the country neighbouring to Wellington. Rauperaha had been captured by a boat's crew of sailors, and kept prisoner for many months on board a man-of-war; but Rangihaeata had escaped into the mountains with a small following.

Subsequently to the arrangement, Rauperaha was

liberated, and consigned to the care of two powerful Chiefs of the tribes near Auckland, who professed to answer for his good behaviour. Rangihaeata was still at large; and on two occasions made descents upon out-settlers, plundering them of arms and ammunition, but doing them no further injury.

The enforcing of British law against some native murderers at Wanganui had provoked an extensive revolt in that district, in attempting to repress which Colonel McCleverty and the troops displayed lamentable inefficiency, while some sailors in a gun-boat and a few volunteers from the settlers behaved so as to obtain great credit. The small settlement, however, was destroyed; and became a mere military cantonment.

The Constitution which it was proposed to confer on New Zealand by the Orders in Council, in pursuance of the Act 9 & 10 Vict. cap. 103, was not altogether in accordance with the desires of the Colonists, or of the Company.

Municipal Councils were to be elected by almost universal suffrage, the qualification for a voter being *six months' occupation of any tenement, and the ability to read and write English.*

Each Municipal Council was to elect members to the Representative Chamber of a Provincial Assembly in one of two Provinces, into which the islands were to be divided.

The Assembly of each Province was to consist, besides the Representative Chamber, of a Legislative Council, whose members should be appointed and removed at Her Majesty's pleasure, and of a Lieutenant-Governor.

The Provincial Representative Chambers were again to elect members to the Representative Chamber of a General Assembly, formed in a similar way, for the whole Colony.

Very extended discretion was left to the Governor in carrying this Constitution into effect: and it was even left to him to decide at what period its operation

should commence. Mr. E. J. Eyre was appointed Lieutenant-Governor, and arrived at Wellington in August, 1847.

Governor Grey at first declined to proclaim the New Constitution, at least in the Northern Province, where the land-sharking interest would have obtained a great voice in the Representative Chambers: and though he appeared to be of opinion that the Cook's Strait Settlements were fit for such a form of government, he abstained from instituting it there also. In consequence of the large Government expenditure on military defence, and on roads and other public works, the inhabitants of Wellington and its neighbourhood had become greatly interested in Government contracts; and it seems probable that Governor Grey feared lest, with so low a qualification for voters, these interests should obtain unbounded influence in the proposed Assemblies, and that they would legislate with a view to the maintenance of Government expenditure rather than to the true benefit of the Colony.

He wrote to Earl Grey, representing that the proposed qualification of reading and writing the English language would exclude the natives from the exercise of the franchise, and would give the power of legislating for them to the white settlers, who form but a small minority of the whole population in the northern part of the islands. But he strongly expressed his belief, at the same time, that the Company's Settlements were perfectly prepared to enjoy these institutions; and he recommended the suspension of the Constitution for at least two years in the northern part of the islands.

On the receipt of this intelligence, the Government introduced a Bill for suspending the proposed Constitution for five years *in the whole Colony*, arguing its necessity from the representations of Governor Grey. Although no pretext had been assigned by him for depriving the Cook's Strait Colonists of the expected

boon, and although earnest remonstrances against so arbitrary a course were urged in the House of Commons upon the Ministers by the Earl of Lincoln and Sir Robert Peel, the Bill became an Act, and thus legislation for the whole of New Zealand was confirmed in the hands of the smallest possible minority—namely, a Governor and a Council of seven men, removable at the Governor's pleasure. Discretion was left to the Governor to grant the original Constitution to either Province at any time within five years.

In the meanwhile, on the 1st of January, 1848, Governor Grey proclaimed the Constitution which the Act has suspended, and it is possible that it may be actually in operation. No very full details, however, of the manner in which the Governor has exercised the powers vested in him, have yet been received. On the 28th January, 1848, he appointed and swore in some of the officers of the Southern Province, which is called "New Munster;" and on the 10th of March proclaimed, as the boundary between that and "New Ulster," or the Northern Province, the parallel of latitude running through the mouth of the Patea river, or about $39^{\circ} 46' S$.

In April, 1848, the Canterbury Association, whose proceedings are treated of in the first and second Chapters, was formed. In July, their Chief Surveyor was despatched to select a site for their Settlement.

It is proposed to describe separately, with the district of country naturally dependent on each, the different Settlements whose formation has been above related. We may first dwell on the present condition of those which have grown into importance, from their systematic foundation by the New Zealand Company; then pass to a survey of that which, created and fostered by the Government with the greatest want of system, has acquired the name of "the capital;" and conclude by a glance at those which have arisen from the casual gregariousness of straggling adventurers.

CHAPTER V.

District of Wellington—Port Nicholson—Sailing Directions—Town of Wellington—Karori—Wade's Town—Pitone Road—Pitone; the Chief, Epuni—Lower Hutt Valley—Aglionby—Gorge of the Hutt—Upper Hutt Valley—Wairarapa Road—Walt's Peninsula—Happy Valley—Ohariu—Porirua Road—Johnsonville—Porirua Harbour—Parramatta—Ferry—Waikanae—Otaki—Native Civilization—Ohau—Manawatu River and District—Steam Saw-mill—Wairarapa Plains—Progress of Sheep-farming—Entry and Table Islands—Climate—Gardening Calendar—Meteorological Tables—Varieties of Soil—Natural Productions—1. Vegetable:—Indigenous;—Introduced—2. Animal: Indigenous;—Whale Fishery;—Whale-Hunt;—Introduced—3. Mineral—Land—Original Distribution—Price—Rent—Cost of Clearing and Average Produce—Latest Prices Current—Exports—General Statistics—Directory.

WELLINGTON was the first Settlement founded by the New Zealand Company, in the year 1840, and is the residence of their Principal Agent, Colonel William Wakefield. Considering the great natural advantages of the districts in its immediate neighbourhood, the excellence of the harbour of Port Nicholson on which they depend, the advantageous position of that harbour for communication with all parts of the coasts of New Zealand as well as with New South Wales and our other Australian Colonies, the amount, and still more the select quality of its population, this is undoubtedly the most important Settlement yet existing in New Zealand.

The district of Wellington may be shortly described as that part of the north island which lies to the south of the fortieth parallel of south latitude. This is a tongue of land averaging about ninety miles in length from north to south, by sixty miles in breadth from east to west; and which thus contains about 5400 square miles, or 3,456,000 acres of land, of which fully 2,000,000 acres are either susceptible of beneficial

cultivation or adapted for natural pasturage. The district is divided into two nearly equal portions by a high range of mountains, called the Ruahine in their northern part, and the Tararua and Rimutaka in that part of their line which stretches from the Gorge of the Manawatu river southwards to the coast on either side of Port Nicholson.

The Western portion extends between this dividing range and Cook's Strait, and is well watered by the rivers Turakina, Rangitikei, Manawatu, Ohau, Waikawa, Otaki, Waimea, Waikanae, and several smaller streams. At the northern extremity of this portion of country, the foot of the Ruahine range is between twenty and thirty miles from the sandy beach on the sea-coast. This distance remains nearly the same so far south as the "Gorge," where the Manawatu river bursts its way through the range; but from thence southwards the dividing range, changing its name to Tararua, bends more to the west, and its western spurs abut on Cook's Strait in bold bluffs at Pari-pari, about half way between the islands of Kapiti and Mana. From the uniform sandy beach which stretches along the coast between these bluffs and the northern extremity of the district, the country rises but slightly for the first four or five miles inland, and with but few exceptions consists of open grass or fern country, interspersed with swamps and marshes easy of drainage. Further inland, the country becomes generally covered with wood, and more or less undulating. The forest extends almost invariably to the summit of the range, which is only covered with snow during the least genial part of the winter. This portion of country is well sheltered by the Tararua range from the cold south-east winds. The warm north wind and the moist sea-breeze from the west are alike fertilizing and agreeable.

East of the dividing range lies an extensive plain, or series of plains: the southern part of which is called the plain or valley of the Wairarapa, from the lake of

that name, by whose tributary rivers, of which the principal is called the Ruamahanga, it is amply watered; and the northern part of which, possessing as yet no distinctive name, is traversed in all directions by the head waters of the Manawatu, which flows through the "Gorge" in the dividing range, and by those of several other rivers, which flow into the sea on the east coast between Castle Point and Hauriri harbour in Hawke's Bay. This plain, or series of plains, is separated from the east coast in its whole length by the Haurangi, Maungaraki, and Puketoi ranges, which extend from Cape Palliser to Kidnapper Point at the distance of eight or ten miles from the coast, and nearly in a parallel line with it. Several valleys formed by the rivers above mentioned offer practicable means of communication between the large plains and the east coast; and the plains expand to a considerable breadth in their northern part, stretching with but little interruption down to the shores of Hauriri harbour and the adjoining coast of Hawke's Bay. Between the line of mountains and the cliffs on the sea-shore the country forms a table-land, covered principally with open pasture, and watered by several streams. The great plains rise gradually from the sea-beach in Palliser Bay and Hawke's Bay, to a considerable elevation at about forty miles inland from either spot, near the sources of the rivers mentioned; and the intervening space is filled up by lesser spurs of the Tararua and Puketoi ranges, between which wind the various confluent of the three rivers, and especially those of the Tirumea, a main branch of the Manawatu; affording, by means of their valleys, an easy communication between the Wairarapa and Hauriri plains.

These plains are covered in nearly equal proportion with forest or with a mixed growth of fern, shrubs, and grass. These two classes of vegetation constantly alternate throughout the entire extent of the country, and each class is most luxuriant of its kind. Some

portion of the plains, near the sea, is swampy, but mostly drainable. Although the mouth of the Wairapa valley is open to the S.W., all but the lower portion, well sheltered by the ranges east and west of it, enjoys a climate as mild as that already described to prevail in the Western portion of the Wellington district.

The dividing range itself, in all that part of its line which lies south of the island of Kapiti, is subdivided into numerous diverging spurs of much lower elevation, which strike the sea at various points between Paripari and Cape Turakirai, the western head of Palliser Bay. Between these spurs there lie hollows of greater or less extent; and the principal one of these hollows contains the valley of the river Hutt, and the noble harbour of Port Nicholson into which it flows.

The entrance of Port Nicholson may be approached by sea from the East, or from the West by Cook's Strait. The latter is the course almost invariably taken by vessels from Great Britain or from the Australian Colonies. The *Cook's Strait Almanack*,* which is published annually at Wellington, contains, in the number for 1846, the following description of the appearance of the neighbouring land from a vessel at sea, and sailing directions for making the harbour from either east or west.

“PORT NICHOLSON, Wellington, Government house; S. lat. 41 deg. 16 min. 46 sec.; E. long. 174 deg. 47 min. 20 sec.; T. of H. W. F. & C. 6hr. Sp. rise 6ft.

“The time of high water and its rise in Port Nicholson harbour are only known approximately; flood commences at the heads about two hours earlier than in the harbour. The tide rises about three and a half feet; highest tide takes place from three to five days after Full and Change.

“In the spring and winter months, a south-east wind may be calculated upon about Full and Change.

“REMARKS ON THE APPEARANCE OF THE LAND.

“Cape Palliser is a high and bold promontory, and may be approached with a considerable degree of safety. As seen from the

* This publication is to be procured at Messrs. Longman & Co.'s Paternoster-row.

eastward or westward, at a distance of fifteen miles, it rises from the sea in a gradual and regular ascent to the high mountains at the back, which are of irregular outline, and peaked. From this promontory to Cape Turakirai the course is W.N.W. twenty miles. The outline of the land at the back of Turakirai is more regular than that of Cape Palliser, and appears to end in a bold and abrupt convexity. On a nearer view, however, a low point will be observed, extending from the base into the sea, giving it much the appearance of the snout of a porpoise. As seen more from the southward, the hills at the back are gradually lower into the flat land of Palliser Bay.

"The course from Turakirai to Baring Head is N.W. by W. three miles. Baring Head is the extremity of a table flat, extending in a north-westerly direction, to within a mile of Pencarrow Head; the indentation of the coast between Baring Head and Pencarrow Head forms Fitzroy Bay, where small vessels sometimes ride out north-westerly gales, bringing the high rocks off Pencarrow Head, and those a quarter of a mile to the southward of them, to cover the entrance of the harbour.

"Pencarrow Head is a bold cliff, on the summit of which is a white beacon, about thirty feet in height; a good mark for the entrance of the harbour.*

"The land on the western side of the entrance is moderately high to seaward, but ascends considerably towards the harbour. At a distance of ten miles, it appears to be separated from the land further to the westward, but is in reality connected with it by a low, narrow isthmus, which divides Evans Bay on the harbour side from Lyall Bay. This has often been mistaken by strangers for the entrance into the harbour.

"On the western side of the entrance, bearing E. by N. $\frac{1}{2}$ N. from Pencarrow Head, is Palmer Head, from which a rocky reef projects to the distance of half a mile. The rocks are all visible, and may be safely approached within a quarter of a mile: on the hills between Palmer Head and Point Dorset a beacon is erected. About a mile west of Palmer Head is Lyall Bay: on the fern hills west of this Bay, on the summit of Mount Albert, is the Signal Station.

"From the low neck between Evans and Lyall Bays, to the distance of two miles along the coast, the ascent is gradually hilly; the land then rises considerably for two miles further to Sinclair Head, where it is a bold cliff. Four miles to the north-westward, the land continues high till it descends into the Oterango valley, after which it rises in an almost semicircular hill, called by the natives Omere, (on the chart, Terawiti.) The remarkable convex appearance of this hill renders it easily distinguished from Turakirai, or Cape Palliser, when seen from a northerly or southerly direction.

* "The beacon is not distinguishable at the distance of five miles, except in very clear weather."

"Between this Cape and Sinclair Head, a reef extends about the distance of a mile and a half from the shore, terminating in a high rock, called the Seal Rock.

"There is a dangerous *sunken rock*, the bearings of which are as follow:—

"Sunken rock bears S.E. by S. by compass from the Seal Rock, about three quarters of a mile, and taking the Seal Rock and the Reef off Sinclair Head upon a parallel, it will be found about half a mile south of that line, and from two to two miles and a half from the main land. The rock is visible about three inches below water at neap tide only, and is apparently a perfect steeple. The rock called here the Seal Rock, is described in the Chart of Cook's Strait, published by Smith, Elder, & Co., London, as the 'Karori Rock.'

"N.B.—On rounding Cape Palliser from the eastward, the land will be seen to terminate in a long table flat, similar to that before mentioned as forming Baring Head.

"SAILING DIRECTIONS.

"Running for Port Nicholson, with a north-westerly wind, from the northward, Cape Terawiti should be rounded close, say within three miles, as the only dangers are the *Seal Rock*, which, as before stated, lies about a mile and a half from the shore between Sinclair Head and Cape Terawiti, high out of the water, and safe to approach within half a mile; and the *Sunken Rock*, off the Karori Stream (near Terawiti), before described. The course from Terawiti to Sinclair Head is E.S.E. six miles, then the course is E.N.E. six miles to the outer rock of Barrett's Reef. If the wind is moderate, and the weather clear, a vessel that is easily managed may work in night or day, all the rocks being uncovered except a few in a line with the reef. She may, if necessary, lie inside the rock till daylight, being ready to weigh anchor immediately on a shift from the southward. Should the north-west wind be too strong to work into the harbour, the entrance should be kept open; and in thick weather, a sufficient offing preserved, in case of a southerly shift of wind: this, of course, will depend on circumstances, for, with a moderate north-wester, if it is not deemed advisable to enter at night, should the wind be steady, and the weather clear, a sudden shift seldom occurs; and as there is no hidden danger, a vessel may be kept under sail with the entrance open till daylight, or in case of a shift, she may run in with all safety.

"It is hardly necessary to give any directions for approach from the eastward. Care should be taken to avoid being embayed between Capes Palliser and Turakirai; and if the land is not distinctly visible, the harbour should not be attempted at night. As a matter of precaution against danger, the vessel should be kept under snug sail, if the weather is at all unsettled.

"The outer rock of Barrett Reef may be rounded at the distance of 200 yards, with Waddell Point bearing N. by W.

"The stream of flood runs to the northward until eight o'clock, or four hours later. The ebb sets to the southward. Between Sinclair Head and the entrance to the harbour, there is little or no tide felt; and generally with the flood tide there is an eddy found setting to the eastward towards the entrance.

"The *Bully* Rock is said to lie off Point Jerningham about 100 yards, with six feet on it at high water.

"COOK'S STRAIT.

"The Rock off the Brothers lies four miles from the land, with the outer Brother S.E. by S. $\frac{1}{2}$ S; Long Island in one with the white rocks in Queen Charlotte's Sound, S.W. $\frac{1}{2}$ S. The rock is just a wash at low water.

"The barometer is not always an indication of a change in the weather in Cook's Strait.

"During a north-westerly wind and thick weather, on a rise of the barometer, a southerly wind may be expected; but a change often occurs from N.W. to S.E., and the contrary, without any alteration of height in the mercury.

"The mercury is sometimes unusually low even in moderate weather, and high when blowing a gale."

The breadth of the entrance, between Barrett Reef and Pencarrow Head, is about three-quarters of a mile. For about three miles to the north, you continue to sail between steep shores of moderate height;—the width of the passage varying from a mile to a mile and a half; and the depth of water ranging from fourteen to six fathoms at low water of spring tides. The harbour now expands to the westward; you should give Ward Island a wide berth; and, as you pass close to Points Gordon and Halswell, leaving Ward and Somes Islands to the north, you discover Evans Bay stretching to the south, and Lambton Harbour with the Town of Wellington in the south-west corner of the port. Independently of these bays and of the long, narrow entrance, Port Nicholson forms a basin, land-locked in nearly every part, about five miles in diameter, with soundings varying from fourteen to three fathoms.

The pilots generally board vessels outside Barrett Reef; as notice is given to them, by the signal station on Mount Albert, of the appearance of a vessel outside the harbour.

The following are the signals used at the flagstaff at Mount Albert:—

A Square	denotes a	Ship
A Cross	...	Barque
A Circle	...	Brig
A Triangle	...	Schooner
A Diamond	...	Cutter
A Parallelogram	...	Steamer

A white flag at mast-head denotes a sail in sight; when the class is ascertained, the descriptive signal will be hoisted at the yard-arm.

English vessel of war, Union-jack at mast-head.

Foreign vessel of war, Union-jack at mast-head, with white pendant.

Government brig, white pendant under descriptive signal.

When the vessel is inside the Heads, the flag will be lowered.

When a vessel is at anchor, either inside or outside the Heads, the flag is lowered to half-mast.

A vessel in distress, or on shore, descriptive signal, half-mast.

Fore-and-aft schooner, a triangle, hollow in the centre.

According to the plan on which the Settlement of Wellington was founded, a town-site was laid out, consisting of 1100 sections of one acre each, besides reserves for public purposes, and there were also laid out 1100 rural sections of one hundred acres each, in various parts of the neighbouring country. Each purchaser in London of one right of selection became entitled, in an order of choice determined by lot as soon as all had been purchased, to select one town and one country section. One hundred sections were reserved for the natives, and treated precisely in the same way, as to order of choice, as though each of the hundred had been purchased by a private individual.

The site chosen by Colonel Wakefield for the Town of Wellington is immediately contiguous to Lambton Harbour. The water-frontage of the Town extends for about three miles round its beach. The site comprises the whole of the level spaces commonly called Thorndon Flat and Te Aro Flat, on the western and southern sides of the harbour, and some of the more practicable

slopes of the hills. In order to include the whole amount of 1100 acres required, it was found necessary to extend the boundaries as far in one direction (south of the harbour) as two miles from the beach.

Twenty-one sections, at the southern extremity of the harbour, comprise a private property in the land down to high-water mark. In all other parts of the shore, the public road is laid down between high-water mark and the boundary of private property. These twenty-one acres extend along about half a mile of the beach, in the middle of which space a frontage of about 140 feet is allotted to a Public Wharf, but is at present occupied by the native pa or village, called Te Aro. Owing to the valuable privilege mentioned, many of these sections have been eagerly sought after and occupied by the commercial part of the community. Here three substantial jetties have been built out by the proprietors or tenants, and a vessel of seventy tons burthen may load or unload her cargo alongside one of them. Several strongly built houses and warehouses, some of them constructed of bricks made on the spot, are situated near the jetties. In this part of the town, too, are situated the Office of the Union Bank of Australia, the Wesleyan Chapel and Mission-house, the Custom-house, and the Exchange.

Further back from the beach, numerous houses, of various size and construction, including a Windmill for grinding flour, a Steam flour and sawing mill, a Brewery, and two or three Hotels and Taverns, are dotted over Te Aro Flat, the hollow between the bare eastern ridge, of which Mounts Victoria and Albert are peaks, and the wooded spurs of the hills which close the view to the south-west.

On a slight eminence in the centre of this hollow, named Mount Cook, the Jail and Barracks are conspicuous objects. Following round the beach to the westward, a continuous line of taverns, shops, and stores, among which a principal object is the Scotch Presbyterian Church, leads the eye to Thorndon Flat, on or

near which stand the neat English Church and Parsonage, the residences of many of the principal inhabitants, of the Company's Principal Agent, and of the Lieutenant-Governor, Mr. Eyre, a second set of Barracks, the Company's Offices and Buildings for the reception of Immigrants, the principal (Barrett's), and other Hotels, &c. At this part of the harbour an excellent jetty has been built at the expense of the proprietors of the neighbouring shops and houses, who have generously, and at the same time wisely, thrown it open for the gratuitous use of the public.

The situation of Wellington is highly picturesque. The steep wooded heights of Tinakore form a pleasing background to the view. It is to be hoped, that as they are included in the Belt of land reserved all round the Town for Public purposes, strict precautions may be taken to preserve the timber from depredation.

Several streams from the western range afford a constant supply of the purest water; of which vessels take in a stock with great ease, as they may lie at anchor in three fathoms' water so near the beach as to haul their long-boats backwards and forwards along a line stretched from the ship to the shore. The same means is also frequently adopted for discharging cargo.

The Te Aro Flat, or southern part of the town, near the beach, consists partly of undrained marsh, and partly of a poor gravelly soil. Near the foot of the western hills, however, there is a great improvement in its quality, and several well cultivated gardens may be seen. The more distant town-sections to the south are covered with natural pasture, varying in quality and quantity; but they seem fitted for little else.

Thorndon Flat, on which is the north-western portion of the Town, was once covered with the potato cultivations of the natives, which have exhausted the fertility of the soil; but the careful cultivation, by many of the present inhabitants, of numerous spots, has already brought their gardens to produce very satisfactory crops, and to wear an extremely cheerful appearance.

As yet, only the main streets, in which sections are built upon or otherwise occupied, are even marked out; and only one or two of the principal ones are made passable for wheeled vehicles. There are, however, but few of these in the Settlement; and, except for the conveyance of heavy goods, for which dray-carts drawn by bullocks are chiefly used, locomotion is much easier on foot or on horseback. No paving has as yet been attempted; and the only lights, besides those of the shops till they close, are the oil-lamps which the licensed publicans are required to maintain over their doors all night.

Near the western extremity of the town, a very good road leads over a low part of the Tinakore range, and across the picturesque gully and stream of the Kaiwarawara,* to the Karori district. This district begins immediately outside the boundary of the Town-belt, and the road is already passable for a distance of four or five miles from the part of the Town where it begins. The New Zealand Company first expended 1557*l.* 8*s.* 4*d.* on the rough construction of 4 miles, 7 furlongs, and 20 poles, or at the rate of 315*l.* 8*s.* 9*d.* per mile; and the settlers in the district afterwards contributed labour and materials to improve the effect of this first expenditure. The greater portion of the district forms an undulating table-land, surrounded by higher hills. The table-land lies 591 feet above the level of the sea, and contains about 1200 or 1500 acres of land, originally covered with forest-trees of the loftiest growth, which have now disappeared in many places before the axe of the settler. Karori district on the map comprises twenty-four sections of 100 acres each; but about one-half of this amount of land is situated on more or less steep acclivities either above or below the level of the table-land described. A great many labouring families own or hire small patches of land here, keep forty or fifty cows among them, and saw up the

* See p. 99.

timber, which is of excellent quality. Even the smaller timber is of value, as firewood is easily conveyed into the town. Thus the early operation of clearing has in a great measure paid its own expenses in this upland valley.

The present Chief Justice of the Southern Province, Mr. H. S. Chapman, resides here; and has done much by his good example to encourage the activity and industry of his neighbours. In December, 1846, the dwellings of some of the labouring settlers were clustered so as to have the appearance of a village near Mr. Chapman's house: a building had been erected, to serve the united purposes of Chapel and school; and a shop had been opened. At a fête held in 1847, on the opening of the Chapel, it was remarked that out of the whole population of 200 souls, no death had occurred within a twelvemonth.

Immediately adjoining on the northern extremity of Wellington, another road leads up the side of a rugged hill. This was a rural section of one hundred acres; and two speculators joined together to purchase it from the original owner, to construct the road as a means of access to its upper portion, and to resell the land in small allotments. As this was done during the first foundation of the settlement, when no circumstances had occurred to check the most sanguine hopes of rapid prosperity, these allotments were sold for very high prices, some even at the rate of 40*l.* per acre. They were chiefly bought by labouring men who had saved enough money to pay a deposit on the purchase-money, and who were allowed time to pay the remainder. The contented appearance of these industrious cottagers, and the cheerful aspect of their gardens, well repay the effort of climbing over the hill, from which, moreover, there is a comprehensive view of the Town and harbour and of the neighbouring country. This village is called Wade's Town.

A good road, called the Pitone road, leads from the same point of Wellington, along the western shore of

Port Nicholson, close under the hills, which are covered with hanging woods.

About half a mile along this road, the gully of the Kaiwarawara stream makes a gap in the wall of foliage; and a small English village, as well as a native *pa*, or collection of huts, stands on one part of the alluvial level which projects into the harbour. Here Mr. Kenneth Mathieson, a Colonist from Greenock, in 1841 built a slip, on which the "Indemnity" of 400 tons burthen and several other vessels were hauled up and repaired. A very few acres of level land are contained in this picturesque gully, on which the steep hills soon close in from either side. Owing to this circumstance, the stream affords considerable water-power; and a flour-mill, with two pair of stones, has accordingly been erected not far from its mouth. The rural section which includes this spot was selected by the holder of the first right of choice.

For about three miles the Pitone road proceeds between the western shore of the harbour, here very rocky, and steep, wooded hill-sides. In several places, the jutting buttresses of rock have been blasted and cut away, in order to make room for the road. There is then another break, similar to that of Kaiwarawara, but smaller in extent of level land, where the Nga Hauranga stream flows into the harbour. Here there are a few houses and huts inhabited by natives, and one of the quaint monuments which are erected by these people in memory of their dead. This one is to commemorate Warepori, the Chief who, together with another named Epuni, took the lead in conducting the sale of this district in September, 1839, to Colonel Wakefield. Warepori died here in 1842. The Nga Hauranga stream is capable of affording power for a small mill.

Steep wooded hills again bound the road to the west for two or three miles. In the latter part of this space a nameless stream has a considerable fall, close to the

beach of the harbour, and here would be another excellent site for a water-mill.

Less than a mile from this stream is the north-west corner of the harbour, and from this point a sandy beach extends for about two miles east and west across its northern end.

At this point a native foot-path winds up the western hills towards Porirua, a neighbouring harbour, which will shortly be described. From a deep dell between two ridges of these hills, a brawling stream called the Korokoro, or "Throat," rushes into the sea. This water-course is well adapted for turning a mill-wheel. On the making of the road to this point, the Company expended, at various times, 2575*l.* 19*s.* 4*d.* The total length of this road is five miles and six furlongs; so that the original cost per mile was 447*l.* 19*s.* 10*d.* It is now kept under repair partly by the Government and partly by the settlers in the valley of the Hutt.

We have now reached the mouth of this valley, which is as broad as the sandy beach above mentioned. Here is the native village called Pitone, or "End of the Sand," from its position. This is remarkable as the spot where the original purchase of the district, by Colonel Wakefield, was concluded with the natives, in September, 1839, and as the spot on which the first four or five ship-loads of Colonists disembarked and pitched their tents. The native village is still the residence of Epuni, the Chief who joined with the deceased Warepori in selling the land. Epuni is celebrated among the Colonists as having been a very rare instance of a native steadfastly adhering to a bargain respecting land. Throughout numerous disagreements between the Company's Agents and settlers and the Government Officials, he has, for upwards of eight years, resolutely maintained the integrity of the contract into which he had entered, and the friendship of the first party of white men to whom he had promised his assistance in colonizing the country.

During the skirmishes of 1846 with the rebel natives, in the valley of the Hutt and the neighbouring country, Epuni and his followers rendered most valuable assistance to our forces, as well by honest and judicious advice as by active and courageous co-operation. Mr. Alexander Currie, one of the Directors of the New Zealand Company, sent the Chief Epuni, as the present of a private individual, a handsome silver vase, bearing an appropriate inscription in the native language, accompanied by a letter, begging him to hand it down as an heir-loom to his posterity, in order to encourage them to follow his example. A festival was held in June, 1847, on the occasion of the presentation of the vase to Epuni by Mrs. Petre; and the Chief has since acknowledged the well-timed testimonial, in a letter which does equal credit to himself and to the donor.*

The principal road now turns to the north, along the western side of the valley; though there is a track along the sandy plain immediately at the back of the beach, towards the mouth of the Hutt, at the eastern side of the valley, and towards several houses which have been built in that direction.

The valley of the Hutt consists of two portions, called the Lower Hutt and Upper Hutt districts.

The Lower Hutt extends in the form of a triangle, having its base on the shores of the harbour, and its apex at a gorge in a northerly direction, about six miles and a half from the sea, where the eastern and western hills bounding the valley approach so close to each other as only to leave room for the passage of the river. Not far below this gorge, a portion of the waters of the river overflow or ooze through the eastern bank at various points, in such a way as to give rise to three separate water-courses, all of which at length re-unite with the parent stream in a common embouchure at the eastern extremity of the beach before mentioned. The easternmost of these water-courses is called the

* New Zealand Journal, vol. ix., No. 212, p. 4.

Waiwetu, or "Star River," and flows for about four miles close under the eastern hills, gathering their tributary waters. The main stream, or Hutt, flows in a similar way nearest to the western hills, until about five miles below the gorge, whence it meanders across the valley to the mouth. The two other water-courses are less important, both in length and size: they intersect the country between the Hutt and the Waiwetu, and are called respectively, beginning from the west, First and Second Rivers.

For about a quarter of a mile back from the beach, the land of this valley is inferior in quality, consisting alternately of sand, shingle, or gravel, and swamp lying so low as to be difficult of drainage; but the whole of the valley, between this belt on the sea-shore and the gorge, possesses the very richest alluvial soil, enriched by the decayed vegetable matter of forests which seem to have grown undisturbed for at least two hundred years previous to the arrival of the European Colonists. A rich brown sandy loam exists, in many places to the depth of eight or nine feet from the surface. The fertility of this tract of land seems almost inexhaustible; for the soil is renewed over the greater part of the delta, annually, by freshets, which have never done any mischief to the crops. At high water, these four streams are navigable for large boats and barges as far as three or four miles from the mouth; and the navigation may be much improved, and extended further up the country, by clearing away accumulations of timber and shingle-banks which now obstruct the clear course of both tide and current.

Soon after leaving the native village of Pitone, a branch to the right leads from the main road to Herongate Farm, the residence of the Hon. Henry W. Petre, which stands nearly in the centre of the valley, on a ridge of the shingly or gravelly soil already mentioned; and thence to a small village, as yet nameless, situated on the west bank of the Hutt, about half a mile above its mouth. Clover, grass, and barley are

grown tolerably well on the comparatively unproductive tract of land already alluded to, through which this cross-road passes.

The main road proceeds through some land, at the foot of the hill, which is nearly exhausted by the repeated potato crops taken from it by the natives without interval, and which lies too high to be renovated by the floods; then, passing over a small space of the richest possible alluvial soil, it reaches the west bank of the Hutt at the spot whence, as above described, the river bends gradually towards the eastern side of the valley.

Just about this spot, the greatest progress has been made towards European civilization. On the same bank of the river, about half a mile lower down, is the village of Aglionby, which contains an excellent Tavern, with good stabling and other accommodation; a small building used as a Church and school, a blacksmith's forge, and several shops, one or two good farm-houses, and numerous labourers' cottages. Close to the main road stands Fort Richmond, a wooden stockade built in 1845, and garrisoned by a small detachment of troops. The fort commands a strong wooden Bridge, built by the Company over the river, in the year 1844, at a cost of 410*l*.

Immediately on the other side of the river stands a Windmill, erected by the late Mr. Francis Molesworth, on his estate called Newry Farm, which lies along the left bank of the river for about half-a-mile below the Bridge. Not far from the Mill there is a large barn with a four-horse thrashing machine, and a cluster of labourers' cottages. A belt of timber, spared by the axe, hides the house from the view. This farm is now let out to several different tenants. Mr. Petre rents the house, and thirty or forty acres of the immediately surrounding land. He is said to have here the best garden in the colony. For some of this land a yearly rent of thirty shillings per acre is actually paid, on short leases, and without purchasing clauses.

Next below Newry, on the same side, lies a small farm, with a pretty residence fronting towards the river; and from that spot to the nameless village already spoken of, numerous cottages surrounded by their small plots of cultivation appear on either side.

Just above the Windmill stands another farm-house; and all around are seen substantial fences, wide clearings, and careful cultivation.

The road now proceeds for five miles nearly in a straight line up to the gorge. About two miles above the Bridge is another stockade, called "the Taita," where a military party is posted so as to command a native foot-path leading over the western hills towards Porirua. On either side of the road, both above and below this stockade, are clearings and cultivations of greater or less extent, and a few residences of the rough kind which the taste or means of the settler in each case has dictated.

On the banks of the other three streams, and especially on those of the Waiwetū, or easternmost river, there is a considerable number of houses belonging to farmers or to labourers, and a large extent of cleared and cultivated land. This part of the valley is at present most accessible by water; but it is intended at an early opportunity to complete a branch road, with bridges, across the valley and the four streams, from west to east.

At the gorge of the Hutt, the old road winds up the eastern hills, and from its highest level a beautiful view of the Lower valley and of the harbour is obtained, but a more level road has lately been cut by Government through the lower part of the eastern bank.

Ninety sections have been laid out, and eighty-eight selected in the Lower valley of the Hutt. Out of these 8800 acres, about 1000 were cleared and cultivated at the end of the year 1847.

North of the gorge, through which the river rushes rapidly for about a mile and a half, the hills again recede from each other, and the Upper Hutt valley opens out. This district is a level piece of ground

about eight miles long by two broad, consisting of soil generally somewhat inferior to that of the lower valley. This is especially the case in most parts of the valley close to the banks of the river, where the tree called black birch (*tawai* of the natives*) is the principal forest growth, and betokens a cold clayey, or poor gravelly soil. Further back from the river, the soil evidently improves, and would be considered of excellent quality if not compared with that of the Lower valley. Lying, however, at a higher level, it does not receive so much alluvium from the floods. For this inferiority of soil the resident here will be compensated by the greater mildness of the weather, owing to the complete shelter which is afforded to this valley by the hills near the gorge from the cold south-easterly winds. The river Hutt, for four or five miles above the gorge, is broad, and deep enough to afford an excellent means of internal communication. Indeed, a canal from the sea, through the gorge, to the northern end of the Upper valley, would seem to be a work of no great difficulty, should there ever be traffic enough to suggest the undertaking.

In the Upper valley of the Hutt, sixty-two sections have been laid out, and forty-two chosen.

Two smaller valleys open into the valley of the Hutt on the eastern side. They are formed by the Mungaroa and Pakiritahi streams, which flow from the eastern hills in a north-western direction to join the head waters of the Hutt.

The Mungaroa valley is at present almost entirely a swamp, lying so high as to be easily drained. When this is done, the land will no doubt be found to be of excellent quality. Thirty-eight sections are laid out in this valley, and twenty have been chosen.

In the Pakiritahi valley, fourteen sections have been laid out and chosen. The Hutt road has been continued up this valley by Government; and it is intended at an

* See page 142, No. 9.

early period to carry it still further, across the most practicable part of the Rimutaka, or eastern range of hills, into the Wairarapa plains already mentioned at page 88. The road was well-made up to the foot of the range in the end of 1847; and had been roughly laid down by the Government surveyor as far as Pai-tu-mokai, in the plains on the eastern side of the hills, in July of that year. The whole distance, by this road, from Wellington to Pai-tu-mokai is $39\frac{1}{2}$ miles. On the whole line there will be no gradient with a greater average inclination than 1 in 40. The rough construction of a road from Pitone to the junction of the Mungaroa with the Hutt, in length 18 miles, 4 furlongs, 3 poles, cost the Company 1652*l.* 5*s.* 0*d.*, or at the rate of 88*l.* 17*s.* 2*d.* per mile. The Government have since expended about 4200*l.* on its improvement and continuation, by means of the labour of troops and natives. It is calculated that it will cost about 10,000*l.* more to complete the thirty-nine miles and a half, so that a dray may go from Wellington into the plains, and that this will have been done by May, 1848.*

With the exception of one or two patches of level land close to the mouths of small streams, the whole eastern shore of Port Nicholson is steep to the water's edge.

The first of these level patches is about a quarter of a mile from the eastern extremity of the sandy beach which forms the base of the Lower Hutt valley. There is here a slight indentation in the shore, so as to form a shelter for small vessels from the opening of the harbour. It is called Lowry Bay. There are here about forty or fifty acres of level land, the greater part of which has been cleared and cultivated by Colonists whose houses stand near the beach.

* See *Papers on New Zealand, presented to both Houses, 3rd February, 1848, in continuation of Papers presented in January and June, 1847, page 4, for the Reports of the Government Surveyor on the subject.*

At Okiwi, or Hawtrey Bay, there is another patch of level land of about ten acres, which has also been cleared and cultivated.

The steep hills along the remainder of this shore afford very good pasturage. Forty-seven sections have been laid out along this line, forming, together with nineteen more sections along the Pitone road between Wade's Town and the Korokoro stream, what is called the Harbour District.

The peninsula which forms the western shore of the entrance of Port Nicholson, called Watt's Peninsula, contains about 1800 acres, chiefly steep hilly pasture-land, and totally devoid of timber; and eighteen sections have been laid out and chosen upon it. In its centre was Burnham Water, a fresh-water lake, covering about 100 acres; and round the shores of this lake there were about 200 acres of level land, lying in a swamp, but available for cultivation after drainage.

There are two large cattle farming establishments on this peninsula: Glendavar, at the north end of the lake, established in 1840, by Mr. James Coutts Crawford; and the other, called Tettcott Farm, among the hills at the south end of the peninsula, which was first established by the late Mr. Francis Molesworth. Both now belong to Mr. Crawford, who, in the year 1847, commenced draining Burnham Water, by means of a tunnel through the narrow ridge of hills which separates it from Evans Bay. He has thus reclaimed a considerable tract of very fertile land, including the former site of the Lake. On a hill near Tettcott Farm is the small beacon already mentioned in the description of the entrance to the harbour. The isthmus between Lyall and Evans Bays is a sandy tract totally unfit for cultivation of any kind. The Race Course is on the Peninsula, closely adjoining this isthmus.

On the eastern side of the range of hills dividing Evans Bay from Lambton Harbour and the town of Wellington, and of which Mounts Victoria and Albert are the principal peaks, six sections have been laid

out, forming what is called the Evans Bay district. They are all employed for the purposes of depasturing sheep, horses, or cattle; and on one of them, in the south-western corner of Evans Bay, there is a considerable dairy-farm. The road to Wellington passes through this farm over the lowest part of the ridge, about half-way between the two peaks.

Nine sections are laid out in a tract of country called the Town District, consisting of undulating, open pasture land, which lies on the western side of the ridge, south of the boundary of the town of Wellington. This tract is unfitted for arable purposes, and is now entirely occupied by graziers.

Across the next ridge of hills, which forms the western boundary of the Town of Wellington and Town District, lies the Ohiro, or Happy Valley, in which eighteen sections have been laid out and chosen. Those near the mouth of the Ohiro stream are devoid of timber, and only fitted for pasturage; but higher up and nearer Wellington, where thick woods once stood, there are now several farm-houses and extensive clearings. This valley is narrow, and the slopes on either side steep in many places. The residence of Mr. Edmund Halswell, late Puisne Judge of the Southern District and Protector of Aborigines, is in this valley; and offers the aspect of an old English farm-house of the better sort.

Between the Happy Valley and the S.E. boundary of the Karori district, seven sections of roughish land have been laid out and selected in the upper part of the Kaiwarawara valley.

The next valley to the west is the Makara, through which the Karori stream flows into Cook's Strait from its source near the south-western extremity of the Karori district. This valley bears the same character as that of the Ohiro, and together with a tract of land to the north, watered by streams which fall into the sea north of Cape Terawiti, forms the Makara district. This district contains thirty-nine sections.

To the S. and W. of Makara Valley lies a tract of high, hilly pasture land, extending to Cape Terawiti, in which only seven sections have been yet laid out, and five chosen.

Immediately to the north of Cape Terawiti, there is an indentation of the coast, and in it the mouths of two streams called Ohaua and Ohariu, into the latter of which canoes and small boats can enter at high water. There is here a native village; and in the neighbourhood there are some wooded hollows, which boast an excellent soil, and contain land sufficiently level for arable purposes. In these hollows, and on the surrounding hills between the sea and the neighbourhood of Wellington, which are here and there open, and excellently adapted for pasture, 96 sections have been laid out, and 87 chosen; these form the Ohariu district. The principal fault of this district is the difficulty of constructing a good road to Wellington, the intervening country being very steep and rugged. The only roads to it at present are two native footpaths, one of which leads over a steep hill across the gully of the Kaiwarawara stream to Wade's Town, and the other over an equally steep ridge to the Porirua road, (which will be described immediately,) near the head of the Nga-hau-ranga stream.*

South-west of Wade's Town, and on the western side of the Tinakore hills, which slopes steeply down to the Kaiwarawara stream, three sections have been laid out, forming part of what is called the Kaiwarawara district. Notwithstanding the precipitous nature of the land on this hill-side, its proximity to Wellington, and its warm north-west aspect, completely sheltered from the cold winds, render it valuable for the purposes of orchards, market-gardens, and suburban residences.

From the banks of the Kaiwarawara stream, near its mouth, a bold road ascends in terraces up the face of the northern hill. This is the Porirua road, at present

* See page 99.

the great outlet for travellers by land bound to the north. About a mile along its picturesque curves, from which views are obtained of Port Nicholson, Wellington, and Wade's Town on the opposite side of the gully, the road turns round to the northward, passing through the upper part of the valley of a tributary of the Kaiwarawara, in which there are several farms and homesteads, and a saw-mill turned by water-power. A section of one hundred acres, through which the road passes, has been reserved for a Government Domain. The land so far is of moderately good quality, improving as you descend towards the stream. Besides the Government Domain, three sections, of 100 acres each, are laid out along this road, and three more in the valley of the Kaiwarawara. These, together with the three sections mentioned on the west slope of the Tinakore hills, form the Kaiwarawara district.

The road proceeds for four or five miles over some undulating forest country, occasionally interspersed with clearings and habitations, into the valley of the Kenepuru river, which flows into the south arm of the harbour of Porirua. Twenty-one sections are laid out along this part of the road; and at one spot, about five miles from Wellington, a collection of houses and a Church, in the midst of a wide space of clearing, deserve the rank of a village, and boast the somewhat Yankee name of Johnsonville. There is also here a wooden stockade, generally garrisoned by a small detachment of troops from Wellington. The ground for the Church and for a School and Parsonage, twenty acres in all, was generously given for the purpose by the owners, the Rev. Messrs. John and Stephen Hawtrey, who reside in England. At this spot, the road crosses the head waters of the Nga Hauranga stream; and here, too, the foot-path, before mentioned, branches off to Ohariu.*

In the Kenepuru valley, along which the road runs for about six miles after descending from the hills, the land consists of the most fertile alluvial soil, similar to

* See page 100.

that in the valley of the Hutt, and comprises thirty-nine sections, at present all covered with forest. An excellent road has, however, now been completed along the whole distance between Wellington and Porirua harbour; so that a large portion of this promising valley will doubtless soon be cleared and brought under cultivation. The New Zealand Company first expended 2989*l.* 10*s.* on the making of this road, in length twelve miles, seven furlongs, and ten poles, the cost being thus 231*l.* 12*s.* 8*d.* per mile: the settlers in the district assisted with a considerable amount both of labour and of materials; and the road has since been completed, in a very creditable manner, by the working-parties of troops and natives, at the total cost of about 700*l.* per mile.

The road emerges from the forest at the head of the southern arm of Porirua harbour, where another stockade, called Fort Elliott, is occupied by a small garrison: and a track continues for about four miles, along the western shore of that arm, to the Ferry across the outlet of the harbour at Parramatta Point.

Porirua is nearly opposite the north end of Mana, or Table Island; between which and the shore there is a tolerably good roadstead, with four fathoms' water.

There is a bar at the entrance of Porirua harbour, on which there are about fifteen feet at high-water spring tides, the fall of tide varying from six to seven feet. The entrance lies between the south shore and a reef of rocks, always visible above water. Inside the bar the water gradually deepens; but the shores close in till there is only a gut about a hundred yards in breadth between the south shore and Parramatta point; through which the tide, on its ebb and flow, rushes with great violence. From this point, close to which there is good anchorage in twelve fathoms, two arms of the harbour run north and south, each about three miles in length. The country immediately surrounding the shores of these two arms has a fertile soil, is moderately hilly, and mostly covered with timber. Besides

the valley of the Kenepuru, already described, there are two streams, and level alluvial tracts of similar character, at the northern extremity of the north arm, called Pauhatanui and Horokiwi. From these valleys and the adjoining hills, the rebel natives under Rangihaeata were driven in the skirmishes of 1846. Two stockades, one of which is called Fort Strode, at different points on this north arm, have been occupied by small military detachments, with a view to prevent the return of the turbulent natives from the fastnesses to which they have fled: and the road is being continued by the Government working-parties, round the eastern shore of the harbour, so as to avoid the Ferry, and up the valley and gorge of the Horokiwi, so as to emerge on the level country already described as lying north of the Bluffs at Paripari.*

There is a very good site for a small town at Parramatta Point, where a whaling station has been established for many years. There is also a licensed Tavern; and Barracks for the troops were built in 1846. A regular Ferry has been established at the Point, with an authorized scale of fees, which is as follows:—

	s.	d.
For crossing at the Point, each person	0	3
" " horse	1	0
" " pig	0	3
To or from Fort Elliott, each person	1	6
" Cooper's "	0	9
" Fort Strode "	0	9
" Pauhatanui "	1	6

One hundred and eighty-four sections are laid out in the country immediately bordering on Porirua harbour, in the Pauhatanui and Horokiwi valleys, and on the slopes of the adjoining hills.

Between these districts together with the Kenepuru valley, and the hills on the western shore of Port Nicholson, the Tukapu and Horokiwi Road districts, containing seventy-three sections, have been laid out in a thickly-wooded and comparatively mountainous country,

* See page 88.

portions of which, however, are land of the most fertile character.

The whole of the peninsula, between the south arm of Porirua harbour and Cook's Strait, has been given up to the natives, under a recent arrangement made with them by Governor Grey, and also the five most southerly sections on the eastern shore of that arm. For sixteen sections, which had been selected within the tract so ceded, land is to be given to the owners in other parts of the district, or elsewhere.

Considerable water-power is afforded by the Kene-puru, Tukapu, Pauhatanui, and Horokiwi streams; and the strong tide-race at Parramatta Point might perhaps be turned to advantage in the same way.

Until the completion of the military road through the Horokiwi valley and gorge, there is only a bridle-path between Parramatta Point and the sandy beach beyond Paripari. This path leads first along the north shore of the entrance to the harbour, past a small valley and native settlement called Taupo, where the capture of the rebel chief Rauperaha was gallantly effected by Captain Edward Stanley, of H. M. S. *Calliope*, and a party of blue-jackets. Then, ascending a ridge of the wooded hills, it passes through a considerable tract of ancient native cultivations, and then through gently undulating forest-country for about five miles. It next emerges in native cultivations on a high table-land above the native village of Pukerua, whence there is a fine view of Kapiti, or Entry Island, and of the adjoining level land, reaching out in a long point to the northward. A somewhat abrupt descent leads on to the sea-beach below Pukerua village; and the way then lies along a shingly beach, studded with rocks, immediately backed by almost perpendicular Bluffs, about three hundred feet in height, but covered with verdure to the water's edge. This part of the road is about four miles in length, and it passes at one place through an arch in a rocky spur of the hills which juts into the

sea at high water. The pretty native settlement of Paripari is built on a kind of terrace in these Bluff hills, and there are several small gardens of *kumera*, or sweet potato,* also on terraces, in the neighbourhood.

Half a mile beyond this settlement the hills retire inland, and the shore assumes the character of a broad sandy beach, backed by sand-hills, and low, level, open country, as far north as the mouth of the Wanganui river, in latitude $39^{\circ} 57'$ south. One mile from the end of the rocks, the Wainui rivulet flows into the sea, near the small native settlement of the same name. At intervals of one mile and a half, the Wareroa and Waremauku streams have their mouths; and at each of these mouths there is also a small native village. These three streams are fordable at all times. Three miles farther on, there is another native settlement, called Te Uruhi; and two miles on to the north, a large native village, called Waikanaë, at the mouth of a small river of that name, which, joined with another, called the Waimea, flows into the sea opposite Kapiti, or Entry Island. The mouth of the river is choked with sand-banks, and fordable at half-tide; but at high-water a good-sized boat can enter and ascend the Waikanaë for about six miles. The hills are about seven miles from the sea here; and the level tract in the intervening space contains some land of very fine quality. Much of it is cultivated by the native population, which amounts to 500 or 600 souls. An excellent missionary of the Church of England, the Rev. Octavius Hadfield, resided here for five years, and during that space of time effected great improvement in the condition, both moral and physical, of the inhabitants of this and the neighbouring villages. Among other things, he encouraged them to grow wheat, which they have done very successfully, to the extent of some hundred acres. The Chapel in the village, built under his superintendence, is famous as a piece of native workmanship.

The holders of some of the later orders of choice,

* See page 149.

who had reserved their choices until the whole of the land to be offered for selection should have been surveyed, were allowed the option of selecting tracts of land in unsurveyed parts of the district, subject to the condition that the consent of the natives claiming such tracts should be obtained at the cost and trouble of the selector. Under these terms, a few sections were selected on the banks of the Waikanae and Waimea rivers; but no final arrangement respecting their occupation has yet been made with the natives. It was here that Governor Fitzroy, in January, 1844, visited Rauperaha and Rangihaeata, in order to forgive them for the massacre of Wairau, and to tell them that the white men were in the wrong.*

Twelve miles north of Waikanae is another river, called the Otaki, into which boats can enter at high water; but it is not navigable for more than half a mile from the mouth, on account of shingle-banks and collections of drift-wood. The Otaki is fordable at the mouth at low-water. There are here two or three native villages of the Ngatiraukawa tribe, altogether possessing a resident population of about 400 souls. Mr. Hadfield divided his time between this settlement and Waikanae; and produced as remarkable an improvement in one community as in the other. From the time of their migration to Cook's Strait, in about 1834, to his arrival in 1840, these two tribes had been constantly in a state of deadly feud; but he succeeded, not only in preventing any recurrence of hostilities, but in producing a lasting peace between them. Here, also, the natives have some wheat in cultivation, and have lately subscribed 300*l.* for the erection, by white mechanics, of a joint-stock water-mill to grind their flour. There would be ample water-power for several mills on this river and its tributaries.

The level country here, between the sea and the foot of the Tararua mountains, is rather broader than at Waikanae, and possesses generally a very rich soil. Several

* See page 76.

hundred acres of land, which the natives have abandoned, after taking two or three successive crops of potatoes, are now overrun with a natural growth, which renews itself every year, of wild oats, five feet high; yellow trefoil, half that height; and luxuriant timothy grass. Here, also, a few sections were selected, under the same circumstances as at Waikanae. Several Europeans, squatters by permission of the natives, and most of them living with native women, are located in this neighbourhood, as well as in three or four places between this and Porirua. They are most of them connected in some way with the whaling-stations situated in different parts of Cook's Strait.

There are licensed Taverns, kept by Englishmen, at Te Uruhi and at Otaki, which afford comfortable accommodation to travellers.

Five miles north of Otaki is the mouth of the Ohau river. At low water, this river is easily fordable; but at high water, a large boat or canoe may enter and proceed two or three miles up the Ohau, and half a mile up its southern tributary, the Waikawa, which flows into it from the south-east, about two hundred yards above its mouth. There are several villages and large cultivations of the natives, on the banks of these two rivers. The permanent population, however, is not more than 250; as the people come hither from their regular residence at Otaki, at various times, in order to keep up their cultivations. Two or three European squatters live in the same district; and there is a licensed Tavern at the river's mouth.

The Ohau and Waikawa would both afford numerous mill-sites. The land through which they flow is of the richest description, very similar to that in the valley of the Hutt.

Proceeding along the sandy beach for seventeen miles, in the course of which three minor rivulets trickle over it, you arrive at the mouth of the Manawatu, one of the two largest rivers which flow into Cook's Strait on the north shore.

Another path leads from a spot about four miles up the right bank of the Ohau, to a spot about the same distance up the left bank of the Manawatu. This inland path passes by two fresh-water Lakes. One, Papai Tonga, or "Beautiful South," close to the Ohau river, and drained into it by a small tributary, is about two miles in circumference. The other, Horowenua, or "Landslip," four miles more to the north, is about five miles in circumference, and its superfluous waters flow into the sea by one of the rivulets mentioned above, which would turn a small mill. The country passed through along this path is chiefly open land covered with natural pasturage, but dotted here and there with groves of timber.

In the neighbourhood of the Manawatu River and Lake Horowenua a large district of most fertile country has been surveyed and laid out in sections, 329 of which have been selected. The districts of Manawatu and Horowenua so surveyed are bounded:—on the north-west by the Manawatu River; on the east by the Tararua range; on the west by a line drawn parallel to the sea-coast about half a mile inland of it, so as not to include the barren sand-hummocks; and on the south by the Horowenua stream and Lake, and a line drawn from the south end of the Lake to the nearest point of the mountains. About 150 of the sections in the Manawatu, or eastern district of the two, are in a swamp, which will be easily drained, so as to afford the richest soil; and the rest are level forest land, covered with deep vegetable deposit and alluvial soil from the annual freshets. With the exception of a few woody sections, and a few more of reclaimable swamp, the Horowenua district, consisting altogether of 192 sections, spreads over open pasture or fern land.

There is one small native village on the banks of the Horowenua stream, and another at the north end of the Lake. A third village is situated about half-way between the Lake and the Manawatu river.

The following directions for entering the mouth of the Manawatu are quoted from the *Cook's Strait Almanack for 1846*:—

“RIVER MANAWATU (Pa Papangaio, south bank of river); S. Lat. $40^{\circ} 28'$; E. long. $175^{\circ} 8' 11''$; Sp. rise 9 ft.; ordinary tides 6 ft.

“Seven feet water in the channel over the bar at low-water spring tides; under the high bank near Pa Papangaio, (south bank,) from $10\frac{1}{2}$ to 21 feet low-water spring tides.

“*Sailing Directions*.—Vessels coming from the N.W. or S.W., should open *Pa Warangi* (N. bank) clear of the breakers on the south spit, bringing the *North Beacon* to bear N.E. by E. $\frac{3}{4}$ E., and the *South Beacon* S.S.E. $\frac{3}{4}$ E.; the high peak of Kapiti will then be found S. by W. $\frac{1}{4}$ W., and the Pa S.E. by E. $\frac{1}{4}$ E. Steer for the Pa; sailing a little more than a quarter of a mile in this direction, the vessel will be in the most shallow part she has to cross, or on the bar; the water will be found to deepen as she proceeds. When she brings the *South Beacon* abeam, she must hug the north shore till she makes *Pa Warangi*, then steer for a beacon about 150 yards east of the *Pa Papangaio*, then hug the south shore, the deep water being under the high bank.

“In making this river, it should be observed that there is a remarkable grove of trees on the north side about three miles inland. It is the first grove to the north of Waikanae, and serves as a good landmark.”

The course of the Manawatu is exceedingly tortuous; so much so, that the natives have a legend that it was formed by an Atua, or “Evil Spirit,” who was in the form of a large Totara-tree, and wormed himself along like an eel on his way from the east coast to Cook's Strait. His name was Okatia; and he was said to have followed the course of a principal tributary of the Manawatu, called the Tirumea, which takes its source on the western side of the Puketoi mountains, which have already been described as separating the highest part of the eastern series of plains from the east coast. One point on the banks of the Manawatu, thirty-six miles by the windings of the river, is only eight in a straight line from the sea.

As far as regards depth of water, any vessel which can cross the bar may ascend the river for fifty-two miles from its mouth; but the tide does not flow so as to assist

navigation against the stream for more than two-thirds of that distance. After heavy floods the water runs downwards during both ebb and flow, and a great deal of heavy timber is carried along to the sea, which renders precaution necessary in entering the river during the winter season. An Englishman has a house of entertainment for travellers, and keeps a ferry-boat on the south bank, about a mile from the mouth. Twelve or fifteen white squatters reside at a spot called Karekare, seventeen miles up the left bank, and have small patches of land under cultivation.

Nearly opposite, on the north bank, two brothers, named Kebbell, set up, in the middle of the year 1842, a Steam saw-mill of twenty-horse power, which they had brought from England to Wellington, and thence by sea to this place. They had hoped to derive a considerable profit from cutting up and shipping the timber, of which there is an unlimited supply, of excellent quality, for seventy miles along both banks of the river. They persevered in a remarkable way till their undertaking was complete. They made friends with a large number of natives, and employed many of them to assist in the work, after paying them for permission to occupy a small plot of land, for the Company was understood not to have treated with the resident natives for any land on the north bank of the river. Gable after gable, and roof after roof, almost all composed of thatch on wooden frame-work, were added to the irregular building, as different parts of the machinery were erected and required protection. At length the cast-iron chimney, forty feet high, rose from the midst of the heap of angles, and the steam was set going. It is not easy to conceive the admiration which was excited among the natives. Owing, however, to the abundance of good timber in all parts of the country immediately neighbouring to Wellington, the speculation of a saw-mill at this spot did not succeed. By a misfortune, too, the thatched building caught fire;

and though the machinery was preserved from serious injury, the enterprising proprietors underwent a severe loss of other property on the premises. Recently they have adapted the mill to the purpose of grinding flour as well as cutting timber; and it is to be hoped that the increasing cultivation of wheat among the natives, as well as that which will ere long be carried on by white settlers in this district, may speedily repay them for their praiseworthy outlay and perseverance against difficulties.

The native villages on the banks of this river are numerous, and the cultivations attached to them extensive. They are reckoned to contain a population of 3400 souls.

Thirty miles above the end of the clear navigation, or eighty-two miles from the sea by the tortuous course of the river, but only sixty miles in a straight line, is the Gorge, by which the Manawatu rushes through the mountain range, between that part of it called Tararua to the south, and that to the north called Ruahine.

East of Port Nicholson and of the Valley of the Hutt and its tributaries, lie two or three ranges of wooded hills which separate that district from the plain of the Wairarapa. Among these hills are several hollows of greater or less extent. In one of them, close at the back of Lowry Bay, fifteen sections have been laid out, and eleven chosen. This is called the Lowry Bay District. It is rather swampy at present, but when drained will doubtless be found of good quality. A moderately good road has been made to it over a ridge of hills from Lowry Bay, by the joint contributions of the Company and of some of the neighbouring settlers, as well as of some of the absentee proprietors of land in the vicinity.

The waters of this district and of the hills immediately surrounding it, flow off by a stream called Wainui-o-mata, to the sea between Baring Head and Cape Turakirai, east of the harbour's mouth. In the narrow valley of this stream, which runs parallel with the eastern

shore of Port Nicholson, and immediately behind the first range of hills which bounds the harbour in that direction, thirty-nine sections have been laid out, and thirty-four chosen.

Two or three other ranges of hills, varying in height, lie between this district and the plain of the Wairarapa, which may be reached by a foot-path across the hills, starting from Lowry Bay. This path is not thought practicable for sheep or cattle, which have as yet always been driven round by the sea-shore.

The following description of the Wairarapa district is transcribed, with some few emendations now necessary, from the *Cook's Strait Almanack* for 1846:—

“ The valley of the Wairarapa lies nearly north and south, and is about sixty miles long, and averages rather more than nine miles in width, containing about 400,000 acres; four-fifths of this extent is a dead level, and the remainder undulating land. Of the level country there appears to be about 80,000 acres of wood land, finely timbered with Totara, Matai, Miro, Kahikatea, Manuka,* &c., the soil of which is particularly good: about 200,000 acres consist of open land covered with grass, fern, anise, flax, and tohe-tohe;† the level land is intersected by several swamps, but most of them could be easily drained. The soil of the open land in the lower part of the valley is in general clayey and gravelly, but some of the plains are of a very good soil. The undulating land consists chiefly of grass or fern land. At the southern end of the valley are two lakes, covering an area of about 50,000 acres, but they are so shallow as to be comparatively useless: there is no entrance seaward, in consequence of a complete bar of sand; and they are surrounded by a tract of low swampy land. The bar, which is formed by the southerly winds, to the full force of which Palliser Bay lies entirely exposed, closes the lake during the summer months (generally from December to May) until the accumulated waters burst the barriers that confine them, and open a passage to the sea. The river Ruamahanga runs through the whole valley, and loses itself in the lakes; it is from six to nine chains wide; the channel of the river, until it leaves the lakes, is deep enough for a vessel of fifty tons, and whale-boats can ascend the river for twenty or thirty miles above the lake; after which it becomes a succession of shoals and falls, so much so that it is

* For descriptions of these indigenous forest-trees, the first four of which are generally indicative of a good soil, see a later part of this chapter, page 140.

† A large grass-like plant, eaten by horses and cattle. See p. 148.

only in times of freshets that canoes can reach further, and then they can be poled up to within a few miles of the head of the valley. The floods rise suddenly and considerably; the greatest rise which has yet been experienced is sixteen feet.

"The district may be divided into three parts, each possessing its distinct and peculiar characters: the lowest part, or that nearest the sea, and the western side of the lakes, is mostly swampy, and is covered during the winter months with water; the eastern side, on which the stations are formed, consists chiefly of grass land; the lower ground, near the river, consists of the wood land previously described. Beyond these, in what may be termed the valley of the Upper Wairarapa, (by far the larger division of the district,) there are magnificent grassy plains, intersected by belts of wood and watered by numerous streams, the soil of which is of the richest description. This district is easily connected with the plains of Hauriri, which, at a moderate estimate, comprise an area of 500 square miles of level grass land, from which there is an easy communication with the Manawatu district.

"The distance from Wellington to the ferry across the lake is about forty-one miles along the coast, which has hitherto been the only way of approach; but, as has been before described, at no distant period a somewhat shorter road will be formed through the Hutt district, and the valley of the Pakiritahi to Pai-tu-mokai, at the eastern foot of the Rimutaka range, near the north end of the lake.* This will eventually become the great northern road, and be the best route for communicating with Auckland, through the interior. After crossing a low range of hills at the head of the valley, the road would pass through the grassy plains of Hauriri, thence to the country on the eastern shore of Taupo, and over the Waikato plains to Auckland.

"The coast road, though rough, and in some places difficult, does not present any very serious obstacles in driving over cattle and sheep. The worst part of the journey is the passing the Muka Muka rocks,† but if care is taken to reach them half an hour before low water, by persons driving over sheep, (the time of high water at the Muka Muka rocks being about thirty-five minutes earlier than at Wellington,) no difficulty will be found in passing them. These rocks may be easily passed at half tide by persons not travelling with stock. At the end of this brief notice an account is given of the driving of Messrs. Tiffin and Northwood's sheep to their station, a distance of seventy-three miles from Wellington, which will be found useful to persons about to form sheep stations.

"The first station at Wairarapa was established by Messrs. Clifford and Vavasour, in the beginning of the year 1844, since which time the stations have gradually increased in number. The number of sheep and cattle stations in March, 1847, was fifteen. These receive their supplies from Wellington, but sufficient wheat is cul-

* See page 106.

† These are East of Cape Turakirae.

tivated at each station, as soon after its formation as the season permits, to supply those who have the care of it with flour; and a garden well stocked with vegetables is to be found at most of the stations. A yearly rent is paid to the natives by the owners of the different stations, averaging about twenty pounds a year each. The stations vary in size, and the owners of some of the larger stations pay more than twice the above amount as rent to the natives, according to the extent of land they occupy. The ferry across the lake is also in the hands of the natives, and is a source of much annoyance to the settlers, from the arbitrary and exorbitant charges usually exacted. Most of the stations are bounded on either side by streams, and are well watered, so that the facilities for washing the wool at sheep-shearing are very great. The shearing of the sheep usually commences about the middle of December. In New South Wales $2\frac{1}{2}$ lbs. is found to be the average weight of a fleece, but from the superiority of the food and climate in New Zealand, the wool is found to increase in weight and length of staple, and the average weight of a fine-wooled fleece may be correctly stated at from $3\frac{1}{2}$ lbs. to 4 lbs. But we may shortly hope for still greater improvements in the wool from the stations at Wairarapa, from the introduction, by Mr. Clifford, in 1846, of some of Lord Western's celebrated breed of pure Merino rams from England, which will increase not only the fineness of the wool and length of staple, but also the weight of carcase. Another peculiarity connected with this part of the subject deserves notice. In England during the winter, from different causes, and in New South Wales in the dry weather, from want of sufficient food, the Merino sheep receive a check, and a *joint* is formed in the wool which injures the staple; but in New Zealand, from the more equable climate and abundance of pasture, this peculiarity does not exist, and the sheep continue to thrive and the wool to grow all the year round. Another advantage is to be found in the absence of *burrs* in the New Zealand runs;* in New South Wales these are found to tear the wool, so as materially to injure the fleece and diminish the quantity of wool.

"The best time for lambing has not yet been ascertained. Stations have been formed at different times of the year, and the ewes brought down from New South Wales have been mostly in lamb. In the season 1845 the lambing commenced at some of the stations in the beginning of July, and continued until the end of November. It is thought that the beginning of October will be found the most favourable time, as the spring lambs will escape the wet weather and cold winds which prevail in the winter. The yearly increase from the average of the different stations in the season 1844 is stated to have been ninety per cent., and at one of the largest stations the increase has been found to be upwards of 100 per cent.

* In some parts of New Zealand there does exist a small *burr*, called *otiwai*; but this does not appear to be the case at Wairarapa.
—Ed. Handbook for N. Z.

"From the various description of land included in the sheep runs, it is difficult to state with accuracy the average number of sheep *per acre* which can be maintained on them in their present state; it is found that a great improvement speedily takes place, both in the quantity and quality of the pasture, after a station has been some time established; that wherever the fern grows it speedily disappears, and fine grass springs up in its place; so that these runs will in a few years be able to keep a much greater number of sheep than they could now support, from the superior quality and increased quantity of the food.

"The best time for forming a station is during the summer months, not later than the 1st of May. The sheep should be brought from Sydney *shorn*, and *not in lamb*. After they have been landed, and have in some degree recovered from the effects of the voyage, they should be put to the ram, so as to begin lambing by the 1st of October.

"During the winter months sheep should be brought from Sydney *unshorn*, to protect them from the wet and cold, of which after the voyage the Merino sheep are very susceptible; particularly after leaving the warm dry climate of New South Wales.

"The climate of the valley of the Wairarapa is very different to that of Wellington; being more inland, it is not so exposed to the wind, and is consequently warmer, with less rain during the winter months. The settlers there state that the winter of 1845 has resembled the month of May in England in point of climate and temperature.

"A dry road is in contemplation from the most northern station to Tekopi, on the eastern side of Palliser Bay, where there is an anchorage for small coasting vessels, which will enable the owners of the stations to send their wool to Wellington.

"Butter and cheese, the produce of the dairy stations at Wairarapa, are sent to Wellington, where they find a ready market.

"Notes of a Journey to Wairarapa with a Flock of Sheep."

"August 23, 1845.—Left Wellington with 762 ewes, all within six weeks of lambing, and reached Waiwetu; ferried them across without any accident.

"24.—Left Waiwetu, crossed the hill at Lowry Bay, (which we have since found to be the worst part of the driving,) reached Okiwi at night. Several rocky points to be passed, which can only be done by a flock of sheep at low water.

"25.—Rested at Okiwi; one ewe died through eating Tutu.*

"26.—Travelled from Okiwi to Parangarau; after passing Okiwi there is one point to go round at low water, and then the road takes up a bad gully to the summit of the hills, and after four or five miles, descends into Fitzroy Bay. When the salt-water lake is open at the mouth it would be hazardous to cross sheep, as the current is very strong, although the channel is but narrow.

* *Coriaria sarmentosa*, a poisonous plant. See p. 148.

"27.—Travelled from Parangarau to Orongorongo, three miles only; crossed the Wainui-o-mata and Orongorongo* very easily, there being but little water: these rivers are unfordable after much rain. Rested the sheep for half a day.

"29.—Proceeded to Waimarara, the road very rough and stony.

"29.—Reached Mukamukanui. One bad cliff to ascend, and much rough rocky road.

"30.—Passed 450 sheep round the Mukamuka rocks; at one of the points a gap has been cut, but as it is seven or eight feet above the level of the beach, it is necessary to pile up the stones for them to ascend by; we passed with the greatest ease and reached Waripapa.

"31.—Passed the remainder round the rocks, and with similar ease.

"September 1.—Started from Waripapa, ferried the sheep across the lake; the bar being open, halted at Turanganui.

"2.—Travelled from Turanganui to Tauanui.

"3.—From Tauanui to Tuitarata some indifferent driving, owing to the road lying through some high fern and two belts of bush.

"4.—From Tuitarata to Warekaka, $5\frac{1}{2}$ miles of very good driving.

"5.—From Warekaka to Huangarua, nine miles of open grass land.

"6.—Reached Ahiaruhe with 758 sheep, two having died, one left behind, being maimed, and one missing.

" ITINERARY TO WAIRARAPA.

" From Pipitea to Waiwetu	7	miles.
" Waiwetu to Okiwi	6	"
" Okiwi to Parangarau	$7\frac{1}{2}$	"
" Parangarau to Orongorongo	$3\frac{1}{4}$	"
" Orongorongo to Waimarara	5	"
" Waimarara to Mukamuka rocks.....	5	"
" Mukamuka rocks to commencement of Wairarapa valley.....	2	"
" Ferry across lake to pa Pokokirikiri.....	6	"
" Pokokirikiri to 'Traveller's Rest,' at Tu- ranganui, or to Mr. Kelly's station.....	$2\frac{1}{2}$	"
" 'Traveller's Rest' to Tauanui (Messrs. Charlton and Co.)	3	"
" Tauanui to Tuitarata (Mr. M'Master)...	$4\frac{1}{2}$	"
" Tuitarata to Warekaka, (Messrs. Clifford and Vavasour).....	$5\frac{1}{2}$	"
" Warekaka to Kopungarara, Mr. Bidwill†	5	"
" Warekaka to Huangarua, Capt. Smith...	9	"
" Huangarua to Ahiaruhe (Messrs. North- wood and Tiffin)	8	"
" Ahiaruhe to head of valley, about	18	"

* These two rivers are close together. Five sections have been laid out and selected at the mouth of the latter.

† This station does not lie in the direct road up the valley.

The following is a very accurate Statistical Table, showing the Population, Amount of Stock, &c., in the District of Wairarapa, at the commencement of March, 1847.

NAMES OF STATIONS.	PROPRIETORS.					Men.	Women.	Children.	Horses.	Cattle.	Sheep.	Acres in Cultivation.	Annual rent paid to Natives.
Ahiaruhe and Parinuiokaka .	Tiffin and Northwood . . .	7	2	1	4	9	2750	5	£ 48				
Huangaroa	Captain Smith	8	2	8	4	90	2000	5	24				
Hakeke	Morrison	2	2	2	..	100	..	..	16		
Kopungarara	C. R. Bidwill	4	..	..	46	195	420	4	32		
Warekaka	Clifford and Weld	7	..	..	2	13	3200	4	36		
Otaraea	Gillies	7	2	3	3	60	..	..	12		
Tuiterata	McMaster	2	3	1	4	120	1	1	12				
Tauanui	Allom	2	..	..	1	180	274	1	25		
Turanganui (north side) . .	Kelly	4	..	..	1	60	..	..	12
Do (south side)	Williamson and Drummond . .	4	1	..	5	370	..	3	12				
Whangai Moana	Russell and Wilson	3	..	..	3	2	1000	2	12		
Waterangi	Fitzherbert and Pharazyn . .	2	2	4	..	12	966	..	12				
Kawa-Kawa	T. P. Russell	2	..	..	..	62	800	..	24	
Kiriwai	Cameron	2	..	..	..	62	..	..	24
Manganoo (on the east coast)	Barton	3	..	..	..	30	1600	..	24	
Totals . .													£325

* * * There are about eight or nine mules at the different stations. Several natives are employed as shepherds, &c., at regular wages. There are a number of goats, of which no return is made.

Even so soon as December 28, 1847, notwithstanding the large consumption of meat by the troops and road-parties, and the drafting of several large flocks to newly-formed stations on the Middle Island, these numbers were augmented considerably, whether by importations or natural increase; for an Official statistical return, made by Mr. Macarthy, the Collector of Customs at Wellington, under that date, states that there were at Wairarapa alone, 79 horses, 1607 head of cattle, 100 goats, and 15,011 sheep.

Similar stations to those formed in the Wairarapa have lately been established by squatters from Wellington, at Kaikoura, a fine district of pastoral country, about thirty miles south of Cape Campbell, on the eastern side of the Middle Island. Mr. Macarthy's return states that at the end of 1847 there were, at different stations on the Middle Island, belonging to Wellington settlers, 115 horses, 760 head of cattle, and 12,000 sheep.

Kapiti, or Entry Island, lies about four miles from the coast, near the mouth of the Waikanae river. It is about eight or ten miles in length, by two or three miles in breadth. With the exception of a few small patches of land near the water's edge—the largest of which is at Long Point, at the north-east end of the island—Kapiti consists of steep hills, almost entirely covered with forest. One high peak, generally capped with clouds in stormy weather, rises nearly in the centre of the island, and shoots out numerous ridges, like claws, to the outer edge. These ridges vary in steepness, and in the extent of table-land on their summits; and the intervening spaces are either precipitous gullies, or valleys of easier slope, each furnished with a rill of pure water. Extensive patches have been cleared of wood by the natives, at remote periods, and a few native slaves work at the present time in some choice places, and reside during the season of cultivation in groups of huts perched in picturesque spots among the

high grounds. Wherever the land has been cleared, a very rich natural pasturage has sprung up among the bleached trunks of the dead trees, chiefly consisting of timothy-grass and yellow trefoil.

About a hundred head of wild cattle, descended from two or three couple which were landed here from Sydney some years ago, roam about the island, and have contributed to improve the growth and luxuriance of this natural herbage. Two or three streams on Kapiti would be available for mill purposes.

Close to the island of Kapiti, and in-shore of its southern extremity, lie three rocky islets, respectively called Evans's, Hiko's, and Mayhew's Islands. These islets, and some adjoining reefs of rock, afford anchorage for a limited number of ships. The inner anchorage especially, between the islets, is remarkably secure; but the outer one, off Evans's Island, is more convenient for large ships, because it affords greater facility for getting under way.

A whaling-station is established at the north-east end of the principal island.

Mana, or Table Island, is about two miles long, by half a mile broad. A sheep station was established here as early as 1838, and there are still some sheep and cattle on the island. With the exception of a valley on the eastern or landward side, the whole island forms an elevated table-land, covered with good pasturage for sheep. Previous to the recent native rebellion, Rangihaeata resided in a village in this valley. A whaling-station, employing two boats and seventeen men, is also established on the mainland, opposite Mana.

Several other whaling-stations also exist, connected with the port, though not all of them within what has been described as the district, of Wellington. Some of these are situated at various points on the east coast of the Middle Island, between Queen Charlotte's Sound and Foveaux's Strait; two at New Plymouth; and a

large number at various places on the east coast of the North Island, between Cape Palliser and East Cape. They are fitted out for the capture of the black or “right” whale,* which approaches the shores of New Zealand during the calving season, from May to October, inclusive; but occasionally sperm† or hump-back‡ whales also near the land sufficiently to be taken by the shore-parties.§

The Climate of the Wellington district is a very fair average specimen of that of New Zealand generally, the latitude of the Town of Wellington being about 41° south, or as nearly as possible half-way between the extreme northern and southern extremities of the group in 34° and 48° south. That portion of the district, however, which immediately adjoins on the narrowest part of Cook’s Strait, is subject to a large share of the strong winds, which draw both ways through that passage.

The following is an account of the weather kept at Judge Chapman’s residence at Karori, 591 feet above the level of the sea, and about two miles west of the centre of the town of Wellington, during the six winter months of 1845. This situation is subject to a colder temperature in winter, but is better sheltered from all winds, than the town.

Kind of Day.	April	May	June	July	Aug.	Sept.	Six months.
Fine and sunny .	21	19	16	18	18	21	113
Cloudy, but fair .	4	2	3	1	1	0	11
Showery	5	4	6	8	12	8	43
Rainy	0	6	5	4	0	1	16
	30	31	30	31	31	30	183
Gales of wind . .	0	6	2	2	3	4	17
Night frosts . . .	4	4	3	5	3	3	22

* *Balæna Antipodum.*

† *Physeter Macrocephalus.*

‡ *Balæna Gibbosa.*

§ For a statistical account of these whaling parties, see the end of this chapter.

Lightning and thunder are very unusual in the neighbourhood of Wellington, even in summer; during the six months above mentioned it only occurred three times, once accompanied by hail.

The *night frosts* in the above table are such only as to cover the ground with hoar until 8 or 9 A.M. On one morning the glass was observed at 34° Fahrenheit at 8 A.M., and on several other mornings at 36°. But in lower situations even this slight degree of cold is exceedingly rare; and it never occurs with sufficient severity to check vegetation anywhere within the district. During these six months at Karori the temperature during the day was generally mild; the usual range of thermometer being from 45° to 56°.

What are marked as "gales" should rather be called fresh breezes. There is comparatively little wind in winter, but the spring, and until after Christmas, is windy.

"Rainy" means continued rain, for half the day and more. "Showery" varies from a slight shower to alternate rain and fair for the whole day. In May, July, August, and September, there was often rain in the night, after fine and showery days.

Generally speaking, the seasons may be said to be retarded as well as reversed from those of England.

That is, continued fine weather cannot be relied on until after the summer solstice, nor does bad weather set in until about the end of June. From September until Christmas may be called growing weather; from January to March, steady ripening weather. As far as the experience of nearly six years extends, sufficient moisture for the growth of crops and vegetables may always be relied on, and bad harvest weather is unknown. It is impossible to conceive a state of the seasons more favourable to agriculture.

A very fair conception may be formed of the climate of Wellington and its neighbourhood, from the following "Calendar of Garden Work," published in the

Cook's Strait Almanack for 1848, and founded on seven years' experience. It is proper to observe that these directions are chiefly intended for gardens in the vicinity of Wellington, but may be easily adapted according to circumstances to other situations in the Settlements in Cook's Strait.

"JANUARY.—*Flower Garden*: Lay picotees, plant out seedling carnations and geraniums, plant geranium cuttings; clean the beds from weeds, and save such flower seeds as are ripe. As this month is generally dry, the plants will require frequent watering. — *Kitchen Garden*: Sow peas, broad beans, cauliflowers, French beans, carrots, and turnips; plant out brocoli plants, plant potatoes for second crop; prepare ridges for celery and plant out the young plants. Cucumbers and melons grown in a frame will be fit for cutting this month. Clean strawberry beds from weeds, gather green tomatas for preserving. — *Orchard*: Fruit trees should receive their summer pruning this month, and espaliers be tied in. Fruit stocks may be budded towards the latter end of this month, and during the following three months. Budding appears to answer better in New Zealand than grafting. Cherries, raspberries, currants, and gooseberries are ripe, and grapes are set in this month.

"FEBRUARY.—*Flower Garden*: The roots of polyanthuses, primroses, and cowslips may be divided and planted out in the latter part of this month. Continue to clean the beds from weeds, and save such seeds as are ripe. — *Kitchen Garden*: Plant out cabbages, cauliflowers, and celery; plant potatoes, and earth up those planted the last month; sow peas, turnip, cauliflower, cabbage, carrot, parsnip, beet root, radish, and lettuce seed. Cucumbers grown in the open air may be cut in this and the following two months. Gather green tomatas for preserving, and ripe tomatas for making sauce. Save such seeds as are ripe. Take up potato onions. — *Orchard*: Plums and early apples are ripe in this month. The pruning and training of fruit trees may be continued this month.

"MARCH.—*Flower Garden*: Collect seeds. Ixias, tulips, hyacinths, and other bulbs that have done flowering may be taken out of the ground, but they thrive better if suffered to remain in the ground all the year round. — *Kitchen Garden*: Sow spinach and radishes, lettuce, cabbage, and Cape brocoli. Thin out turnips and carrots, and mould up potatoes. Collect seeds. Begin to earth up the first planted celery, and plant out some more, to come in later. The bulbs of onions should be taken up as soon as the leaves are withered and stored for winter use. Cut cucumbers, gather ripe tomatas. — *Orchard*: The operations of budding and pruning may be continued during this month. Apples, pears, figs, peaches, and nectarines may be gathered.

"**APRIL.**—*Flower Garden*: Plant cuttings of roses, geraniums, pinks, pansies, and other flowers. — *Kitchen Garden*: Lettuces, cabbages, and Cape brocoli may be planted out. Asparagus seed may be saved, and the plants which had been allowed to grow during the summer cut down. Gather ripe tomatas, and take up onions. Plant out strawberry plants in this and the following month. — *Orchard*: The same as last month. Stop the leading shoots of vines. Grapes are ripe towards the end of this month.

"**MAY.**—*Flower Garden*: The bulbs and tuberous-rooted flowers which have flowered later in the year may be taken up. Dahlias may also be taken up and stored for the winter in a dry place. — *Kitchen Garden*: Plant out cabbages and cauliflowers, earth up celery, manure and make up asparagus beds, and plant out asparagus plants to form new beds; plant out strawberry plants. — *Orchard*: Gather grapes.

"**JUNE.**—*Flower Garden*: Dig up flower borders. — *Kitchen Garden*: Plant potato onions, plant out sea-kale, transplant artichokes and chardoons. Earth up celery, transplant lettuces. — *Orchard*: Dig up the earth round fruit trees. This and the following two months are the best for transplanting and pruning fruit trees, and also for pruning and transplanting gooseberry and currant trees. Transplant deciduous trees.

"**JULY.**—*Flower Garden*: Prepare flower borders; plant out bulbs taken up in March. Prune rose trees, geraniums, &c., and plant cuttings. — *Kitchen Garden*: Earth up celery, sow peas, lettuces, cabbages, carrots, broad beans, and onions. Plant out rhubarb. Peas were gathered in this month and the last in the year 1847. — *Orchard*: Transplant such trees as require removal; plant out stocks for grafting and budding into nursery beds; the quince and white thorn are found to answer very well for pear stocks. Plant out vines, filberts, raspberries, gooseberry and currant trees, and vine, gooseberry, and currant cuttings. As far as our present experience extends, the gooseberry and black currant bear very well; the red and white currant also, in sheltered situations, make a good deal of wood, and bear well. The winter pruning of fruit trees and vines may be performed in this and the following month. Plant out thorns for hedges in this month.

"**AUGUST.**—*Flower Garden*: Dig flower borders, and towards the end of the month sow all kinds of hardy annuals. Carefully look for and destroy all slugs, which are likely to prove troublesome. The gardens in New Zealand appear to be more free from insects than those in England. Slugs and caterpillars abound, but there are no insects on the fruit trees, except the American blight, which seems to have been imported; neither is the green fly found on the rose trees, nor have any snails been found in New Zealand. — *Kitchen Garden*.—Sow the common sorts of vegetables, fork over

asparagus beds, and begin to make up melon and cucumber beds; cover sea-kale for blanching. — *Orchard*: The operations of the previous month may be continued during the greater part of this month. Sow apple and pear pips, and plant fruit stones for stocks. Towards the end of this month the apricot, peach, and nectarine trees begin to blossom.

“**SEPTEMBER.**—*Flower Garden*: Sow all kinds of flower seeds, transplant roses, and different flowering shrubs and plants, and plant out cuttings; carefully keep down weeds. Sow balsam and China aster seed in pots in frames. Plant out dahlia roots. — *Kitchen Garden*: Sow turnips, carrots, peas, onions, lettuce, broad beans, spinach, cabbage, and celery seed, and plant early potatoes. Commence cutting sea kale, and asparagus, which continues in season to the end of November. Earth up early peas, plant out lettuces, sow tomata, cucumber, and melon seeds in hot beds. In this month the gooseberry and currant trees begin to blossom. — *Orchard*: Train and prune espaliers. Grafting may be performed during this month, but budding is more to be depended upon, as, owing to the winds which prevail, the clay hardens, and the graft in many instances perishes. The pear, cherry, filbert, and plum trees blossom in this month.

“**OCTOBER.**—*Flower Garden*: Carefully keep down weeds, and sow tender annuals. Towards the end of the month plant out such annuals as are large enough for removal. During this month the garden daisy, primrose, polyanthus, peony, and cowslip, and also towards the end of the month, such bulbs as have been left in the ground, or were planted in July, flower. — *Kitchen Garden*: Plant potatoes, transplant cauliflowers, cabbages, and lettuces; sow in frames cucumbers, melons, vegetable marrow and tomata seed, sow gourds and pumpkins; continue to sow successional crops of peas, and stick those earthed up in the previous month. French beans may be sown not earlier than the middle of this month. — *Orchard*: The peach, nectarine, and other wall fruit trees may be pruned and trained in this month: the fruit on these trees, and on the cherry, pear, gooseberry, and currant trees will be fully formed. The apple trees begin to blossom, and the vines to send forth vigorous shoots and to show for fruit.

“**NOVEMBER.**—*Flower Garden*: Towards the middle of this month plant out such tender annuals as have been raised in the frame; keep down the weeds, and carefully destroy the slugs and caterpillars, which are found to be very troublesome. In this month the roses begin to bloom, and continue in full beauty to the end of December. The picotees, pinks, honeysuckles, and other flowers, are in perfection in this and the succeeding month. — *Kitchen Garden*: Transplant cabbages and cauliflowers, sow French beans, plant out tomatas, capsicums, melons, and cucumbers in rich earth,

and in warm situations. Towards the end of the month strawberries are ripe. — *Orchard*: During this month the fruit on the apple trees will be fully set, and the vines will be in full flower. The vines will require attention in stopping the fruiting shoots, and in carefully training the shoots so that they may not be broken by the wind.

“**DECEMBER.**—*Flower Garden*: The different flowers, both annual and perennial, are in full perfection. Towards the end of the month the weather begins to be rather dry. — *Kitchen Garden*: Prick out celery, clean strawberry beds from weeds, plant out cauliflower and cabbage plants. Gooseberries and currants are ripe in this month. Frame cucumbers will be fit to cut. — *Orchard*: Cherries are ripe, and the vines are in full flower this month.”

We may compare with this the following Meteorological Tables. The first is taken from the register kept at Wellington, by Dr. Dieffenbach, the Company's naturalist, from February, 1841, to January, 1842. These observations were made daily at 8 A.M. and 5 P.M. Those on temperature were not made with the self-registering thermometer, and therefore do not comprise the greatest degree of heat or cold. Dr. Dieffenbach also premises that, according to the testimony of the oldest settlers, the year in which these observations were made was remarkable for an unusual quantity of wet. The second and third are Meteorological Registers for 1846 and 1847, kept at Judge Chapman's residence at Karori.

I. Meteorological Register for 1841, kept at Wellington, by Dr. Dieffenbach.

Month. Corresponding to our	Greatest Heat.	Lowest Heat.	Mean of the Month.	Daily average Range.	Lowest Barometer.	Highest Barometer.	Mean Pressure of the Air.	Quantity of Rain in Inches.	Greatest Quantity of Rain in 24 Hours.	Number of Rainy Days.	Winds.	
											N. & N.W. S. & S.E.	Days.
1841.												Days.
February	76	63	64.8	4	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	8
March...	73	57	62.5	3.5	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	18
April ...	70	43	63.5	0.7	...	...	...	1.86	.75	0	...	13
May ...	65	39	51.8	5.3	29.605	30.522	30.028	3.71	1.24	11	...	17
June ...	68	39	51.3	5.7	29.031	30.424	28.202	4.12	1.41	18	...	13
July.....	57	38	48.7	5.7	29.292	30.450	29.090	3.84	.91	17	...	19
August	60	37	51.2	4.6	29.324	30.550	29.104	4.56	1.22	14	...	19
September	63	43	53.5	4.4	29.350	30.484	29.783	4.51	2.25	14	...	17
October	66	45.5	59.2	4.3	29.508	30.312	29.867	2.31	.36	16	...	23
November	69.5	53	60.5	3.3	29.316	30.472	29.800	2.95	.78	14	...	19
December	69.5	54	64.7	3.2	29.030	30.376	30.318	5.47	.60	15	...	20
1842.												
January	70.5	57	66.4	4.9	29.030	30.376	30.318	1.16	.60	5	...	10
July	70.5	57	66.4	4.9	29.030	30.376	30.318	1.16	.60	5	...	20

Mean annual temperature, 58.2°.

Mean annual range, 4.6°.

Quantity of rain in ten months, 34.40 inches.

Number of rainy days in ten months, 133.

Number of days on which the wind was from the N. or N.W., 196 days.

from the S. or S.E., 141 days.

Ditto ditto

II. Meteorological Register for 1846, kept at the residence of Judge Chapman, Karori, 591 feet above the sea.

MONTHS.	THERMOMETER.				WINDS.	WEATHER.							
	Lowest at 9 a.m.	Mean at 9 a.m.	Mean at 2 p.m.	Highest at 2 p.m.		Days Fine.	Days Rain.	Cloudy.	Showery.	Gales.	Hoar Frost at 9 a.m.	Thun- der.	Shocks of Earth- quakes.
January	52°	58°·3	63°·3	72°	With very little variation, it blows from the N.W. or S.E. throughout the year —the N.W. perhaps prevailing.	16	2	3	10	6	..	2	3
February....	50	60	66·25	78		22	..	1	5	4	..	2	1
March.	52	65	64·3	73		20	..	4	7	4	..	3	..
April	50	56·7	62·8	75		13	8	2	7	9	..	1	2
May	34	50	58	68		12	10	4	5	3	3	2	..
June	36	45·5	52	68		19	5	1	5	3	4	..	1
July	31	42·3	50·8	58		16	4	1	10	4	6	2	3
August	34	45·5	53·3	66		14	8	1	8	..	4	..	1
September ..	42	48	56	63		17	3	..	10	5	2	..	1
October	42	53·5	60	74		20	5	1	5	4	..	..	2
November ..	51	54·7	62·3	76		22	1	2	5	1	..	..	10
December ..	54	60	67	76		22	..	4	5	6	..	1	24
Whole year	31	53·3	59·8	78	213	46	24	82	49	19	13	24	

REMARKS.—Nine A.M. is chosen, because it coincides with the average mean temperature of the day; 53°·3 is therefore about the mean of the year. During June, the temperature was taken on Wellington Terrace, Wellington. It would probably have been 3° or 4° lower at Karori at nine A.M., but about the same at two P.M.

NOTE.—The winter of 1845 was remarkably fine, while the summer of 1845 was unusually wet. This year has exhibited the converse—the winter was wet and seasonable, while the summer has been remarkably fine, with, however, a great want of rain. The wells in the town are for the most part dry, and the small streams afford but a scanty supply; the general humidity of the atmosphere, however, especially during the night, and in the vicinity of the Bush, prevents drought. The wheat, though rather short in the straw, as might have been anticipated, is only slightly deficient in the ear.

III. Meteorological Register for 1847, kept at the residence of Judge Chapman, Karori.

MONTHS.	THERMOMETER.				WEATHER.							Shocks of Earth- quakes.
	Lowest at 9 a.m.	Mean at 9 a.m.	Mean at 2 p.m.	Highest at 2 p.m.	Fine.	Cloudy.	Showery	Rainy.	Gales.	Night Frosts.	Thun- der.	
January . . .	52°	61°·5	67°·8	80	19	4	6	2	7	..	1	..
February . . .	54	60·9	68·4	78	10	1	4	3	4	..	2	2
March	54	59	66	78	17	1	11	2	5	..	1	1
April	44	52·5	60·9	69	20	6	8	2	5	..	..	1
May	40	50	54·3	64	15	1	7	8	6	1	..	..
June	34	47·5	54	58	17	2	3	8	3	3	..	1
July	40	47·1	51·5	57	14	2	9	6	5	3	1	1
August	40	46·4	54	62	21	0	6	4	6	6	..	2
September . .	38	47·4	53·5	64	19	2	5	4	11	3	..	2
October	42	52·3	58·5	68	20	2	5	4	10	1	..	3
November . . .	44	57·2	60·8	68	17	2	9	2	9	..	1	1
December . . .	45	64	67·2	80	23	3	3	2	6	..	..	2
Whole year	34	53·8	59·7	80	222	26	26	47	77	17	6	16

NOTE.—The temperature is that during the day. The thermometer is in the shade; aspect S.E., exposed to a free current of air. The fine sunny days this year have exceeded those in 1846, but the wind has been greater. Besides strong winds, which just stopped short of being gales, we have had no less than thirty-six gales in four months; whereas last year we had only sixteen in the same time. But for eight *shocks* in one day last year, the numbers would have been equal. The only frosts marked are such as show at nine A.M.: a self-registering thermometer would, no doubt, have indicated a few more.

The Soil varies much in different parts of the district of Wellington.

On the banks of all the rivers which flow through the hilly country, the soil bears the richest alluvial character; and in some valleys, such as that of the Hutt, the pure black or brown sandy loam lies in so thick a stratum as to appear inexhaustible. The valleys of the three principal streams which flow into Porirua harbour also partake of this character; as well as many others of less considerable extent: and soil of the same description is more widely spread over a great portion of the level expanse of country already described as watered by so many streams, between the western base of the dividing range and Cook's Strait. In these situations, the luxuriant forest is an unfailing sign of the soil on which it grows.

The geological structure of the hills, almost throughout the district, is argillaceous schist, interrupted, especially on the western side of Port Nicholson, by bulky and irregular dikes of red, black, and greenish Lydian stone. Sometimes, as on the higher ranges of the Tararua Mountains, the clay is more quartzose and granular, and thus forms a good stone for building purposes. Other trappean rocks are also found, about twenty miles up the valley of the Hutt.

On the hills so formed, a coating of rich decayed vegetable matter forms a thin surface so long as the forest remains standing, and even long enough for a crop or two afterwards; but the weather soon washes this upper soil from the steepest places when clear of wood, and leaves a cold clay, decomposed from the rock, only fit for the growth of pasturage. Constant evidence of this course of events may be seen in the abandoned cultivations of the natives on the hill-sides.

Even on such table lands, or elevated valleys, as the Karori, the rich soil formed from the long accumulation of vegetable matter, when once cleared of the forest, is not renovated by freshets like that of the

lower valleys, and is therefore more liable to exhaustion. But the great remedy for this natural event is an improved system of agriculture, by which the application of manures and a due rotation of crops shall provide against any exhaustion of the productive qualities of the soil before it can occur.

The climate has a very sensible influence on the productiveness of the soil; for even the cold clayey earths above alluded to, which are found at a very trifling depth all over the hilly and undulating portions of the district, become extremely productive after having been well turned over and exposed for some months to the action of the atmosphere. All along the road between Wellington and the valley of the Kenepuru, ground of this latter nature is cultivated very beneficially.

In other portions of the district, the great influence of the climate on the productiveness of inferior soils is very apparent. In the comparatively sandy belt of land which, varying in breadth from a few hundred yards to three or four miles, skirts the sea-shore between the Bluffs at Paripari and the north-western extremity of the district, potatoes as well as other vegetables are grown with great success by the natives. In the immediate vicinity of Waikanae and several of the neighbouring native villages, the traveller is often surprised to find that even the careless agriculture of the natives can reap such excellent crops from what appear to be mere sand-hills; and it seems difficult to explain the fact otherwise than as the effect of the genial climate, which is better, perhaps, than any other in the world, calculated to encourage and promote the vigorous and healthy growth of animal as well as vegetable life.

In many level parts of the district, fens or marshes have been formed, in consequence of there being no outlet for the surface water; but these almost invariably lie at a sufficient elevation to be capable of drainage; and after that operation, these tracts of land will

certainly be most available for cultivation, on account of the richness of their soil. Much of this kind of country has been hastily called "swamp;" and has thus been associated in the minds of persons in this country with tracts of irreclaimable land, bearing a similar designation in America and other countries. The largest extent of so-called "swampy" country within the district, is situated in the level tract on either bank of the river Manawatu.

The natural productions of the district may be divided into the three classes of Vegetable, Animal, and Mineral: and under the two first of these classes, the indigenous productions may be distinguished from those which have been introduced at various periods by visitors and Colonists. But the want of space will prevent more than a notice of those productions only, of either kind, which stand pre-eminent in their usefulness and value to the intending Colonist.

I.—VEGETABLE PRODUCTIONS.

Indigenous.

The indigenous timber of New Zealand grows to a towering height, and in a perfection equalled by that of few other countries. The extensive forests within the district of Wellington offer an inexhaustible supply for the wants of many generations, for ship-building, as well as for other purposes.

The most common trees of the forests, and those most available for ordinary purposes, are the first three on this list.

1. Kahikatea, (*Dacrydium excelsum*.) This tree flourishes most in low, swampy, or alluvial soils. It grows to a great height, having a trunk branchless for seventy or eighty feet, and then a head rising to a point. Its leaves are sharp and prickly, much like those of the yew, but rather longer and narrower; and it bears a small red berry, eaten by the natives. It is commonly called the *white pine*; and its wood is of much the same character in all the central and southern part of New Zealand. In the northern part of the islands, however, it degenerates into a soft, spongy, and useless wood.

2. Mai, or Matai, (*Dacrydium matai*, or *taxifolium*.) This tree very much resembles the preceding one in all its qualities. The leaves are smaller, and the wood of rather superior quality, being also generally of a yellowish colour.

3. Rimu, (*Dacrydium cupressinum*.) This beautiful tree comes to its greatest perfection in shaded woods and in moist rich soil. It often attains a considerable size, but its branches are more spreading and begin at a less height from the ground than those of the two former trees. Its foliage is remarkably graceful and elegant. The leaves are only small prickles, running up a long stem, from which, towards the top, branch out several other stems, whose united weight causes the main stem to hang like the branches of the weeping willow, or a cluster of ostrich feathers; and the beauty is heightened by the liveliness of the colour with which it is decorated, in comparison with the sombre hue of most of the other evergreens. The wood inclines to a red colour, and is equally durable with the two former, but rather more difficult to work, from its greater hardness, and a disposition to brittleness.

The following trees, although not so common as the three first, are still found in abundance throughout the district.

4. Totara, (*Podocarpus totara*.) This tree grows to a large size, especially in the Hutt, Porirua, and Karori districts. Its foliage resembles that of the yew, and forms a thick handsome crown at the top of the tree. The wood is of a red colour, splits freely, is very hard, but easy to work. It is renowned for its durability, especially under exposure to the vicissitudes of the weather. It is therefore much used by the natives for the lower part of their canoes, which is always formed from a single trunk; and also by the Colonists for out-of-door purposes, such as posts and rails in fencing, &c. The knotted roots of the large trees furnish a highly ornamental wood for veneering furniture or panneling, which equals in beauty the bird's eye maple.

5. Mairi, (*Podocarpus macronata*.) This is also one of the largest trees of the forest. It produces a close-grained, durable wood, of a dark colour, which planes up smoothly, and receives a high polish. It has a spiral leaf, long and narrow, of a pale bright green. The wood is sometimes used for furniture, but its weight and disposition to brittleness are rather unfavourable to this use of it.

6. Tawa, (*Laurus tawa*.) This tree abounds all over the district, and especially in the same situations as the totara. The wood is light, and splits very freely; it is therefore much used for fencing, and for roofing shingles. It is, however, of too small size for other purposes, and is, moreover, not very durable. It bears a damson-

like berry, which is the favourite food of the pigeons. The outside pulp of the berry has a strong taste of turpentine, and covers a double kernel like that of an acorn, on which the wild hogs feed after the berries have dried on the ground.

7. Rewarewa, (*Knightia excelsa*.) This tree is found in dry forests, and where the soil is loose and gravelly in its texture. It is a tall, straight-growing tree, with long, pale, green leaves, rough and jagged like a saw at the edges. Its flower, of a dark purple, resembles in shape that of the honeysuckle, and the tree in consequence is popularly so called. The wood is beautifully variegated, being mottled or streaked with dark and light brown. It splits freely, and is therefore useful for fencing; but useless for shingles, from its liability to warp in the sun. It is highly ornamental for the purposes of furniture, but never grows to more than moderate dimensions.

8. Miro, (*Podocarpus ferruginea*.) This tree grows to a considerable size in the central and southern parts of New Zealand. The leaf is like that of the fir-tree; the bark smooth, like that of an ash. It produces a fine red berry. The wood is smooth, dark, close-grained, and very durable.

9. Tawai, (*Lciospermum racemosum*.) This tree has a rough, dark-brown bark, and a small round leaf, in shape like that of an elm. The wood is particularly well adapted for ship-building, and for the staves of barrels, and is commonly called "black birch" by the sailors and other Europeans acquainted with it. Its growth is generally considered indicative of an inferior soil. The bark is used to great advantage in the process of tanning.

10. Rata, (*Metrosideros robusta*.) There are several varieties of this tree; one grows at first as a parasite, creeping in numerous stems, like ropes, up the trunks of the other forest trees, gradually enclosing them till they perish, and then uniting to form a noble tree taller than that which it has destroyed, with an enormous trunk, but hollow within. The leaf and the flower resemble those of the myrtle, but the flower is of a deep crimson colour with golden stamina. In December and January, these giants of the forest give the hill-sides a fairy-like appearance, from the profusion of this beautiful blossom. The branches are gnarled like those of the oak; and the trunk also, from its formation, is a series of strange contortions; so that the wood, being also heavy, close-grained, and very durable, is most valuable to the ship-builder for knees and timbers of all shapes and sizes.

11. Hinau, (*Elæocarpus hinau*.) The leaves of this tree are spiral, and of a bright-green colour. The bark is very rough, but most valuable, from producing a deep black dye, which is used by the natives to colour their flaxen mats. The bark is pounded and thrown into water, and the article to be dyed is immersed in the infusion. The natives, however, generally prepare the infusion in

an iron vessel, or mix it with water or mud from a ferruginous spring: so that it will probably be found to require some preparation of iron in order to produce the most advantageous results. The trunk and main branches of the tree are generally studded with large knotty excrescences. These furnish an exceedingly handsome furniture-wood, almost resembling yellow marble when worked up and highly polished.

12. Titoki, (*name not known*.) This tree is also mentioned here, because it bears in great abundance berries from the inner kernel of which the natives extract a very fine oil, samples of which have been pronounced in England as peculiarly suited to the purposes of the watch-maker. The kernel is black, and covered by a red pulpos fruit like the raspberry in appearance, as well as by an outer husk, which splits open when the fruit is ripe and the nut fit to gather.

13. Kahikatoa, or Manuka, (*Leptospermum Scoparium*.) A tree of stunted growth, flourishing in clayey barren soils, and producing a hard red wood. It seldom exceeds eighteen inches in diameter, and is seen in many parts of New Zealand as a very small shrub, covering large tracts of clayey ground on which no other plant or shrub will grow. It produces a hard red wood, of which the natives make their paddles, and the Colonists handles for their axes. The leaf and the white blossom resemble those of the tea-plant, and an agreeable balsamic beverage is made by boiling the leaves in water, so that it is commonly called the "tea-tree." The flower exhales a very fragrant perfume, which spreads itself to a long distance.

14. Ake-ake, (*Metrosideros buxifolia*.) This is a variety of the Rata, No. 10. It is often called the *Lignum vitae* of New Zealand, and resembles that wood in hardness, weight, and colour. It seldom exceeds six inches to a foot in diameter; and is used by the natives for their weapons of war.

15. Tanekaha, (*Phyllocladus trichomanoides*.) This tree is not very common in the central and southern parts of New Zealand; but deserves notice as affording a dull red or bright brown dye, which is thus obtained by the natives from the bark: The bark is pounded, and then placed in a vessel of cold water, into which hot stones are placed until the water boils. After the bark has been boiled for some hours, the decoction becomes of a red colour; it is then left to cool, strained, and ready for use. This tree is abundant in the northern part of the North Island, where it grows straight and tapering, occasionally attaining the height of sixty feet, but seldom exceeding the diameter of three feet. It is there considered a close-grained valuable wood, and sought after for the decks of vessels, and the posts and floors of verandas, being little affected by wet.

16. Pukatea, (*Laurus pukatea*.) This is a very common tree, growing generally in low, marshy situations, with huge mis-shapen

stem, and roots far out of the ground. The bark is smooth and light-coloured: the wood soft, of a greenish white colour, and so elastic as to be much sought after for the floor-planks of boats, because it will yield, without breaking or splitting, to a moderate bump on a rock. This wood, when well seasoned, appears to have some of the qualities of the English *willow*, which fit that wood for the rollers used in spinning-machinery.

The above list comprises the trees most remarkable for their useful qualities; but there are many others of the same character, differing but little in the nature of the wood, and the purposes for which they may be used.

The forests also abound in ornamental trees and shrubs of various kinds. Everywhere are to be seen Tree-ferns, (*Cyathea medullaris* and *dealbata*,) some of them with stems forty to sixty feet high, their graceful umbrella-like crowns overhanging the thick underwood; Laurels of various kinds, the leaves of which, as well as those of several other shrubs, are nourishing and agreeable to cattle; Fuchsia-trees, (*Fuchsia excorticata*,) and the beautiful mimosa, called Kohai, (*Edwardsia microphylla*,) covered with clusters of yellow flowers.

The woods are almost impenetrably interwoven with lianes, or supple-jacks, (*Ripogonum parviflorum*,) called Kareau by the natives, which give great trouble to the explorer. They are very strong and flexible, and consequently useful for making hurdles, baskets, &c.

Several young specimens of New Zealand trees, including some of those particularized above, may be seen growing in the conservatory at Messrs. Knight and Perry's Exotic Nursery, in the King's Road West, Chelsea, near Cremorne Gardens. Nos. 2, 3, 4, 5, and 15, in the above list, are among those to be seen there. Two plants of the collection, not mentioned in the list, are curiosities in the vegetable world, as the leaves grow downwards from the stem. They are called *Aralia crassifolia* and *Trifoliata*. Some of these trees have attained a height of nine or ten feet: but they seem to have been drawn up unnaturally by the arti-

ficial heat, and thus appear weakly and delicate in form. They have severely felt, too, the want of the genial humidity of their native land; for their colour is far more sombre and lifeless than that which even ever-green plants bear on the soil of New Zealand.

A very good collection of dried specimens, and another of drawings, of New Zealand plants, may be seen at New Zealand House, on application to the Secretary. These have been examined by Sir William Hooker, who has appended to many of them their correct botanical designations. The dried ferns, especially, will well repay those who take interest in botany, for the trouble of a visit.

The furniture woods may be seen to advantage in the show-rooms of Mr. Levien, a cabinet-maker, at No. 10, Davies-street, Berkeley-square, opposite Mivart's Hotel. He is a Prussian mechanic, who made himself acquainted with the qualities of the different woods during a stay of two years at Wellington, and who has, since his return to England, made a great many articles of furniture, such as sideboards, tables, &c., from the stock of wood which he brought with him, or since purchased from among that sent home from the Colony. He has executed orders for many persons of distinction, including Her Majesty, and the King of Prussia, from whom he has received one of the gold medals, which are usually conferred in that country for deserving works of art.

Of equal importance with the timber among the indigenous vegetable productions of the district, is the plant called

Phormium tenax, or New Zealand flax. The plant consists of from a dozen to forty or fifty leaves like those of our flag, and two or three flower-stems, all diverging from the root beneath the ground. There are ten or twelve varieties of the plant; some of which are confined to particular localities, such as low marshes, rich alluvial land, or comparatively barren hill-sides; while in others, a difference of character is acquired by specimens of the same variety, in consequence of the difference of their situation. In

some situations the largest variety of the plant has leaves from ten to twelve feet in height, and three to five inches in breadth at the lower end, finishing gradually in a point. The leaves are all folded in two longitudinally, the inner surface being glossy, and the outer dull. When the leaf has attained its full growth it opens out, but never so much as to lie perfectly flat, and the upper end of the leaf hangs outwards in a graceful curve. The flowers grow in bunches on the flower-stems; they are large and bell-shaped, with purple petals, and are filled to the brim with delicious syrup. The seed is contained in long black pods, and is itself of a glossy black colour, and flat oval shape.

The following classification of the species and varieties of the *phormium tenax* is extracted from the Appendix to "*Annals of the Diocese of New Zealand*," page 241; a work compiled from the writings of the Bishop and of the principal Church missionaries:—

" I. Flax scraped with the finger-nail only (*Tihore.*)

1. *Paritanewha*, found chiefly at Maungatautari (north-west of Lake Taupo.)
2. *Ratawa*, ,, Hauraki, (Valley of the Thames.)
3. *Kohunga*, ,, Maungatautari.
4. *Rerehape*, ,, ,,
5. *Oue*, ,, ,,

" II. Flax scraped with the shell (*Haro.*)

1. *Raumoa*, found chiefly at Taranaki.
2. *Ate*, ,, Hauraki.
3. *Common swamp flax*, "found in all parts."

" III. Coarser kinds, used only for rough garments and floor-mats.

1. *Aonga*, variegated flax.
2. *Whararipi*, ,,

" I. All the varieties of flax of the first class must be planted. They require rich, moist, and flat land, but not swampy, and should be planted in rows six feet apart, with spaces of six feet between the plants. The ground must be kept clear of weeds. The best season for planting is April or May. The plants will be fit to cut in two years, and will yield a crop every year afterwards. The flax requires only to be rent with the hand and nails, without scraping, and is prepared with the greatest ease."

" II. The more common species of flax requires to be scraped with a shell, then steeped in water for four days, afterwards taken out and beaten to clear it of the refuse, and then dried again and scraped a second time."

" III. The third class is of no value for European manufacture."

Flax of the first class is also to be found in native plantations on the north shore of Cook's Strait, especially in the neighbourhood of the Manawatu, Wanganui, and Patea Rivers.

It is the leaves of the plant which contain the valuable fibre, resembling that of the European flax.

Many processes, both mechanical and chemical, have been tried by the Colonists, and by projectors in England, Belgium, and France, for adequately preparing this fibre: but hitherto complete success has not been attained in separating the fibre from some particles of a gummy nature, which render it brittle and harsh of texture when dried and packed, so that it is as yet considered inferior to the European flax. As now prepared for the London market, small quantities have obtained prices varying from 20*l.* to 28*l.* per ton; which hardly pays the present expense of preparation in the colony, packing, and freight.

The finer varieties, from the fibre of which the natives were in the habit of manufacturing garments of a beautiful silky texture, were extensively and carefully cultivated by them, until the general adoption of blankets and other articles of European clothing almost put an end to the native manufacture. The carelessness with which the early trade in this article was carried on has been the cause of its depreciation in the European market; but there is no doubt that if a proper degree of attention were paid to the distinction between the different varieties,—to the soil, climate, and cultivation best adapted for each,—to the proper season of cutting the leaf,—to the best mode of preparing the fibre,—as well as the careful drying, packing, and screwing of it when prepared and assorted, this plant would furnish New Zealand with one of the most valuable exports ever possessed by any country.

The fibre, as yet imperfectly prepared from the *phormium tenax*, is extensively used in New Zealand and in the adjoining Australian Colonies, both by natives and Colonists, for every species of cordage, from sewing-thread to whaling-lines; and a small quantity is still used for cordage in this country: but the finer varieties would furnish a staple resembling silk and linen combined, from which the most beautiful fabrics might be made. Even in its roughest state, this plant is most useful to the Colonist or the traveller. It abounds everywhere except in the thick forests; and a leaf cut green, either whole or split into the required breadth, serves every purpose for which string might be necessary, from the repair of a saddle-girth or stirrup-leather, or the bandaging of a wounded limb, to the replacing of a worn-out brace, knapsack-strap, whip-lash, or boot-lace.

Living specimens of the plant may be seen in Kew Gardens: and drawings of it at the British Museum, and in a work called *Illustrations to 'Adventure in New Zealand, by E. Jerningham Wakefield, Esq.,'* published by Smith, Elder, and Co., in 1845.

The flower-stem, when the seed on it is ripe, furnishes a slow-match, and its ashes excellent tinder; the root is said to furnish a decoction possessing the qualities of sarsaparilla; and the seed is so

abundant, and contains so much oil, as to deserve an experiment, which has not yet been made, as to the possibility of drawing a valuable export from that source also, by means of crushing-mills.

There are fifty or sixty species of Fern-plants. The roots of one of these (*Pteris esculenta*) are edible when roasted, somewhat resembling coarse biscuit, and formerly were a more important portion of the ordinary food of the natives than at present, when so many other articles have been made available for them. Together with the succulent root of the *raupo* (*Typha angustifolia*), a kind of bulrush which grows in the swamps, the fern-root affords an excellent maintenance to the wild hogs.

The stem of one variety of the arborescent Fern, called *mamaku* or *pilau* by the natives, and distinguishable by the black colour of the lower side of its leaves, consists of an edible pulp somewhat resembling that of the pumpkin, from which the early Colonists used to make a very respectable imitation of apple-tart.

The Colonist should be warned against a shrub somewhat resembling our elder (*Coriaria sarmentosa*), which bears a long tapering bunch of black berries, smaller than currants. It is called *tutu* by the natives, who make an insipid and harmless wine from its fruit, although the seeds are highly poisonous. The leaves, especially when young, are poisonous to horned cattle of the ox kind; but this seems only to happen at times, for they often eat large quantities of the leaves without any ill effects. Imported cattle are more liable to this danger on their first arrival from New South Wales or England, than those which have become, as it were, acclimatized. The symptoms are similar to those witnessed in England in the case of a beast over-gorged with clover: it staggers about, soon falls, and death ensues in a very short time, unless averted by instantaneous and copious bleeding. Sheep, though much more rarely, are also sometimes affected by eating this plant;* but this has not been known to occur in the case of horses, goats, or pigs.

The indigenous grasses are not numerous in their varieties, or remarkable, with the exception of the *tohe-tohe*, a reed whose leaves are sometimes four feet in length, and its cane-coloured seed-stems six feet in height. Cattle and horses eat this plant with avidity. The other grasses are being quickly superseded by our European sorts, which spread with inconceivable rapidity wherever flocks and herds are introduced.

In some parts of the district, however, and especially in the plain of the Wairarapa, an indigenous *anise*-plant abounds among the natural pasture, adding greatly to the quality and flavour of the flesh of cattle which have fed on it.

The only indigenous fruit worthy of mention is a parasitical or epiphyte plant (*Freycinetia Banksii*) called *kickie* by the natives,

* See p. 124.

which grows on the branches of the largest forest trees in swampy neighbourhoods. It has a bunch of leaves, growing from the root like those of the flax-plant, but seldom exceeding two feet in length. The leaves diminish in size and in roughness towards the centre of the plant, and in the inner portion are about the size of artichoke leaves, consisting of a semi-transparent juicy white pulp, which melts in the mouth with a cool, sweet, and aromatic flavour. This plant bears its seed on the outside of a fruit which grows upright from the centre of the plant, in shape and size like a cucumber. After peeling off the seeds, the pulp which lies between them and the stem in the centre of the fruit is edible, and of the same flavour and substance as the inner leaves. The natives say that this plant only comes to perfection once in three years. It is certainly the fact that in some years it is very abundant, and in others scarcely a plant can be found sufficiently mature to be eaten.

Introduced.

Between the first visits of Captain Cook to New Zealand and the present time, but more especially during the colonization of the islands, which commenced in 1840, almost every vegetable production known in England has been introduced into the Colony.

Potatoes are believed to have been introduced by Captain Cook seventy years ago; and at the present time, improved by frequent importations of new roots of various kinds from Van Diemen's Land and from England, this vegetable exists in great perfection, and forms the principal article of the food of the natives. Even with the imperfect cultivation of the natives, two crops are always obtained annually from the same ground.

It is supposed that the natives, when according to their traditions they migrated to New Zealand from some other part of Polynesia, as yet undetermined, brought with them the *Kumera*, a small sweet potato, growing like the convolvulus, of which they cultivate several varieties, and the *Taro* (*caladium esculentum*), a small but delicious kind of yam. The latter is rarely cultivated near Wellington, but there are several plantations of it near some of the rivers on the western side of the district.

Among the vegetable productions which may be considered to have been introduced into the country since the first visits of Cook, but previous to the regular colonization of the islands, are the following:—

Maize.—Cultivated by the natives with much success, except in the immediate neighbourhood of Wellington, where there is scarcely

a sufficient continuance of still hot weather to ripen the corn. Large supplies, however, are brought from Hawke's Bay and other parts of the east coast; and before the general introduction of oats, maize constituted the principal food of horses at Wellington. Good sorts from Canada and the United States would thrive well in all the warmer parts of the district.

Melons.—A very good-flavoured, but moderate-sized water-melon is much grown by the natives, especially on that part of the western coast which lies between Porirua and the Manawatu. They come to perfection in the month of March. Many other sorts have since been introduced successfully by the Colonists.

Pumpkins, gourds, and calabashes of two or three different sorts were also grown by the natives from an early date, but have been since much improved upon by the Colonists.

There are also several *grasses*, as well as *wild carrots, turnips, and cabbages*, whose origin, from their similarity to ours, may be attributed to the visits of some European shipping: and a *sow-thistle* grows very luxuriantly wherever the forest has been recently felled, affording nourishing fodder for pigs, horses, and cattle.

As has been described above, *wild oats, yellow trefoil, and timothy-grass* abound in some situations, and have probably sprung from seed left by European visitors.

It is difficult to make an accurate list of the vegetable productions which have been introduced into the district; as, besides all the more ordinary articles of British cultivation, the Colonists have made experiments on a small scale in growing many of the productions of other countries.

Every sort of *Grain* grown in England has been introduced in its numerous varieties. Besides the usual varieties of *wheat, barley, oats, and rye*, even *Egyptian wheat from a mummy* has been grown in the district, and the *black-bearded wheat with solid straw* which is so much grown in the south of Spain.

Wheat grows to great perfection in the rich alluvial valleys already described, the ordinary sorts bearing in the valley of the Hutt an average of from 40 to 50 bushels to the acre, and having a straw nearly six feet in length. The young plants, if fed off by sheep at the proper time, tiller out in a wonderful manner; and as many as forty-four ears have been counted, which had sprung from a single grain. In the neighbourhood of Waikanae and Otaki, there is also a large extent of very fine wheat country, and the wheat-fields of the natives in those situations are exceedingly productive.

Oats are grown as much for hay as for the seed; and when cut for this purpose previous to flowering, shoot out again from the root; so that on a field in the valley of the Hutt two crops of *oaten*

hay have been cut during the same year, the first crop alone amounting to *four and a half tons per acre*.

Barley and *oats* grow most advantageously on the less rich soil of the hills. Both are considered to succeed well, and the former to be well adapted for making *malt*.

The introduction of *maize* has already been alluded to.

Almost all the grasses common to English pastures have been cultivated in the district. Mr. William Swainson, F.R.S., has a farm, called Hawkshead, in the valley of the Hutt, where he has carefully cultivated many sorts of English grasses. In a letter to the *Wellington Spectator** of the 30th January, 1847, he thus writes:—

“The species of which the Hawkshead pastures at this place are composed, are as follows: they amount to twenty-five—

“ <i>Festuca pratensis</i>	Meadow fescue
<i>Dactylus glomerata</i>	Cock's foot
<i>Poa angustifolia</i>	Narrow-leaved meadow grass
—— <i>nemoralis</i>	Wood do.
—— <i>annua</i>	Annual do.
—— <i>carinata</i> Sw.	Sharp edged do.
—— <i>nervata</i>	Nerve leaved do.
—— <i>var. alba</i> Sw.	Broad leaved do.
<i>Bromus arvensis</i>	Field broom grass
—— <i>macrostachys</i>	Large seeded do.
—— <i>multiflorus</i>	Many flowered do.
—— <i>mollis</i>	Soft do.
<i>Agrostis stolonifera</i>	Fiorin grass
<i>Holcus lanatus</i>	Soft meadow grass
<i>Briza media</i>	Quaking grass
<i>Agrostis vulgaris</i>	Common bent
<i>Holcus avenaciis</i>	Tall oat-like grass
<i>Alopecurus pratensis</i>	Meadow foxtail
<i>Anthoxanthum odoratum</i>	Sweet vernal grass
<i>Festuca arundinacia</i>	Reed fescue
—— <i>elatior</i>	Tall do.
<i>Lolium perenne</i>	Perennial rye grass
—— <i>var. italicum</i>	Broad leaved Italian do.
—— „ <i>indigenum</i>	Do. native
—— <i>Poa trivialis</i>	Rough stalked meadow grass

“Two or three more species are alone wanting to assimilate this mixture to those found in some of the most productive pastures in England. But however excellent this assortment is for hay and grazing lands, it is not adapted for lawns, upon which only the fine sheep grasses (few of which have yet reached this country,) should

* A newspaper, published twice a week at Wellington.

be sown. Neither is this mixture adapted for swamps, which require a totally different set of grasses. The list is deficient in two valuable grasses, viz., *Phleum pratense* (Timothy grass) and *Cynosorus cristatus* (Dog's-tooth grass). The devastations of a particular sort of caterpillar (belonging to the *Noctorides*, Sw. or night moths) render it almost impossible to procure seeds (in any quantity) of the first of these; while the latter, although eaten by cattle, is more a sheep grass, and not well adapted for hay."

For many years, every one who takes out good grass seeds of any of these kinds, will be doing the Colony a great benefit.

The same remark applies to *clovers*, *sainfoins*, *trefoils*, *vetches*, *tares*, and *lucerne*. A quantity of seed of the latter plant has been imported from Chili, where it is called *alfalfa*. Four or five crops of this excellent fodder may be cut during the year, as it thrives admirably in so moist a climate.

Beans and *peas* have been introduced on a small scale. The former have been grown in the rich soil of the Hutt to the height of seven feet, and loaded with well-filled pods.

Buck-wheat is not known to have been grown as yet in New Zealand, but would doubtless succeed well.

Linseed, *mustard seed*, and *rape seed* have only been tried on a small scale; but would all probably succeed well.

Turnips, *swedes*, *carrots*, and *mangold-wurzel* attain the utmost perfection in all parts of the district where they have been tried in their numerous varieties.

Hops thrive to a remarkable degree; bearing the first year instead of the third, as in England. They have, however, only been tried on a small scale as yet.

The rich soil of the alluvial valleys, and of the fens when drained, would be especially adapted to the growth of *coriander*, *carraway*, and *cress*, so extensively cultivated in the fertile hundreds of Essex; but it is not known that they have even been introduced into New Zealand.

Many of the English timber and fruit-trees have been introduced, with invariable success; but some years must elapse before their full growth can be attained.

Among the former are the *oak*, the *ash*, the *horse-chesnut*, and the *walnut*. Also a few *Spanish chesnut* trees, and some *mimosas* from New South Wales.

For *fruits*, *flowers*, and *garden vegetables*, the reader must turn back to the Gardener's Calendar at page 131. It does not, however, mention the *Cape gooseberry*, a very excellent fruit, which flourishes almost like a weed wherever it is introduced. The fruit is very good, either raw, cooked, or in preserves.

Spanish and Portuguese onions are grown in perfection; and *mulberry, orange, and lemon trees* have been introduced.

Almost all plants grow with a luxuriance unrivalled in the best English gardens; many thrive in the open air which would not do so in England; and the absence of any marked winter tends to induce some plants which are annuals in this country to become biennials or even perennials. The flower-garden is especially delightful; because many plants, such as *Gladiolas*, and others from New South Wales and the Cape of Good Hope, which only appear in the hot-house or conservatory in this country, are grown in the open air at Wellington; and because by a very small degree of attention the garden may be so managed as to show some plants in flower all the year round. *Geraniums* grow into shrubs as they do in Portugal; and a hedge of mixed sorts is almost sure to furnish blossom and perfume during the greater part of the year.

Tobacco has been grown on a small scale; and inconsiderable plantations of it may be seen near the villages of the natives all over the North Island, grown from seed given them at some former period by Europeans. They never attempt, however, to prepare it for use, nor has any Colonist yet grown enough to try the experiment.

II.—ANIMAL PRODUCTIONS.

Indigenous.

No terrestrial beasts, or reptiles, except *Bats* and *Lizards*, are indigenous to New Zealand. The former are very small, and apparently of only one species: there are several kinds of the latter, one reaching to the length of eighteen inches; but all are perfectly harmless, and often made pets of by the native children.

There are no *Snakes, Frogs, or Toads* of any kind.

The *Mammalia* inhabiting the neighbouring seas appear to be common to other parts of the Pacific Ocean. Of *Whales*, there are the *Sperm* (*Physeter Macrocephalus*), the *Humpback* (*Balæna gibbosa*), the *Fin-back* (*Balæna physalus*), the *Pike-headed* (*Balæna Boops*), the *Large-lipped* (*Balænopterus musculus*), and the *Black or Right whale* (*Balæna Antipodum*).

A valuable amount of oil and whalebone, as will be seen from the statistical tables at the end of this chapter, is obtained from the carcasses of these animals; and their capture and destruction afford to the young Colonists one of the most exciting and adventurous sports known in the world. The following extracts from a work already alluded to* will convey some idea of the mode in which this pursuit is carried on, by means of the establishments, on different points of the coast, which have been above mentioned:—

"It is very remarkable that there exists among the whalers a certain code of laws, handed down by tradition, and almost universally adhered to, relating to adverse claims to a whale. Each whaling-bay has its own law or custom; but they are generally very similar. It is recognised, for instance, that he who has once made fast has a right to the whale, even should he be obliged to cut his line, so long as his harpoon remains in her; and each harpooner knows his own weapon by some private mark. The boat making fast to the calf has a right to the cow, because she will never desert her young. A boat demanding assistance from the boat of a rival party shares equally with its assistant on receiving the required help. These and many other regulations are never written down, but are so well known that a dispute rarely arises, and if so, is settled according to precedent by the oldest 'headsman.'"

* * * * *

"The season for which the men engage themselves begins with the month of May, and lasts till the beginning of October, thus extending over five months, which include the winter. It is during this season that the female or cow whales resort to the coasts of New Zealand with their young calves."

* * * * *

"The men are enrolled under three denominations:—*headsman*, *boat-steerer*, and common man. The *headsman* is, as his name implies, the commander of a boat; and his place is at the helm except during the moment of killing the whale, which task falls to his lot. The *boat-steerer* pulls the oar nearest the bow of the boat, fastens to the whale with the harpoon, and takes his name from having to steer the boat under the headsman's directions, while the latter kills the whale. The common men have nothing to do but to ply their oars according to orders; except one, called the *tub*

* *Wakefield's Adventure in New Zealand*. These extracts are taken from chapter xi. of the first volume, which chapter contains an elaborate description of the whale-fisheries in New Zealand.

oarsman, who sits next to the tub containing the whale-line, and has to see that no entanglement takes place. The wages are shares of the profits of the fishery, apportioned to the men according to their rank;—the headsman getting more shares than the boat-steerer, and the boat-steerer than the common man. The leader of the 'party' commands one of the boats, is called the 'chief headsman,' and is said to 'head' the party, as each headsman is said to 'head' his own boat. The boat-steerer or harpooner is likewise said to 'steer' the boat to which he belongs, or, more frequently, its headsman. Thus, on meeting two whalers, and asking them what is their situation, one might answer, 'I heads the Kangaroo,' while the other would say, 'and I steers Big George.'"

* * * * *

"The whale-boat is a long clinker-built boat, sharp at both ends, and higher out of water at the head and stern than amidships, about twenty to thirty feet long, and varying in breadth according to the make. At the stern, a planking even with the gunwales reaches five or six feet forward, and is perforated perpendicularly by the *loggerhead*, a cylindrical piece of wood about six inches in diameter, which is used for checking the whale-line by taking a turn or two round it. On this, too, it is customary to cut a notch for every whale killed by the boat. The old-fashioned boats were generally made to pull five oars, the rowers of which were called respectively, beginning from the bow, the boat-steerer, bow-oarsman, midship-oarsman, tub-oarsman, and after-oarsman. Boats are now built, however, for the shore-parties, to pull six, seven, and even eight oars. I believe an uneven number is the best, as in that case there remains an equal force on each side of the boat when the boat-steerer, who is also harpooner, stands up to do his work. The boat is steered by means of a long and ponderous oar, called the *steer-oar*, which leans on a piece of wood fixed to the stern-post, and is confined to its place by a strap reaching from the top of the stern-post to the end of the support. The oar, however, moves freely in this loop, and is generally covered with leather for eighteen inches of its length to protect it from wear and tear. Close to the handle is a transverse iron peg, which is held with the right hand, and serves to turn the oar. The headsman stands up to steer in the stern-sheets, and exhibits great skill in the management of the steer-oar, which is twenty-seven feet long in large boats. In a rough sea, an inexperienced person would not fail to be thrown overboard by it, but a whaler manages it with great ease and grace. The oars pull between thole-pins, which always have a small thole-mat and spare pin attached, and are also protected by leather. On the opposite side of the boat to the tholes, below the level of the thwarts, a piece of wood with a small niche is strongly fixed to the side of the boat. This is for 'peaking the oars,' or placing the handles into, without taking the oar out of the thole, so that the

blade of the oar remains out of reach of the water, whether sailing or running when fast to a whale. A boat in the act of peaking her oars to stop, is said to 'heave up.' The mast and large lug-sail are stowed, while rowing, under the after-thwart, with the other end projecting on the starboard hand of the helmsman, who can thus stow or unstow it himself. A whiff, or light flag-staff with fancy colours attached, is stowed with the mast and sail. The mast is shipped in the bow or second thwart, and the halyards are made fast to the midship-thwart. These boats are very fast under sail, and will bear a great press of canvas. In the bow of the boat a planking, similar to that in the stern, reaches some three or four feet aft, and has at its after end a notch large enough to admit a man's leg. This is to steady the harpooner while striking the whale. One of the forward thole-pins is called the *crutch*, from having branches on it which support the harpoons ready for use. The harpoon is an iron weapon, shaped like the top of a fleur-de-lis, and barbed so as not to draw out. It is placed on an ashen handle, five feet long, and its point is covered by a small wooden case. The line is already fast to them, and communicates with two tubs in the middle of the boat, in which 200 fathoms of whale-line are neatly coiled. Spare harpoons, and lances with oval steel-pointed heads, all covered at the points, are ranged under the thwarts; a light kedge is in the head-sheets, a water-keg and a bottle of grog are placed in the stern-sheets, with the pea-coats of the crew, and a box of biscuit if they expect to remain out late. Sometimes a 'spade' is added to the armoury of the boat; this is a sharp iron weapon, like a small baker's shovel, on a long handle. It is used by some of the boldest whalers to cut about the whale's tail and render her less dangerous after she has been struck."

"The boats are fancifully painted by their headsmen with mouldings of different colours, and a 'nose' different from the body. In the nose is generally painted some fanciful design, as a star, a crescent, a ball, or an eye. The name, too, frequently figures along the outside of the stern-sheets."

"The words of command are, as they need be, short and clear: one side is called the *two-side*, where the two oars are in the five-oared boat, and the other the *three-side*; but in giving directions, the headsmen only says, 'pull *two*, back *three*,' or vice versâ. The other terms of *head all*, *starn all*, *peak*, *heave up*, &c., require no explanation. These boats are remarkably lively in a sea-way, will run very long before a gale of wind with safety, and will land safely through a very high surf. They often run on when they are obliged to reef the sail by fastening the weather yard-arm to the gunwale; and are believed capable of standing any weather, if hove-to with the steer-oar peaked, under the lee of a raft formed of the oars, mast, and sail."

* * * * *

"At length, one morning early in May, a whale is signalled from a hill near the bay, where a look-out is constantly kept."

"Three or four boats are quickly launched, and leave the ways at a racing-pace; the boats of the rival stations are seen gathering towards the same point; and the occasional spout of the whale, looking like a small column of smoke on the horizon, indicates the direction to be taken. A great deal of stratagem and generalship is now shown by the different headsmen in their manœuvres to be first 'alongside.' The whale may probably go for two or three miles in one direction, and then, after the various speed of the boats has placed them in a long file, tailing one after the other, suddenly reverse the position by appearing close to the last boat. The six and seven oared boats have greatly the advantage while the chase continues in a straight line; but the short, old-fashioned five has the best of it, if the fish makes many turns and doubles. It is very common for some of the boats to dog the motions of that of a rival party commanded by a headsmen of known experience; and thus two boats may sometimes be seen starting suddenly in a direction totally opposed to that taken by the others, and a race shortly begins between these two, the rest having no chance. The 'old file' in one of these two has guessed from some circumstance in the tide, wind, or weather, or from some symptom noticed in the last spout, that the fish would alter its course a point or two; and another headsmen, who has been attentively watching his movements, at last declares that 'George is off,' and, with a fresh word of encouragement to his crew, follows swiftly in his wake."

"The chase now becomes animating: this last manœuvre has cut off a considerable angle described by the whale; her course and that of the boats almost cross each other; and the crisis seems approaching. The headsmen urges his rowers to exertion by encouraging descriptions of the animal's appearance. 'There she 'breaches!*' shouts he; 'and there goes the calf! Give way, my lads; sharp and strong's the word!—there she spouts again!—give 'way in the lull!—make her spin through it! George a'n't two 'boats' lengths a-head of us. Hurrah! Now she feels it,—pull 'while the squall lasts! Pull!—go along, my boys! All this time he is helping the after-oarsman by propelling his oar with the left hand while he steers with the right. This is technically called 'backing-up.' Each oar bends in a curve; the foam flies from her bows as a tide-ripple is passed: and both boats gain perceptibly on the whale. 'And there goes flukes!' continues the headsmen, as the huge animal makes a bound half out of water, and shows its broad tail as it plunges again head first into the sea. 'Send us 'alongside, my lads—now give way!—hurrah, my bonnies—hearty 'and strong!—hurrah! I'll wager a pint (there goes the calf

* "She leaps out of the water."

‘again!')—I’ll wager she tries out eight tun if she makes a gallon—‘hurrah! hurrah! hurrah then!—three or four strokes more and ‘she’ll come up under our nose. Stand up, Bill!’ The boat-steerer peaks his oar, places one leg in the round notch in the front of the boat, and poises the harpoon, with line attached, over his head.”

“A new hand, pulling one of the oars, begins to look frightened, and flags at his work, looking occasionally over his shoulder; a volley of oaths from the headsman accompanies a threat to ‘break every bone in his skin if he *funks* now;’ and, beginning to fear the man more than the fish, he hardens his heart and pulls steadily on.”

“A momentary pause is occasioned by the disappearance of the whale, which at last rises close to the rival boat. Their boat-steerer, a young hand lately promoted, misses the whale with his harpoon, and is instantly knocked down by a water-keg flung full in his face by his enraged headsman, who spares no ‘bad French’ in explaining his motives. Our original friend then manœuvres his boat steadily to the place where the whale will probably appear next. ‘Pull ‘two, back three!’ shouts he, following a sudden turn in the whale’s wake; and, as she rises a few yards in front of the boat, he cries in rapid succession, ‘Look out!—all clear?—give it her!’ and the harpoon flies true and straight into the black mass. This is called *making fast*. ‘Peak your oars,’ says the headsman; the line whistles over the bow; a turn is taken round the loggerhead to check the rapidity with which the line runs out, and the boat flies positively *through* the water, forming ridges of foam high above her sides. The men sit still, with folded arms, by their peaked oars, the boat-steerer with a small hatchet in his hand to cut the line should any entanglement occur; and the after-oarsman occasionally pours water on the loggerhead, which smokes furiously. Now is shown the skill of the headsman in steering the boat at this tremendous speed, and in watching every motion of the frightened whale. Now he gives directions to ‘haul in,’ when the line slackens; now says, ‘Veer away again,’ as the fish takes a new start; and ever and anon terrifies the new hand, who can’t tell what’s going to happen, into a sort of resignation. The others seem to think the ‘running’ rather a relief from work than anything else; they positively look as if they would smoke their pipes, were it not against all rule.”

“The whale rapidly takes the line,—and the 200 fathoms in the boat are nearly exhausted by its sudden determination to try the depth of water, technically called ‘sounding;’—but another boat of the same party, which had ‘hove up,’ or peaked her oars, when the chase was resigned to the two, comes up in answer to a whiff hoisted by our boat, and fixes a new harpoon in the whale as she rises to take breath. She soon becomes exhausted with her efforts, runs less rapidly, and rises more frequently to the surface; and the headsman at last foresees the lucky moment.”

“‘Come aft!’ he cries; and he and the boat-steerer change places.

The boat ceases her progress as the whale stops to rest. 'Down oars,—give way!' are the orders given in sharp, clear tones; and the crew, at least the old hands, know that he is nerved for his work by the decision apparent in his voice, and the way in which he balances the sharp, bright, oval-pointed lance."

"The whale seems to sleep on the surface; but she is slowly preparing for a move as the boat comes up."

"He follows her every movement. 'A steady pull! Row dry, boys!—lay on! Pull two, back three!—lay on! head of all! lay me alongside!' and, as the whale slowly rolls one fin out of water, the lance flies a good foot into the spot below where the 'life' is said to be. The quick obedience to his instant order of 'Starn all, —lay off!' saves the boat from annihilation, as the whale swings round its huge tail out of water, and brings it down with a tremendous report. She then 'breaches,' or leaps, and plunges in every direction; the headsman continues to direct his crew and boat-steerer, while he poises a new lance, and keeps just out of the vortex formed by her evolutions; the assistant boat and a third one have come up, and, being all of one party, watch outside the splashing for the best chance. One goes in, and having fixed a lance, receives a blow which smashes the boat and two men's legs; the third boat picks up the men; our first man at last gets steered into the vortex, gives a well-aimed lance in the life, and retreats from the foam, which receives a roseate hue. The monster leaps out of the sea, flourishing her tail and fins, and strikes the water with a noise as loud as cannon. She wriggles, and plunges, and twists, more furiously than ever, and splashes blood over the boat's crew, who still restrain their excitement and remain collected in all that they do. She is now in her 'flurry;'—she is said to 'spout thick blood,' and is a sure prize. The boat, by great good management, escapes all accident; and the headsman chuckles as he cuts a notch on the loggerhead, and gives the crew a 'tot all round,' promising the novice that he will have to treat the party to a gallon to-night, in order to pay his footing on killing his first fish."

* * * * *

"In his dealings with the European Settlements, the whaler very much resembles a sailor off a cruise. After the men have been paid the balance due to them at the end of the season, they go to Wellington or Nelson to spend it. The trade of supplying them and buying their oil has naturally fallen out of the hands of the Sydney merchants, into those of persons at Wellington, who pay them better, and send the oil direct to England. During six weeks or two months, Wellington becomes a Portsmouth in miniature. Every public-house has its fiddle and hornpipe going; a little theatre fills once a week; and the weak constabulary force suffers from various practical jokes. Boat-races, on which heavy bets sometimes depend, come off, and an occasional fight, arising from

the profound contempt which the whaler expresses for the 'lubber of a *jimmy-grant*,' as he calls the emigrant, completes the programme of the amusements during the period. Should the whaling-trade increase and prosper, the quiet people will soon be forced to reside in villas out of town, and resign Wellington to its business as a sea-port. When the money is spent, most of the men seek for employment in the settlements."

There are several kinds of *Seals*, which used to abound in Cook's Strait and on the coasts of the Middle Island; but they have been nearly exterminated by the sealers from New South Wales since the year 1827.

Fish of all sorts and sizes abound on every part of the sea-coast. The only sorts similar to ours are the *Conger-eel*, *Sole*, *Plaice*, and *Flounder*. The principal other sorts are as follows:—

The *Shark* is rarely seen near the coast, though small *Dog-fish*, from one to three feet in length, are very common, and considered excellent food by the natives. Occasionally large sharks are seen in Cook's Strait, especially near the floating body of a dead whale.

The *Hapuka* is an excellent fish of the cod kind, but more gelatinous and of richer flavour. From the head and shoulders a strong soup is often made. This fish weighs from 20 to 112 pounds, and is caught very readily in fine weather with lines in from eight to thirteen fathoms' water, near the rocks off the entrance of Port Nicholson, or all along the coast as far as Kapiti.

The *Moki* (*latris ciliarus*) is a very fine-flavoured fish, somewhat resembling the dorey; it weighs from two to five or six pounds.

The *Kawai* (*Centropristes trutta*, or *mulloides*) is a fish generally about fifteen inches in length, resembling the mullet in shape, but rather insipid on table. These fish congregate in shoals, which travel rapidly along the surface of the water, splashing up at times; and they then readily take any glittering bait drawn rapidly through the water from a boat in motion. The natives fish for them with a hook lined with pieces of the parti-coloured shell of the *haliotus* or sea-ear. These shoals ascend the estuaries of fresh-water rivers with the tide, but return again with the ebb.

"The *Barracoota*, or *Manga* of the natives, is a fish also found in shoals on all parts of the coast. It is about two or three feet in length, free from scales, with a long, sharp snout, and of ravenous habits. The flesh is rather dry, dividing when cooked into long thin strips. These fish are generally caught by flogging the water with a crooked nail stuck through a piece of red wood at the end of

the line. At this bait they will jump right out of water, and then it requires some dexterity to whip them into the boat or canoe before they slip off the primitive contrivance. They are also taken with the same hook as the *kawai*, or in great numbers with the sean.

The *Wareho* is a fish somewhat resembling the *kawai*, but of much better flavour. This is an excellent fish when cured and smoked. It appears to frequent the coast chiefly in the winter, as the natives have a special season for the fishery, during June and July. It then most abounds along the coast between Cape Terawiti and Kapiti, especially among the islets and rocks inshore of that island, and near Ohariu.

There are also several other kinds of fish, which are called by the sailors, from some slight resemblance to the English sorts, *Herrings*, *Horse-mackarel*, *Cole-fish*, and *Ling*. The latter is often taken of the weight of forty pounds. *Smelts* are abundant on some parts of the coast; both they and the fish called *herring*, (*aua* of the natives,) readily take a fly in the estuaries of rivers, which they enter with the tide.

Oysters are in great abundance, and of good quality, in the harbour of Port Nicholson, where the natives may constantly be seen diving for them. *Mussels*, *cockles*, and *clams* also resemble our English sorts. A large *Craw-fish*, obtained by diving among the rocks, supplies the place of the lobster.

The great abundance of most of these fish is very remarkable; and ought to be an encouragement to the foundation of large fish-curing establishments, especially as salt may easily be procured by evaporation. The produce would find an excellent market among the Roman Catholic population of the western coast of America, and of Manilla and the adjacent islands.

There are scarcely any fresh-water fish; but *Eels* of the finest kind abound in the swamps, lagoons, and rivers; a small fish very like *Whitebait* is taken in most of the rivers, and exists in the fresh-water lakes in such quantities as to form a principal article of the food of the natives inhabiting the country near the Taupo and other lakes.

The finest *Lampreys*, too, are taken in many of the rivers during freshets, by means of weirs very ingeniously erected by the natives.

In alluding to the indigenous birds, it is necessary to state, as of the trees, that only those most remarkable for utility or agreeableness can be noticed within the space of this book. For a very excellent account of the *Fauna* of New Zealand, as far as it was known in the year 1843, the reader should refer to that, published at the end of Dr. Dieffenbach's book, which was compiled

by John Edward Gray, Esq., F.R.S., keeper of the Zoological Collections in the British Museum.

The *Kiwi*, or *Apteryx Australis*, is the most remarkable and curious bird in New Zealand. It is believed to have never yet been seen in what has been described as the district of Wellington; but it is common to all the mountainous and wooded parts of the islands. It is about the size of a three-months'-old turkey, and is covered with feathers, coarse, long, and slender, similar to those of the emus of New Holland. Its beak is precisely the same as that of the curlew, and is used to thrust into the ground for earth-worms, upon which it feeds. The eyes are always blinking; the head is small in proportion to the bird, and from the nostrils grow out several long black hairs or feelers, like the whiskers of a cat; its legs are short, remarkably strong for the size of the bird, and are of the gallinaceous character. It has no appearance of either wing or tail. It makes a kind of hissing noise when in search of prey, and strikes the ground with its strong heavy feet, to rouse the earth-worms, and put them in motion. Its sense of smelling appears to be very acute. These birds hide themselves during the day, and come out of their retreats, which are generally small holes in the earth, or under stones, at night, to seek for their food. They run very fast, and are only to be caught by dogs, by torch-light, which they sometimes kick and bruise severely. They are highly prized, when taken, which is very rarely, by the natives, and their skins are kept, until a sufficient number are collected to make a garment. The flesh is black, sinewy, tough, and tasteless. There is a stuffed specimen in the British Museum; and a live specimen was brought home in the year 1845, and purchased by the Earl of Derby, for his collection at Knowsley.

The *Huia*, or *Neomorpha Gouldii*, abounds on the hills near Port Nicholson. It is the colour and size of a black-bird, with bright yellow wattles on either side of the insertion of the beak, and with long, slender, yellowish legs and feet. The plumage is of a glossy black, and very fine: it has for its tail, four long, broad, black feathers, tipped with white at the extremity, which gives it a very lively appearance. These feathers are much valued by the natives, and are sent as presents to the natives of the North to ornament their hair, on grand occasions, or when going out to battle. The most remarkable feature in the appearance of this bird, is the form of its beak, which is slender, and resolves itself into a semicircle. Its food is worms and insects, with a small berry called *ponga*. After the skin is taken off, which is always done for the sake of wearing a tuft of feathers in the ear, the flesh is delicious.

Pukeko (*Porphyrio melanotus*).—A species of water-hen, the size of a well-grown capon. It resides in the swamps; has very long red legs, with three long toes and one short toe on each foot.

The eye is particularly small; the beak broad, very strong, and of a deep crimson; the forehead bare of feathers, and of the same deep crimson colour as the beak. The plumage of this bird is rather coarse, of a dark shaded brown, tinged with green, except the neck and breast, which are of a deep and brilliant purple; it has also a small tuft of fine white feathers under the tail, which is very short. These birds are not strong on the wing, but sometimes fly from their native retreats in the morasses, and rob the potato-fields nearest their abode, at which time they are easily snared, and great numbers taken. The flesh is rather coarse, but of tolerable flavour.

Kukupu (*Columba spadicea*).—A large wood-pigeon, very plentiful in all the forests. This is one of the most beautiful birds the country possesses. It is much larger than the largest wild or tame pigeons in England, and has a plumage unrivalled among the extensive family of doves for splendour and variety; green, purple, and gold are, however, the prevailing colours. It is a heavy-flying bird, which makes it an easy prey to the hawks, with which the woods abound. They are easily killed with a spear or a musket; and if two birds are found upon the same tree, they are either so sluggish or stupid as not to fly when one is either killed or wounded. They feed upon the berries of the miro-tree, are most delicious eating, and in season from January to June. These birds are much valued on account of both the quantity and quality of their flesh.

Weka, or wood-hen (*Ocydromus Australis*). This bird frequents the retired parts of the country, and especially the forests. It lives in burrows like the *kiwi*, and lays its eggs in the same situations. It is unable to fly, only assisting itself in running, like the ostrich, by means of its wings. Its cry, a long plaintive whistle, is heard soon after dusk; and a dog trained to the sport will follow this sound, and catch the bird. It is about the size of a pheasant, and excellent eating.

Kaka (*Nestor meridionalis*). A bird of the parrot kind, as large as the pigeon. It is capable of learning to imitate the human voice to an astonishing degree. Its feathers are of a dark russet colour; round the neck, upon the thighs, and under the tail, beautifully tinged and spotted with deep red. It has a large round dark eye, and the feathers encircling it are shaded with a mixture of yellow and red. This bird feeds upon all kinds of fruit, berries, and farinaceous roots. It bites holes in trees, in which it makes its nest; laying four, and sometimes five eggs, perfectly white. The cry of this bird, when ranging at large in the woods, is harsh and disagreeable. Its flesh is quite as much esteemed as that of the pigeon; and it abounds in the woods.

Kakariki.—There are two species of this little green parroquet, (*Platycercus Novæ Zelandiæ* and *Trichoglossus Aurifrons*) neither of them much larger than a canary bird. They are found very

mischievous to the corn-fields in fresh clearings, congregating from the forest in flocks like sparrows to feed on the grain. Their flesh is tender and well-flavoured, so that a good pie may be obtained by guarding the crop from depredation.

Tui (*Prothemadera N. Zelandiæ*).—This remarkable bird, from the versatility of its talent for imitation, has, by some, been called the “Mocking Bird;” and, from its peculiar plumage, has by others been denominated the “Parson Bird.” It is so restless in its disposition, as to seem incapable of remaining in one situation, or unemployed, for a single moment. There is not a note of any bird of the woods but what it exactly imitates; and, when confined in a cage, it learns with great ease and correctness to speak long sentences. It imitates dogs, cats, turkeys, geese, and, in fact, every sound which is repeated a few times in its hearing. Its size is that of the thrush; and its plumage a beautiful glossy black, with a few very fine white hairy feathers, scattered about the head and breast, a few stronger ones about the nostrils, and two small clusters of long white feathers hanging down from the neck upon the breast, resembling a pair of clerical bands. Its eye is penetrating, and its voice peculiarly mellow. Its general food is flies and small insects, which it is very expert in catching, supplying itself in a very short time with great abundance. It also feeds upon the berries of various plants, and will not reject earth-worms. This bird seems to associate with every other warbler of the woods; and, next to the ground-lark, is found in the greatest number of all the birds in New Zealand. It is delicious eating. It seems to be of a tender constitution, short-lived, and not able to bear the extremes of heat or cold. One bird, however, was brought alive to England in 1845, and bought for the Earl of Derby’s collection at Knowsley.

There are several species of wild ducks, which frequent in great numbers the mouths of rivers, and sand-banks on the sea-coast. Among these the *paradise-duck*, or *Pu-tangi-tangi*, (*Cæsarea variegata*), is remarkable for its size, for the beauty of its plumage, and the delicacy of its flesh. *Teal*, very like our English ones, are also common on the rivers and lakes. High up among the mountains, the rapid streams are inhabited by the *Wiho*, (*Malacorynchus Forsterorum*?) a black duck with a white bill, whose cry is a shrill whistle, and the flesh of which is exceedingly fat and well-flavoured.

A *Quail*, resembling that of France, is found in bevs in the open country; but is not so common on the North as on the Middle Island. These birds show a tendency to frequent the newly-made stubble-fields. It has not yet been established whether they are migratory or not.

There are six or seven varieties of the Cormorant or Shag, (*graculus*), called *kauwan* by the natives. Those that live near the sea-shore in communities, building their nests in dead trees overhanging the water, are very good eating if the skin is taken off before cooking. The eggs are also of good flavour.

The *Toria*, or Oyster-catcher (*Hematopus picatus*), a black bird about the size of a fowl, found on the sea-shore, is also good for the table: and so are two or three kinds of *Waders*, and *Sand-pipers*, or *Curlew*, which are found in flocks on the sandy beaches.

A large *Bittern*, the *Matuku* of the natives (*Herodias matuku*), is common in the swamps: and a small bluish *Crane* is often seen on the rocks close to the sea-shore.

There are two species of *Hawks*. One, the *kahu* of the natives, (*falco harpe*), is about the size of a pigeon, and they are very numerous. The other, *karewarewa* (*falco brunnea*), is much less common, and not larger than a sparrow-hawk: it is however exceedingly daring, and will not hesitate sometimes to pounce on a pigeon or chicken even close to a group of people.

There is a small *King-fisher* (*Halcyon vagans*), and one or two sorts of *Owls*; and there are many other birds remaining undescribed, including some a little resembling our *Crow*, *Thrush*, and *Starling*.

The small singing-birds are in great variety and very numerous. Their warbling is exceedingly delightful; and always loudest for an hour before sunrise and about half an hour afterwards. Among them is one, whose notes sound among the chorus from the woods like a graduated peal of bells. Most of them are very good eating.

The sea-birds are not different from those of the Pacific generally, and are of no great value to the Colonist.

The *Albatross*, sometimes measuring twelve feet from tip to tip of the wings, and the large yellow-headed *Gannet*, are prized by the natives for their feathers. There is also a sort of *Puffin* or *pelicanoides*, commonly called the *mutton-bird*, which the natives take in large quantities by lighting fires on the seaward face of the hills near the coast, into which these birds, called *titi* by the natives, fly, and are killed. They are then dried on racks until sufficiently cured, and stored up for an especial treat. The flesh so preserved is, however, excessively fat and rank.

Introduced.

Among the animals introduced from other countries, there are some which, like the plants mentioned above, have been brought to New Zealand at a comparatively distant period, and others within the last few years only.

Peafowl were introduced, by Mr. Henry Petre, in the year 1841, when he brought some from England. It is not known, however, whether he has succeeded in the permanent introduction of these birds. He has also an aviary of *Pheasants*, and of these latter birds there are also some at Colonel Wakefield's, in Wellington, and at Mr. Burcham's, of the Aglionby Arms, in the village of Aglionby. These are the progeny of some taken out from England by Mrs. Wills, in 1842; but they have not yet been found to multiply rapidly, the young being difficult to rear, and their most nourishing food, ant's eggs, being exceedingly scarce. It is probable, too, that as yet they have been badly paired, there not being enough hens. In taking these birds out, it should be remembered that one cock-pheasant to eight or nine hens, and not equal numbers of each, is the most favourable proportion. They have not yet multiplied sufficiently to justify the risk of turning any out to take their chance in the woods; though, as there are plenty of insects and berries to be found all the year round, and hardly any vermin to destroy them, they would certainly thrive when once well started.

Turkeys, geese, ducks, and common fowl abound wherever there are settlers; and thrive uncommonly well. In some places the latter have become wild, and live in coveys among the fern and high grass; though it is not known whether they have yet bred in that condition.

Guinea-fowl have also been bred with a view to their being turned out as game; but there is yet no account of the result of this experiment.

A few *Canaries* and *Bullfinches*, taken over safely by their mistresses from this country, will close the list of introduced birds.

The *Dogs* which the natives have had for many years as domesticated animals, are probably descended from some introduced by ships at an early period; and it is curious that one of their names for a dog is the same as the Spanish word 'perro.' They are of a most degenerate mongrel breed; but useful, in packs, for hunting the wild hogs. The natives prize those which have long and silky white hair, in order to make garments of their skins; and tufts of hair are also used to ornament their spears.

Many kinds of dogs have been introduced by the Colonists; including *Bull-dogs*, by the whalers, *Kangaroo-dogs*, (a mixture of greyhound and mastiff,) from New South Wales, and various crosses between these and the natives' dogs, which go under the general name of *pig-dogs*, and combine courage with speed, being used chiefly to hunt the wild hog, and taught to hold him, when caught, by the ear or jowl, until the hunter comes up. Within the last few years, some well-bred Scotch deer-hounds, and some boar-hounds of the King of Wirtemberg's breed, have been sent out, and have reached Wellington in safety. There is an excellent breed of *Scotch colly sheep-dog* at Wellington; and various other dogs, such as

Newfoundlands, terriers, and spaniels, according to the taste of the masters who took them out with them.

It deserves notice that dogs have as yet been perfectly free from distemper and hydrophobia in New Zealand.

The *Cat* has in the same manner been domesticated with the natives for many years; and, occasionally, a wild one is met with in the woods. The Colonists have also imported cats with them.

Of the *Rat*, there are two kinds. The smaller kind is supposed to have been introduced first, and is called *kiore maori*, or *native rat*. It is a terrible depredator in the sweet potato and Indian corn grounds, round which the natives set springes for catching it. They are fond of the flesh. The other kind is the *large Norway rat*, which exterminates the other race in its extensive migrations all over the islands. Both kinds have probably been introduced, at some time or other, from the shipping. *Mice* have also come in the ships from England. In one instance, a cage full of white mice escaped in a store at Wellington, and for some time that and the neighbouring houses were infested with their descendants.

Pigs were originally introduced by Captain Cook, about seventy years ago; since which time they have so multiplied, (assisted, probably, by the donations of subsequent navigators,) as to be found in a wild state nearly in every part of the islands. Introductions of new stock from the shipping constantly take place; but there has, as yet, been no careful importation of select breeds from England. The wild hog, which is caught with dogs, and afterwards domesticated and home-fed, partakes a good deal of the Chinese breed about the head, but frequently grows to a great size. They have been killed, occasionally, weighing as much as 350 pounds when killed and cleaned as soon as caught. The curing of ham and bacon succeeds remarkably well; and a small settlement, called Petre, on the Wanganui river, of which we shall speak further on, has enjoyed a large trade in this article.

Hunting the wild hog is very exciting and arduous sport, as practised by the settlers. Owing to the nature of a great part of the country, it is impossible to ride: you have often, indeed, to follow your dogs through passages in the underwood, where you must needs crawl on all fours, and sometimes through swamps more than knee-deep. When the hog is caught, your attendant natives, either with flax-leaves gathered on the spot, or with plaited ropes which they have made in readiness, fasten running nooses round his legs, and, if necessary, round his snout. He is then led home in triumph, as it is not considered sportsmanlike to kill him in the field, unless absolutely necessary, and moreover, he carries his own weight home. You therefore depend principally on having well-trained and courageous dogs, and quickness in securing the hog while the dogs have fast hold of his ears or jowl.

The *Horses* of New Zealand are principally introduced from

New South Wales and Van Diemen's Land. This is a strong, hardy breed, being itself a cross between the horses taken by the Australian Colonists from England, and a few Arabs afterwards imported. This horse is generally rather above the middling size, very strongly made, and of enduring temper and constitution. Even in the Australian Colonies, however, and since in New Zealand also, the blood has been crossed by importations of inferior stock from South America and the Cape of Good Hope, in both which places the horses are small and hardy, but badly shaped: those especially from Chile, descended from the Spanish barb, commonly have large heads, often ewe-necks, and always low hind-quarters.

In the year 1840, Mr. Watt brought to Wellington, from Sydney, a horse called 'Figaro,' from whom many of the young horses now in the Colony are descended. His pedigree was as follows:—"Figaro, foaled in December, 1837, got by Operator, dam Adelaide by Teorum. Operator was foaled in 1832, got by Emilius, dam Worthless by Walton, out of Altisidora by Dick Andrews."

Shortly afterwards, a small but very compact, well-shaped horse, named 'Calmuck Tartar,' was also introduced from Van Diemen's Land; but he had no pretensions to any pedigree which can be traced to the English stud-book.

In January, 1843, Mr. Henry Petre imported from England, 'Riddlesworth' and 'Æther.' He deserves the greatest credit for the condition in which they arrived at Wellington, having been in boxes on deck throughout the voyage. At the Cape of Good Hope, Mr. Petre purchased nineteen brood mares; but they were not highly esteemed for that purpose, being very small, and small-boned for their size.

"Riddlesworth is a dark-brown horse, with great power and beauty, bred by Mr. Thornhill, in 1837; got by Emilius, out of Bee in a Bonnet, by Blacklock, out of Maniac, &c."

"Æther was foaled in 1836. Got by St. Patrick out of Pastille, by Rubens. For performances, see Racing Calendar for 1839 and 1840."*

In 1845, Mr. Petre took Æther to Sydney, and sold him there, so that some of his stock only remains in New Zealand.

Two very inferior horses, 'Mazeppa' and 'Damask,' were also imported from New South Wales, in 1841 and 1842. The latter had pretensions to a pedigree which were belied by his appearance; and the former, although a useful sort of steeple-chasing horse, never had any whatever.

Races are held in January or February of every year, at Wellington; but these are generally hurdle-races, contended for by the horses imported from New South Wales. As yet, no races have

* These are the pedigrees, as advertised by the owners of the horses in the local newspapers.

been instituted especially for the competition of the young stock bred in the Colony. In February, 1848, at the Burnham Water Races, near Wellington, Mr. Petre gave a cup of 20*l.* to be contended for on the following conditions:—"Entrance, 2*l.* Heats twice round course. Six leaps over hurdles three feet nine inches high, in each heat. No distance. Open to all horses carrying 11st. 6lb. Second horse to receive entrance-money."

A few *Asses* and *Mules* have been imported from Chile.

Cattle have been chiefly introduced from New South Wales and Van Diemen's Land; the chosen stock coming from Messrs. Inlay's establishment at Twofold Bay, in the south-east corner of Australia. One or two Durham bulls have been imported from England; and a few Durham, Devon, and Short-horned cows. The brood-stock brought from the Australian Colonies chiefly consists of very handsome, well-shaped cows of the Short-horned breed; but some poley Devons, and a few long-horned Devon and Hereford working bullocks have also been received.

As yet there has been no stall-feeding, the indigenous pasture being good all the year round. The custom has been, like that of New South Wales, to let the cattle, including even milch cows, rove at large over a tract of country, generally called a *run*. They are branded with the initials of the owner, in letters large enough to be distinguished with a glass at a considerable distance. When wanted to be branded, or selected for market, or even sometimes for the daily milking, they are driven by men on horseback, armed with long whips, into a strong fold, called a stock yard. The cattle that have been some time on the run, and especially the young stock calved there, often afford a long and exciting chase before they can be brought in; and the horses used to the sport take as much delight in it as the riders, and become very expert at turning sharply and suddenly on steep hill-sides and in other difficult positions, when following the turns and doubles of the cattle. Sometimes the latter charge full upon man and horse; and if you cannot avoid the attack by a swift movement of your steed, your only chance is to crack the stock-whip, which produces a report like a pistol, in front of the beast's nose, when it will almost invariably turn. The management of the stock-whip, however, requires experience in order to use it effectually, and not to injure yourself or your horse. The wooden handle is about fourteen inches long; the thong, of plaited hide, twelve or fourteen feet in length.

The cattle thrive exceedingly well upon the wild pasture, if there are not too many fed within a given space of ground; and the cows yield more than an average quantity and quality of milk. Working bullocks are much used for ploughing and other purposes of heavy draught, from the want of horses fitted for such employment. They are harnessed by a wooden yoke over the neck, and iron hames.

It has already been observed, that there are some *wild cattle* on

the island of Kapiti. There are also a few on the eastern head of the estuary of the Pelorus river, in Admiralty Bay, which have originated in the same way, from two or three head, brought from the Australian Colonies, and given to the natives, many years ago, in exchange for flax. It is very probable that, in the course of a few years, cattle may be found wild all over the islands, as it is difficult, under the present system, to prevent a few from straying occasionally out of their runs; and they can live almost as well on many of the shrubs which form the underwood of the forest as on herbage. The fern-covered districts alone are unsuited to the maintenance of cattle; but even in them the fern gives way to grass very rapidly, if a few spots free from fern can be found to begin upon.

The *Sheep* in New Zealand have nearly all been introduced from New South Wales, and are therefore almost entirely of the Spanish Merino breed,* many of their progenitors having been imported into Australia from Saxony. A few Merino rams, of Lord Western's breed, were recently imported into Wellington, direct from England, by Mr. Clifford. It is unnecessary here to describe the extraordinary improvement which takes place in the weight and quality of the wool, as well as in the weight and quality of the mutton, in New Zealand, when compared with those of the same sheep in New South Wales. The sheep-farming of New Zealand has already been amply described in the account of the *Wairarapa* plain, at page 121 of this chapter.*

Goats were introduced from the shipping at an early period, and are now in great abundance, especially at the whaling-stations. None have yet run wild in the country.

Indigenous.

The indigenous insects, many of them peculiar to New Zealand, are numerous, and curious to the naturalist; but here will only be noticed those of which it imports the Colonist to know:—

There is a large Grasshopper, or *Locust*; but it is not seen in great numbers, or destructive.

Caterpillars are numerous; and some of them very pernicious to the crops. There is, especially, a black caterpillar, (*auata* of the natives,) which attacks potatoes, eating the young holm off level with the ground. In some years this plague is hardly seen; in others, the damage done is considerable.

Ants are exceedingly scarce; as has already been observed in relation to the difficulty of finding food for young pheasants.

Small, harmless *Centipedes* are not uncommon, especially among dry drift wood on the sea-shore; and there is always found in the same situations a *Spider*, which the natives call *katipo*, and report to

* See also Chapter VII., for an account of sheep-farming near Nelson.

possess the venomous qualities of the *tarantula* ; but of this no positive evidence has yet been obtained.

Sand-flies abound everywhere ; and *Mosquitoes* in and near the woods, or low, swampy places. Both disappear in cold or windy weather ; and the latter retreat gradually, as clearing advances and the smoke of dwellings increases. A mosquito-curtain, however, is a very necessary defence for women, or new comers, who intend to settle away from the Town. The Canadian sportsman's preventive, a bottle of sweet oil and turpentine, wherewith to anoint the face, neck, and hands, before going to bed, will be found very effective by the bushman or explorer who cannot rig out a curtain ; and the smoke from a fire of dried cow-dung, left smouldering at the wind ward side of a hut, also drives the tormentors away.

In the hot weather, another plague is the *common maggot*, or *blow-fly*, which is met with even in the midst of the woods, and deposits its eggs on all provisions, and also on blankets, and any other woollen clothing left uncovered.

It is needless to say that in the native villages there is the same abundance of vermin as in all other warm countries, where the strictest cleanliness is not preserved.

Introduced.

Even in the insect world, colonization has conferred benefits on New Zealand.

The English Colonists have introduced *Bees*, as though to remind themselves of the process by which they have swarmed from their parent hive. The earliest attempt to introduce bees from England was made by Mrs. Wills, in May, 1842 ; but this first colony died on the passage. Shortly afterwards, a healthy hive, sent by Mrs. Allom, of London, arrived safely, and was established at Nelson. The first bees actually landed alive at Wellington were brought from Sydney, by Mr. John Carne Bidwill, in the same year. The progeny of this and other parent stocks has increased in an almost incredible degree ; and the progress of this little insect, as compared with its natural history in England, is one of the most remarkable proofs of the beauty of the New Zealand climate.

The Reverend W. Cotton, who accompanied Bishop Selwyn to New Zealand, in 1841, as his chaplain, was an accomplished and enthusiastic bee-master before his departure from England ; and he has recently published

in the local newspapers a series of Essays on the Management of Bees,* which should be perused by every emigrant. While they give the most interesting account of the progress of bees in New Zealand, they are full of useful observation and good advice; and the language in which they are couched is touchingly simple, and adapted to the most homely understanding. We shall only here extract a few of the most striking points:—

“Get a swarm from a friend early in the season, that is, in October or November, in order that your stock may be well established before the swarming season is over (the end of February), by which time you ought to have several hives in your bee-house.”

* * * * “In this climate bees are so wonderfully prolific that I have known as many as twenty-five hives come from one in the course of twelve months; not all from the parent stock, but standing to it in the relation of children, grand-children, great-grand-children, great-great-grand-children, and even great-great-great-grand-children, to the fourth and fifth generation. But as this very large increase can only take place in the warmest situations, I will suppose the increase to be much less than this—say from five to tenfold every year; and he must be a stingy bee-master indeed who will not freely give out of this abundance. * * * * ”

“SWARMING AND HIVING BEES.

“A swarm of bees in May
Is worth a load of hay;
A swarm of bees in June
Is worth a silver spoon;
A swarm of bees in July
Is not worth a fly.

“—so runs the old English saying—here a September swarm does not differ so very much in value from a February one, for the swarming season ranges between these two months. I have known a swarm of the latter month support itself very well through the winter, and in the following spring become a most productive hive. Still, as I said before, a young bee-master had better get a stock early in the season, and then he will have a whole row before it is over.” * * * * “A bee-master who has only been used to the English rate of increase, will be perfectly surprised, and as it were overwhelmed with the multitude of swarms which will after the first

* *Hints on the Management of Bees*, by the Rev. W. Cotton, M.A., begun in *New Zealand Spectator*, (a newspaper published at Wellington,) of February 13, 1847, and continued in succeeding numbers of that year, and also in that of January 22, 1848, and succeeding numbers.

or second year issue from his hives. Further increase will no longer be an object with him. What he will then desire is to get as much honey as possible from his existing stock." * * * *

"The season of the year at which the greatest quantity of honey may be taken will vary of course in the different parts of these islands, as they extend over so many degrees of latitude. In the northern districts they work during the entire winter (though in the English sense this is not an appropriate word). The queen rests from her maternal toils, though the workers make no pause in their honey-gathering; so the very purest honey may be taken during the winter months. In the latitude of Auckland the work of a hive is suspended for a month or so, varying of course with the season; whilst in the south I think their state of torpor will be found to extend over a longer period, and the habits of the bee will differ less from those of their English brethren." * * * *

"It is impossible to state how much honey may be taken from a well-stocked apiary in the course of the year, for it will depend so much upon the situation and the number of bee-masters who happen to be near together. A country may be over-stocked with bees just as a paddock may be over-stocked with cattle. * * * * But there is hardly any limit to the quantity of honey which may be procured from an isolated apiary, favourably situated near an extensive tract of wood-land. I will give an example:—

"A single swarm was placed in such a situation as this in the summer of 1843-44; by September, 1844, it had yielded thirty-one pounds of honey; as it was a single stock, it was not taxed severely. The following little table gives the amazing produce of it and its offspring up to the respective dates annexed to the weight of the honey:—

" September, 1844	. . . . .	31 lbs.
" 1845	. . . . .	205
" 1846	. . . . .	721
" 1847	. . . . .	1211

Total in four years . . . 2168

"If this, the produce of a single hive, does not make English bee-keepers open their eyes with astonishment, I shall be surprised. It certainly should encourage New Zealand bee-masters to study the gentle craft. Nor do I think the limit of productiveness has even, in that locality, been reached as yet." * * * * "We have hollow trees in abundance. Many of them at the Bay of Islands are already tenanted by bees, and honey in considerable quantities has been brought in by the Maories (natives) for sale." * * * * "In this country the bees are, I am thankful to say, able to feed themselves all the year round, and lay up a surplus store for their master likewise." * * * * "There is hardly any season, at least in the northern parts of the island, in which the bees do not work

nearly all the year, as there is a perpetual succession of flowers in the woods." * * * * "A good deal of the craft of bee-keeping is different in New Zealand from what is useful in England. The length of the summer, the mildness of the winter, and greater, consequently, increase of the bees—all these make the odds; and so I have compiled this little manual, which I believe will give you more practical hints than any European bee-book would do, not excepting my own."

Mr. Cotton has taught the natives in the Wellington district how to manage bees, and how to make hives for them; and they have already shown the greatest eagerness and aptitude for doing both.

III.—MINERAL PRODUCTIONS.

Up to this time, no mineral productions have been discovered within the district of Wellington. The stone, in most places, is too much laminated and disposed to crumble, to be cut in large blocks for building purposes. In some situations, however, it is used for this purpose, in such rough and small pieces as the pickaxe will loosen from the rock. The farm-house at Tettcott, on Watt's Peninsula, was built in this way by Mr. Molesworth, with stones rolled down from the surrounding hill-sides. For road-making, this is a very useful rock, being easily broken up. More recently, however, a vein of building-stone has been discovered by Mr. Cridland, an architect residing at Wellington. He thus describes it in a letter* to a Wellington newspaper of July or August, 1847:—

"The rock is an igneous formation of greenstone or trap. It forms a dike, which crops out on the Pitone Road, above Nga Hau-ranga, and in its course traverses the Kai-Wara-Wara stream, a little above Mr. Schultze's mill, and again above the bridge on the Karori Road. It proves to be an excellent building stone. It can be easily wrought and dressed, taking a perfectly smooth face and sharp arris. It is adapted for the finest kinds of work, and could be obtained in large blocks, free from fracture. It is very hard, does not absorb water, and appears to be a very desirable stone. Its colour is light grey, varying in some parts to green,—and weight about fifteen cubic feet to the ton. It might be used for street paving."

* Re-published in *New Zealand Journal* of Jan. 15, 1848, vol. ix., No. 212, p. 4.

Plenty of *clay*, of the right sort for brickmaking, is to be found everywhere on and near the hills.

On many of the sea-beaches, cockle-shells have collected in such large quantities as to afford an almost inexhaustible supply to the *lime*-burner.

The land in the Wellington district was originally sold by the New Zealand Company under the following conditions:—

A settlement was projected in England, to consist of—1st, a Town, containing 1100 sections of one acre each, besides streets, and the necessary reserves for public purposes, including a broad Belt of land round the Town for the recreation of the inhabitants; and, 2ndly, a rural district, consisting of 1100 sections, of 100 acres each. One Town-section was attached to each rural section.

Of these double sections, 110 were reserved for the natives.

As soon as the remaining 990 double sections had been applied for by purchasers, who paid 100*l.* in London for every rural section with a Town-section attached, 1100 numbers were thrown into a wheel, and an order of choice was drawn out for each double section purchased, and for each native reserve. The purchasers then received land-orders entitling them to choose one Town-section and one rural section for each land-order, in the rotation governed by the number which had been drawn for it; and the native reserves took their chance with the rest.

Much of the land selected has changed hands; transfers having been effected at various times, in quantities varying from ten or twelve sections to the smallest subdivision of a valuable town acre. The number of resident land-owners in the district now, perhaps, amounts to 300 or 400. The absentee proprietors have generally appointed agents to select, manage, and lease their lands; but in hardly any case have these agents been entrusted with the power of selling any of

their principals' land. It would be well if the absentee proprietors would so far modify this arrangement as to give their agents the power of granting leases for long periods, with a power to the lessee to purchase at certain stated intervals, for a price to be then fixed by valuation, or arbitration between the landlord and tenant; for, in a new country, the best tenants to be obtained are the very men who will object to make improvements on land from the ultimate possession of which they are debarred.

The present *price of land* in the district varies greatly with its quality and situation, and its relative proximity to, or rather accessibility from, the Town. Thus, some land four miles off, with a good road to it, or only separated by the navigable waters of the harbour, is worth more than land of richer description and nearer to the Town, but to which no good road may yet have been made. As much as one thousand pounds has been offered for a single section in the most valuable part of the town: even rural land of inferior quality, but near the town, and with a road made to it, has been sold at the rate of forty pounds per acre: while many of the rural sections, from their distance or inaccessibility, have as yet no marketable value whatever.

Good uncleared land, at a convenient distance from the port, and with a good road to it, may be bought in the colony at from three to four pounds per acre in large quantities: smaller allotments generally fetching higher prices. Occasionally, a whole section may be bought in England from some absentee proprietor at perhaps a rather cheaper rate.

The terms of *leases* of course vary very much; but in the case of heavily-timbered land, with good soil, in average situations, a clearing-lease is generally agreed upon, by which the tenant has the land rent-free for the first three or four years, and then pays a rent which augments periodically; as, five shillings per acre for the next four or three years, ten shillings per acre for

the following seven, and fifteen or twenty shillings per acre for the remaining seven years of a twenty-one-years' lease.

Town-land is generally let at *so much per foot* of frontage to the street; and this rate varies from one or two to twenty shillings. In long leases of sections in a valuable situation, covenants to erect buildings of certain dimensions and structure are generally insisted on by the landlord.

A fair conception may be formed of the *cost of clearing and cultivating the land*, from the evidence on that subject, furnished to the House of Commons' Committee on New Zealand matters, in the autumn of 1844, by the late Mr. Francis Alexander Molesworth, one of the most persevering and energetic of the earliest Colonists, who was the first to set the example of clearing forest-land on a large scale in the valley of the Hutt. The land on which he began these experiments is part of the farm of Newry, on the left bank of the river, immediately opposite the village of Aglionby, and possesses some of the deepest and richest alluvial soil within the district. When Mr. Molesworth commenced his work, this land bore the heaviest timber which the woodsman ever has to contend with. His estimates are as follows:—

“ You have farmed yourself a considerable quantity of land on the Hutt?—I have about 100 acres under cultivation, which I cleared myself.

“ Can you give the Committee any information as to the cost of clearing land for cultivation?—I have made out a short statement of the expenses of clearing, and the expenses of the three first crops; this was done not by my own men, but by contract with others, shortly before my leaving the country; the expense of clearing was as follows: felling and lopping, logging and burning, at 5*l.* an acre; grubbing the roots and taking up all the stumps, six inches and under in diameter, at 1*s.* per rood, 8*l.*; collecting the roots, &c., and wheeling them, 10*s.*; making the whole expense of clearing an acre, 13*l.* 10*s.*; then there is a considerable deduction to be made from this; while the work is going on, you supply the men with rations, flour and beef, tea and sugar, and such things, which are generally supplied to them at retail prices, but which you buy at the

wholesale prices, so that you have a profit upon them; I should say that the reduction would be about fifteen per cent.

“What, then, would be the net amount per acre of clearing land?—The net cost, I think, of clearing it and grubbing it would be about 12*l.* an acre.

“Is that heavily-timbered land?—The most heavily-timbered in the country; the district on which I am settled consists of the alluvial banks of a river, which are annually flooded three or four times; there is a deposit remains after every flood, and I need not say that the soil, therefore, is rendered exceedingly prolific; vegetation is dense in the extreme; you cannot walk through a wood without cutting your way through the brushwood before you.

“When will the land pay for that expense of clearing?—The first crop, I reckon, will clear the whole expenses, and leave you something over, and you have the land cleared.

“Have you a statement by which you can show that?—I have:—

“Expense of putting in a Crop of Potatoes on new Land, the Ground being broken up.

	£	s.	d.
“Drilling furrows, planting potatoes, and covering ...	1	10	0
One hoeing	0	15	0
One earthing	0	15	0
Seed, 7 cwt., at 5 <i>s.</i> per cwt.	1	15	0
Digging and carrying, 10 <i>s.</i> per ton, at 7 tons per acre,	3	10	0
	<hr/>		
	£8	5	0

“I find that a fair average crop was between seven and a half and eight tons an acre; I have had considerably more and less than that; the whole expense, therefore, of putting in and digging out a crop of potatoes was 8*l.* 5*s.* an acre; the value of the crop, I think, is nearly 22*l.*; then you have your land thoroughly cleared, and in capital order for a crop of wheat; the whole expense is about 20*l.*, and you get a return of about 22*l.*; something must be allowed, of course, for the chances of not selling them well, and so on.

“What would be the expense and value of the next crop?—The next crop I have tried has been wheat, after the stumps were eradicated, and the ground broken up. We always break up the roots within a certain distance. The whole of the surface of the ground is completely laced with the roots; so that in walking over it you do not walk on the ground, but upon roots. After these are grubbed up, you can work a plough. I have found that a plough with four bullocks, a man and a boy, would plough an acre in two days. The following is an account of the expenses of a wheat-crop upon an acre of ground:—

	£	s.	d.
"A wheat crop. Two days, four bullocks, a man and a boy, ploughing one acre of ground ...	1	12	0
One bushel of seed wheat, 7s. ...	0	7	0
Harrowing and sowing ...	0	10	0
Two hoeings ...	0	8	0
Reaping and making ...	0	15	0
Carrying ...	0	10	0
Thrashing, 5s. per quarter ...	1	10	0
	£5	12	0

"Average of 16 acres of wheat in 1843, 44 bushels.

"My crop last year, after I thrashed it out, was, as near as possible, about 44 bushels to the acre; in some places, where I had seeds sent me from England, and I cultivated as a garden, the return was more than that.

"Has it been in some instances as much as 60 bushels?—More than that; but that was with a great deal of care taken in the cultivation; it was perfectly a garden; 44 bushels is the average of the 16 acres.

"What is the value of that?—I got 25*l.* a ton for the flour.

"What would that be per acre?—About 20*l.*: we paid very high for grinding, as much as 2*s.* a bushel.

"What profit should you have?—Nearly 14*l.* 10*s.* per acre."*

The following Lists of Prices Current, taken from the *Wellington Independent*, of March 8, 1848, will inform the Colonist as to the probable value of his produce:—

WELLINGTON MARKET.

Retail prices, March 7, 1848.

First flour, 16*s.* to 1*l.* per 100 lbs.; Bread, p 2 lb loaf, 5*d.*; beef, 7*d.* to 9*d.* p lb; mutton, 7*d.* to 9*d.* p lb; pork, 4*d.* to 6*d.* p lb; fowls, p pair, 3*s.* to 4*s.*; ducks, p pair, 4*s.* to 5*s.*; geese, 7*s.* each; turkeys, 7*s.* each; fresh butter, 1*s.* 6*d.* p lb; salt butter, 1*s.* 2*d.* p lb; potatoes, 5*s.* 6*d.* p cwt.; eggs, 1*s.* to 1*s.* 3*d.* p dozen; cheese, 1*s.* p lb; maize, 4*s.* p bush.; bran, 1*s.* 6*d.* p bush.; sugar, Manilla, 4*d.* to 6*d.* p lb; loaf sugar, 10*d.* to 1*s.* p lb; honey, 1*s.* 4*d.* p lb; ale, 2*s.* 6*d.* p gal.; ham and bacon, 6*d.* to 7*d.* p lb; firewood, per cord, 18*s.* to 1*l.* 5*s.*

* House of Commons' Report N. Z. 1844. No. 566. Evidence, pp. 180, 181; qq. 3395-3405.

WHOLESALE.

The prices of Spirits and Tobacco are in bond.

EXPORTS.

Ale, N. Z., per hhd., 4*l.* to 5*l.*; p barrel, 2*l.* 14*s.* to 3*l.*; bark, dyeing, p ton, 1*l.* 15*s.* to 2*l.* 10*s.*; do., tanning, 1*l.* 10*s.*; candles, N. Z., p doz. lb , 7*s.*; coals, N. Z., p ton, 1*l.* 5*s.*; cordage, N. Z., p cwt., 2*l.* to 2*l.* 10*s.*; flax, N. Z., p ton, unpacked, 10*l.* to 12*l.*; oil, black, in casks, p tun, 14*l.* to 15*l.*; sperm, do. do, 55*l.* to 60*l.*; oil butts, N. Z., p imperial tun, 3*l.* to 3*l.* 5*s.*; timber, sawn plank, p 100 feet, 10*s.*—scantling, do., 10*s.*—furniture wood, do., 15*s.* to 1*l.* 10*s.*; staves, N. Z., p 1200, 2*l.* to 2*l.* 10*s.*; shingles, N. Z., p 1000, 6*s.* to 8*s.*; whalebone, p ton, 135*l.* to 140*l.*—finners, 40*l.*; wheat, p bushel, 6*s.* to 7*s.*; wool, N. Z., p lb , 11*d.* to 1*s.*—do., lambs', 11*d.* to 1*s.* 6*d.*

IMPORTS.

Ale, Bass's, p dozen, 12*s.* to 12*s.* 6*d.*; arrack, p gallon, 4*s.* 6*d.*; blocks, each, 2*s.* 6*d.* to 13*s.* 6*d.*; beef, Sydney, p tierce, 4*l.* 10*s.*—prime India, do., 5*l.* to 5*l.* 10*s.*; blankets, per pair, 18*s.* to 1*l.* 18*s.*; brandy, first quality, p imperial gallon, 8*s.* 6*d.* to 10*s.*—Martell's, 11*s.*; brown stout, p hhd., 7*l.*— p barrel, 5*l.*; blacking, p dozen, 5*s.* to 15*s.*; candles, sperm, p lb , 2*s.* 6*d.* to 3*s.*—mould, 7½*d.*; dip, 6*d.*; canvass, p bolt, 2*l.* to 2*l.* 10*s.*; cigars, Manilla, No. 3, p 1000, 5*l.* 5*s.*—No. 4, 5*l.*—No. 5, 4*l.*; coffee, p lb , 8*d.*; cordage, English, p cwt., 2*l.* 10*s.* to 3*l.* 10*s.*; flour, p ton, 15*l.* to 17*l.*; gin, Hollands, in cask, p gallon, 7*s.*—case, 2 gallons ¼, 11*s.*—do., 4 gallons ¼, 1*l.* 4*s.*; iron, English bar, p ton, 12*l.* to 17*l.*—hoop, p ton, 18*l.* to 20*l.*; mustard, p dozen, 15*s.* to 1*l.* 5*s.*; nails, from 1 to 3 inches, p lb , 3¼*d.*—above 3 inches, 3*d.*; oil, linseed, p gal., 6*s.* 6*d.* to 7*s.*; oil butts, Gordon's or Mills', p imp. tun, 2*l.* 10*s.* to 3*l.* 5*s.*; paints, white lead, p cwt. 1*l.* 16*s.* to 2*l.*—black, 1*l.* 8*s.* to 1*l.* 12*s.*; pitch, per barrel, 1*l.*; pickles, assorted, p 1 dozen quarts, 1*l.* to 1*l.* 5*s.*; pork, Irish, p barrel, 4*l.* to 4*l.* 10*s.*; porter, Dunbar, in bottle, p dozen, 12*s.* to 13*s.*; prints, p piece, 9*s.* to 16*s.*; rice, p cwt., 18*s.* to 1*l.* 8*s.*; rum, B. P., p gallon, 6*s.* to 8*s.*; sacks, corn and flour, each, 2*s.*; salt, Liverpool, p ton, 4*l.* to 5*l.*—coarse, 6*l.*; sheet lead, per ton, 30*l.* to 35*l.*; slates, p 1000, according to size, 3*l.* 15*s.* to 6*l.* 15*s.*; soap, Hawes's London, p cwt., 1*l.* 8*s.* to 1*l.* 12*s.*—Liverpool, 1*l.* 5*s.* to 1*l.* 8*s.*—Sydney, 1*l.* 8*s.* to 1*l.* 10*s.* 7*d.*; sugar, Mauritius, p lb , 4*d.* to 5*d.*—refined loaf, p lb , 8*d.* to 9*d.*—Manilla, p cwt., 1*l.* 8*s.* to 1*l.* 10*s.*; tar, coal, p barrel, 1*l.*—Stockholm, 2*l.* to 2*l.* 10*s.*; tea, hyson skin, per chest, 3*l.* 10*s.* to 4*l.* 10*s.*—Congou, 6*l.* 10*s.* to 7*l.* 10*s.*; tobacco, negro-head, p lb , 6½*d.* to 10*d.*; turpentine, p gallon, 7*s.* to 8*s.*; vinegar, p gallon, 2*s.* 6*d.* to 3*s.*; wine, sherry, p dozen, 15*s.* to 2*l.*—port,

½ dozen, 18s. to 2l.; whisky, per gallon, 8s. to 10s.; cows, milch, 8l. to 12l.; mares, brood, 25l. to 35l.; working bullocks, per pair, 16l. to 22l.; sheep, each, 1l. to 1l. 5s.

RATES OF FREIGHT.

To the Colonies, per ton ...	£1	0	0	to	£1	10	0
To London	4	0	0	to	6	0	0

EXCHANGE.

Union Bank Bills, on London, ...	2 per cent. premium.
“ “ on the Colonies	2 per cent. premium.
Government Bills on Treasury ...	1 per cent. discount to par.
Commissariat do. do. ...	1 per cent. premium.

WAGES FOR LABOUR, (end of 1846.)

Domestic, ½ annum, with board and lodging,	£14 to £20.
Predial	25 to 45.
Trades, ½ diem	5s. to 7s.

The following were the Prices of First Quality Flour per ton of 2000lbs. in Wellington, from 1840 to 1846 inclusive.

Year.	January.	February.	March.	April.	May.	June.	July.	August.	September.	October.	November.	December.
1840	..	..	..	£50	£60	£55	£55	£50	£45	£45	£42	£40
1841	30	30	30	30	35	35	35	35	33	30	28	28
1842	30	29	31	30	34	26	28	28	28	27	23	23
1843	25	25	25	25	22 : 10	22 : 10	25	22 : 10	20	22	21	21
1844	20	20	20	20	20	15	16	15	15	14 : 10	14 : 5	20
1845	16	13 : 15	13 : 15	13 : 10	13 : 12	13	15	16	19	20	16	16
1846	15	15	15	15	17	19	23	25	23	24	18	15

YEARLY AVERAGE.

	£	s.	d.		£	s.	d.
1840	50	0	0	1844	17	10	0
1841	31	10	0	1845	15	10	0
1842	28	0	0	1846	18	13	4
1843	23	0	0				

The prices in 1840 and 1841 are taken from the quotations in the *Gazette*—from 1842 from the books of Messrs. Waitt and Tyser, and Mr. R. Waitt; second quality was often considerably lower—especially when first quality was very high, as in April and May 1840—the seconds were at £40.

In 1845 the prices were affected by a depreciated currency. In 1844 the debentures were not in sufficient quantity to cause any great depreciation—but in 1845 the importers had to pay from 5 to 10 per cent. to obtain bank notes wherewith to purchase remittance to Sydney. An allowance of 7½ per cent. is the least that can be made, which would reduce the average of the year (1845) to £14 10s. per ton.

The wheat grown in the valley of the Hutt is of so fine a quality, that it might probably be exported even to England with advantage.

There are as yet no accurate accounts as to the fitness of the climate for grinding and storing flour, in comparison with those of the great flour-exporting countries in North and South America.

Many other articles of profitable cultivation, however, suggest themselves. The equability of the climate, its remarkable freedom from electrical phenomena, and the abundance of pure water, are all circumstances favourable to successful brewing; and, as hops and barley both grow in great perfection, their cultivation would be exceedingly profitable if *Beer* should be made good enough and in sufficient quantities to supply the population of Australia, India, and South America, which is estimated to consume 100,000 barrels of malt liquor yearly, now sent all the way from England.

Should the curing of *Beef* and *Pork* be undertaken on a large scale, for the supply of whaling and other ships, artificial grasses and roots for the fattening of stock will form an important object of cultivation.

Horses are already supplied in considerable numbers from the Australian Colonies to India, for the use of the cavalry. There is every prospect of successful horse-breeding in New Zealand.

Conjectures only can be formed as to the probable success to be expected from the cultivation of the Mulberry, the Olive, or the *Phormium tenax*.

Sheep-farming has already been alluded to. The following is a statement of the quantities of Wool exported, from Wellington and Nelson together, during the under-mentioned years:—

Year.	No. of lbs.	Value.*
1843	9156	£402
1844	17,940	897
1845	25,135 and 7 bales	1270
1846	53,596 and 75 bales	3399
Total	105,827 and 82 bales	£5968

The following are some of the principal Statistical Details relating to the district of Wellington:—

I.—WHITE POPULATION, 1847.

Name of Place.	ADULTS.		UNDER 14 YEARS OF AGE.		TOTAL OF		Total No. of Persons.
	Males.	Fem.	Males.	Fem.	Males.	Fem.	
Wellington	784	647	576	566	1360	1213	2573
Evans' Bay & Ohiro	31	17	34	26	65	43	108
Karori	75	65	54	59	129	124	253
Wade's Town . . .	23	21	23	18	46	39	85
Kai Wara Road . .	44	27	20	15	64	42	106
Porirua Road . . .	81	58	75	69	156	127	283
River Hutt, Lowry Bay, Wai Nui-o-Mata, &c.	223	157	201	168	424	325	749
Porirua, &c.	55	6	21	14	76	20	96
Coast to Manawatu	67	41	23	27	90	54	128
	1383	1009	1027	962	2410	1971	4381

The above return does not include the population of Wairarapa, (see page 126,) or that of the whaling-stations belonging to Wellington, which amounts to 408 men and some women, (see page 193;) or the troops, which amount to 400 or 500 men between Wellington and Manawatu.

II.—RATE OF INCREASE.

Year.	Births.	Deaths.	Marriages.
1845	171	21	13
1846	210	30	19
1847	191	26	48
Three Years	572	77	80

* As declared at the Custom-house.

In the year 1845, the total population of the same districts of country, excepting that between Porirua and Manawatu, was 4074 souls, of whom was made the following

III.—CLASSIFICATION BY AGE, 1845.

Ages.	Male.	Fem.	Totals.	Adults.		
				Total.	Males.	Fem.
Under 6 years ..	471	505	976	2273	1280	993
6 years to 14 years	457	368	825			
14 „ 19 „	166	177	343			
19 „ 21 „	79	69	148			
21 „ 30 „	385	339	724			
30 „ 40 „	395	263	658			
40 „ 50 „	196	105	301			
50 „ 60 „	44	32	76			
Above 60	15	8	23			
Totals.....	2208	1866	4074			

Of the 2273 adults, the following was the

IV.—CLASSIFICATION BY MARRIAGE, 1845.

Locality.	Married Couples.			Unmarried Persons.				
	With families.	Without families.	Total	Bachelors.	Spin-ners.	Widow-ers.	Widows.	Total
Wellington . .	378	71	449	371	199	18	24	612
Pitone & the Hutt	106	18	124	94	28	6	4	132
Wade's Town .	15	2	17	7	2	1	—	10
Kaiwarawara .	19	3	22	35	13	—	—	48
Porirua Road .	36	4	40	24	10	1	—	35
Evans' & Lowry Bay, and Ohirō } Karori	8 32	— 4	8 36	6 17	4 12	— 4	— 1	10 34
Totals . . .	594	102	696	554	268	30	29	881

Those of the above population having a definite pursuit, were thus classed as to

V.—NATURE OF EMPLOYMENT, 1845.

Agricultural, including Labourers and Servants....	521
Domestic Servants	110
Trades	405
Mariners	55
Merchants and Storekeepers	99
Engaged in the Fisheries.....	300*
Medical Practitioners	13
Clergymen and Priests.....	6
Legal Profession	9
Other Professions and Trades	73
Employed by Government	29
Total.....	1620

VI.—EDUCATION, 1845.

Description of School.	Number of Scholars.		Total	Remarks.
	Boys	Girls		
1 Public, Wellington...	25	20	45	} Partly supported by the Bishop of New Zealand.†
1 Sunday School for } Aborigines	74	53	127	
1 Native†	20	—	20	} Do. by the Wesleyan Missionary Society.
1 Sunday (Europeans)	46	54	100	
3 Private	42	9	51	} Do. do. do.
1 Sunday, Porirua Road, } (Europeans)	23	17	40	
1 Do., Hutt, do. ..	35	25	60	
1 Day and Sunday, Karori	25	25	50	
	290	203	493	

* Estimated proportion for Wellington.

† Under this head, between January 1, 1845, and June 30, 1847, the bishop received Government Allowances amounting to 100*l.*, and expended 84*l.* 18*s.*—*New Zealand Church Almanac for 1848.*

‡ English language taught.

EDUCATION, 1847. (31st December).

13 Day Schools	366 Scholars.
6 Sunday „	336
5 Infant „	98
<hr/> 24	<hr/> 800

VII.—RELIGIOUS PERSUASIONS. 1845.

(ADULT POPULATION.)

Denomination.	Numbers.	Clergymen's Names.
Church of England ..	1240	Rev. Robert Cole*
Scotch Presbyterian..	433	Absent†
Roman Catholics	177	Rev. J. P. O'Reilly and M. Le Comte
Wesleyans.....	300	Rev. J. Watkin and S. Ironsides
Independents	64	Mr. Jonas Woodward
Baptists.....	40	
Hebrew Persuasion ..	19	
Total	<hr/> 2273	

VIII.—CHURCHES. 1845.†

Denomination.	Building, and where situated.	Number the Build- ing will contain.	Number of Persons generally attending.
Church of England	1 Church at Wellington	300	250
.. ..	1 Chapel, Pitone	50	45
Presbyterian	1 Church, Wellington	250	150
Wesleyan	1 Chapel, do.	300	130
.. ..	1 Do., Hutt	50	20
Independent	1 Do., Wellington	70	50
Roman Catholic	1 Do., do.	100	70

* Salary, yearly, £250.

+ (1848) Rev. John Inglis.

† In addition to these, in 1845, there were two native chapels of the Church of England, one at Wellington, the other at Pitone; and

IX.—ABORIGINAL POPULATION.

No very accurate census has been taken, nor is it easy to take, as the native population is never long stationary. Two different estimates may be compared. A, is that given for 1845 by Mr. Grimstone, Secretary to the then Superintendent of the Southern District.* B, is that made in 1841-42, and since verified and corrected by Mr. Edmund Halswell, then Protector of Aborigines, and therefore more likely to be correct.

Locality.	A.	B.
Te Aro	150	128
Kumutoto	40	15
Pipitea	160	134
Ngahauranga	50	48
Pitone	150	97
Waiwetu	90	59
Hutt.....	350+	
Wairarapa	250	300
Ohariu	30	350
Porirua.....	181	450
Pukerua	40	150
Pari Pari	30	100
Wainui.....	100	100
Te Uruhi	50	100
Wareroa	70	
Waikanae.....	469	600
Otaki	532	400
Waikawa	118	150
Ohau	219	100
Horowenua	158	100
Manawatu	360	3400
Rangitikei	490	400
Total.....	4087	7181

the chapel of the Church of England at Johnsonville already referred to at page 110, which is capable of holding from 150 to 200 persons. In the chapel at Karori (see page 98), Divine service is performed on alternate Sundays, by the Wesleyan and Independent ministers.

* In a book published by him at Wellington in 1847, called "Statistics of the Southern Settlements," from which many of the most valuable tables, both before and after this, have been extracted.

† These were the invading rebels, since expelled, (see page 83).

Mr. Grimstone states that, of these numbers, he reckons the males to amount to three-fifths; and that half the males, or 1235 men, are capable of bearing arms.

Mr. Halswell's estimate amounts to 2393 fighting men.*

X.—CRIME. 1844-5-6.

1. SUPREME COURT.

Year.	Indictments.			Persons tried.			Acquitted.	Sentenced		
	Found.	Ignored.	Total.	European.	Natives.	Total.		To Imprisonment.	To Transportation.	Total.
1844	16	4	20	16	—	16	6	10	—	10
1845	17	5	22	20	1	21	11	8	2	10
1846	27	3	30	28	2	30	11	14	5†	19

Nature of Crimes, 1846.—Stealing in a dwelling-house, 11—Stealing, 5—Burglary, 4—Larceny, 4—Piracy, 1—Assault, with intent to commit a rape, 1—Rape, 1—Receiving stolen property, 2—Unnatural offence, 1—Escaping from Gaol, 2—Keeping a disorderly house, 1. Total, 33.‡

2. CASES DISPOSED OF AT THE POLICE OFFICES.

Year.	Cases.	Nature.		Result.	
		Against Person.	Against Property.	Acquitted.	Convicted.
1844	76	44	34	38	40
1845	150	67	83	85	65
1846	232	184	48	103	129

* Appendix to Report of Lords' Committee on Emigration, 1848.

† One (a native) afterwards pardoned by the Governor.

‡ Including three crimes committed and tried at Nelson.

XI.—CIVIL CAUSES.

1. SUPREME COURT.*

Plaints entered, and writs of Summons issued irrespective of writs issued for Fines in each year.	Causes in which issue made up.	Causes entered for trial.	Sums sued for, irrespective of Suits in Equity.	Fees.
1844, 116	52	38	£30,941 17 11	£331 17 0
1845, 64	21	33	11,602 15 2	239 4 6
1846, 26	13	17	6,851 0 6	155 3 6

2. COURTS OF REQUESTS.

Year.	Summonses on Debts.				Total.
	Not exceeding 40s.	40s. to £5.	£5 to £10.	Above £10.	
1845	135	96	65	54	350
1846	102	60	39	49	250

* This is for Wellington and Nelson together. The return does not distinguish the number of cases at each. Much the larger proportion would certainly be at Wellington.

XII.—AGRICULTURAL RETURNS.

1. LAND IN CROP, ETC. (Dec. 1847.)

Name of Place.	Acres of land cleared up to 1847.	Acres of land cleared in 1847.	Acres of Wheat.	Acres of Oats.	Acres of Barley.	Acres of Potatoes.	Gardens, &c.	Pastures.	Total under crop.
River Hutt, Lowry Bay, and Wai Nui-o-Mata. }	980½	70½	193	70½	70	128½	21½	200½	684½
Porirua Road.....	363½	21½	47½	38	5	26½	26½	136½	279½
Kai Wara and Wade's Town	73	14½	19	18½	1	3	18½	99½	159½
Karori.....	199½	48½	60½	28	11½	32½	28½	52	213½
Ohiro, Evans Bay, and the Town	365½	..	20½	4	3½	3	76	231½	338½
	1982½	155½	340½	159½	91	194	171½	719½	1676

To this must be added the land cropped by the Natives round the harbour; 181 acres wheat, 4 acres oats, and 200 acres of potatoes.

2. ESTIMATE (BY MR. GRIMSTONE) OF LAND CLEARED BY NATIVES (UP TO END OF 1845) IN THE WELLINGTON DISTRICT.

	Acres.
" Ohiro.....	165
Karori	132
Town Belt.....	45
Kaiwarawara.....	60
Harbour District and Wainui-o-mata	250
Hutt (cultivated by resident Natives).....	150
Ohariu	250
Porirua District	600
Pukerua	200
Pari Pari	140
Wainui	450
Waikanae	1000
Otaki	1500
Ohau.....	750
Manawatu.....	2000

Total of Acres cleared 6692

" Of this amount, there are, between Wellington and the Manawatu, no less than 500 acres of wheat in crop by the Natives, and one-third of the remainder in potatoes, &c. &c."

3. LIVE STOCK OWNED BY RESIDENTS IN WELLINGTON DISTRICT,
AND RUNNING AT THE UNDER-MENTIONED PLACES. (Dec. 1847.)

Name of Place.	Horses.	Cattle.	Sheep.	Goats.	Asses & Mules.
In the Town and outskirts..	148	505	2709	251	6
Owned by Natives in the } Town	51	..	..	..	1
Karori	5	81	..	42	3
Porirua Road	13	154	53	28	3
Wade's Town & Kai Wara	1	88	200	11	..
Hutt District to Okiwi	86	222	10	133	..
Porirua to Manawatu	76	517	1760	158	3
Kapiti and Mana	1	14	1100	150	..
Orongorongo and the Heads	5	160	1400	38	3
Cape Terawiti .....	..	32	500	..	..
Wairarapa	79	1607	15,011	100	2
Middle Island	115	760	12,000	..	1
Imported since the above } returns were taken }	82	1170	1,609	..	..
	662	5611	36,352	911	22

The Natives beyond the Town are owners of fifty-nine horses, twelve head of cattle, and twenty sheep, which are included in the above returns.

XIII.—BUILDINGS IN TOWN, (end of 1845.)

Brick Houses	50
Wooden Do.	417
Clay Do.	213
Stores (mostly brick)	38
Public Houses	12

Buildings not included in the above account:—Six places of Public Worship (two of brick), one Gaol (brick), one Bank, one Custom-house, one Post-office, two Barracks (one of brick,) and two Flour-mills (one a Windmill, and the other worked by Steam), each with one pair of stones. There is also a small Factory, with six hand-loom, for weaving the fibre of the *Phormium tenax* into coarse sacking, for which there is a considerable demand at Sydney, as well as on the spot. There are also several rope-walks, which work up the same material; several well-managed brick-kilns, and a lime-kiln; two or three small tanneries; and a candle-manufactory.

XIV.—PORT OF WELLINGTON.

1. IMPORTS AND EXPORTS.

Year.	Value.						Beyond Seas.				Coastwise.	
	Imports.			Exports.			Inwards.		Outwards.		In-wards	Out-wards.
	£	s.	d.	£	s.	d.	Ships	Tons.	Ships	Tons.	Tons.	Tons.
1841	53,626	0	10	14,447	0	0	74	18,922	48	13,518	9,141	11,510
1842	112,592	7	7	12,156	0	0	80	17,337	75	16,714	10,996	13,147
1843	87,885	5	10	29,059	0	0	41	9,020	51	10,899	10,679	10,315
1844	36,175	5	0	30,273	2	6	44	6,899	44	6,899	8,285	9,188
1845	43,221	2	10	26,614	1	6	40	5,382	40	5,382	6,464	6,956
1846	59,415	2	2	31,281	0	0	47	8,362	44	7,326	5,948	6,847
1847	*			*			57	11,295	48	9,658	8,142	8,721
Totals	392,915	4	3	143,830	4	0	383	77,217	350	70,396	59,655	66,684

2.—VESSELS REGISTERED.

Year.	Number.				Tonnage.			
1841	2	..	..	..	32
1842	9	..	..	..	138
1843	2	..	..	..	71
1844	4	..	..	..	61
1845	5	..	..	..	98
1846	—	—
1847	7†	..	..	..	322

* No return yet made.

† Of these, one of 120 tons was built at Jacob's River, in Foveaux's Strait, and another of 105 tons at Port Nicholson. The former, with another vessel about the same size, brought from Sydney, are fitted out from Wellington for the whale-fishery.

3.—SHORE FISHERIES DEPENDING ON THE PORT.

A. Season ended Nov. 30, 1847.

Name of Station.	Owner of Station.	Tuns of Black Oil.	Tons of Whalebone.	No. of Boats.	No. of Men.
<i>Middle Island (east coast).</i>		tuns gall.	tons cwt.		
Banks' Peninsula.....	Price.....	65	2 0	3	27
" "	Wetherell..	..	..	1	7
" "	Woods	53	2 2	2	18
Moerangi.....	Hughes ....	..	..	2	16
Waikouaiti.....	Jones. ....	..	..	2	16
Island Bay.....	Rhodes....	30	15	2	18
Kaikora	Fitzherbert	23	12	3	30
"	Ames.....	45	1 7	2	20
"	Fyfe	35*	1 10	3	30
<i>Cook's Strait.</i> Cloudy Bay	Doherty ..	4 60	2	3	38
Queen Charlotte Sound	Guard ....	..	..	2	14
" "	Thoms	22	10	2	14
Kapiti	Gillett	19	1 0	2	16
Koroīwa (near Mana) ..	Wilson	10	8	1	8
Taranaki.....	Brown	8	8	2	15
"	Rundell ..	..	..	2	13
<i>East Coast, Hawke's Bay and its vicinity.</i>					
Cape Kidnapper	Morris	18	12	3	20
Wairoa	Lewis	24	18	2	18
Waikokopu.....	Morrison ..	28	1 9	3	20
Mawai	Babbington	12	5	3	20
Long Point.....	Ellis	38	18	3	20
Portland Island.....	Mansfield..	26	13	3	20
		460 60	15 9	51	405

* 7 tuns sperm oil also taken.

B. Summary of Five Years.

Year.	Tuns Oil.	Tons Bone.	No. of Men employed.	No. of Boats employed.	REMARKS.
1843	1,289	65	768	91	<i>a</i> Of this 33 tuns were sperm. <i>b</i> Do. 13 do. do. <i>c</i> Do. 7 do. do. The proportion for the former years cannot accurately be ascertained.
1844	1,130	48	673	85	
1845 <i>a</i>	970	36 : 10	774	91	
1846 <i>b</i>	818½	28 : 8	618	69	
1847 <i>c</i>	467½	15 : 9	408	51	
Totals	4,675	193 : 7			

During these five years, the value of this produce at Wellington has varied thus:—

Black Oil, from £19 to £15 per tun.

Sperm „ „ 52 „ 60 „ „

Whalebone „ 140 „ 110 „ ton.

The total value for the five years, may therefore be fairly estimated at 100,000*l*.

4.—CUSTOMS' DUTIES,* 1848.

British Spirits	5 <i>s</i> . per gallon.
Foreign Spirits	5 <i>s</i> . per gallon.
Cigars, Cheroots, and Snuff.....	2 <i>s</i> . per lb.
Tobacco, manufactured.....	1 <i>s</i> . per lb.
unmanufactured	9 <i>d</i> . per lb.
On all guns, or weapons of any description, gun- powder, shot, lead, or munitions of war	} 30 per cent.†
Wines	
Ale, beer, porter, cider and perry.....	20 per cent.
On all other goods, wares, and merchandise, of Bri- tish produce or manufacture	} 15 per cent.
On all other goods, wares, and merchandise, of Foreign produce or manufacture.....	
	10 per cent.
	12½ per cent.

Free of Duty.

Glass bottles, imported full.

Bullion and coin.

Horses, mules, asses, sheep, cattle, and all other live animals.

Seeds, bulbs, and plants.

Printed books, (not being account books.)

Spirits and Tobacco under Bond at Wellington, January 1, 1848:—Brandy, 5892 gallons; Rum, 10,196 do.; Gin, 3018 do; Whisky, 91 do.; Liqueurs, 6 do.; Tobacco, manufactured, 50,686 lbs.; ditto, unmanufactured, 3660 lbs.

XV.—FEES IN THE NATURE OF TAXES.

A Fee of Forty Pounds sterling per annum is demanded for an Auctioneer's Licence, under the Ordinance of Council, No. 10, of Session III., 1844.

For every Publican's Licence Thirty Pounds sterling per annum, authorized by the 14th clause of the

* Levied under an Ordinance of the Legislative Council of New Zealand, No. 14, of Session VII., 1846.

† The importation of gunpowder, or any munition of war, except under certain restrictions therein set forth, is forbidden by Ordinance No. 1, of Session VI., 1845, still in operation.

Ordinance of Council, No. 12, of Session II., 1842. Provisional Licences granted by any two Justices of the Peace in a new Settlement, Forty Pounds sterling per annum, authorized by the 33rd clause of same Ordinance.

Under the Amended Licensing Ordinance, Session III., No. 21, 1844, "Bush Licences" are granted for the convenience of Travellers, at rates fixed by the Governor and Executive Council, according to the traffic of the place.

A Fee of Twenty Shillings is demanded on the issue of a Crown Grant, under the authority of the "*Fees on Crown Grants Ordinance*," No. 11, of Session VII., 1846.

Fees are also authorized by various Ordinances to be levied on transactions in the Courts of Justice or Sheriff's Office, and in the Land Claims Office, and on the Registration of Deeds.

XVI.—GOVERNMENT REVENUE & EXPENDITURE, 1846.*

RECEIPTS.

Ordinary.

	£	s.	d.
Customs	6509	10	5
Fees and Fines of Supreme Court	165	4	6
" " Police " 	98	13	0
Fees of the Court of Requests†			
Fees on the Registration of Deeds	25	0	4
Fees on the issue of Crown Grants.....	36	10	6
Droits of the Crown	6	3	6
Publicans' Licences	460	13	5
Auctioneers' do.	160	0	0
Property Rate (arrears)	0	7	6
Total Ordinary	7462	3	2

* For Accounts of Revenue and Expenditure during 1847, and of Revenue since 1840, see Appendix B.

† The Fees are retained by the Commissioner under special authority.

RECEIPTS—*continued.*

<i>Incidental.</i>		£	s.	d.
Surcharges recovered		17	15	1
Balance of advances made to officers under Imprest		155	8	1
Total Incidental		173	3	2
<i>In aid of Revenue.</i>				
Remittances from Colonial Treasurer		4000	0	0
Repayment by Police Magistrate at Akaroa, of a sum remitted him in excess of amount required to meet expenses of department		100	0	0
Proceeds of Bills drawn by the Lieutenant-Governor on the British Treasury		17,500	0	0
Special Debenture Certificates received from Colonial Treasurer		71	0	1
Total in aid of Revenue		21,671	0	1
Total Receipts		29,306	6	5

DISBURSEMENTS.

<i>Civil Establishment.</i>		£	s.	d.
Estab. of his Excellency Lieutenant Governor		65	6	0
Dep. of his Hon. the Superintendent		1036	10	9
„ the Sub-Treasurer		126	11	3
„ Customs		584	4	3
„ Harbour Master		310	11	1
„ Medical Officer		160	0	0
„ Assistant-Surveyor		458	4	0
„ Protector of Aborigines		177	14	10
Government Brig “Victoria”		196	8	7
Total Civil		3115	10	9
<i>Judicial.</i>				
Supreme Court		1383	19	7
Sheriff and Gaols		565	14	8
Courts of Requests		269	0	0
Registrar of Deeds		46	16	1
Coroners		24	0	6
Police		3382	11	11
Crown Prosecutions and Witnesses		74	17	0
Total Judicial		5746	19	9

DISBURSEMENTS—continued.

Public Works and Buildings.

	£	s.	d.
Erecting powder magazine on Mount Cook	78	15	0
Towards erection of Native Hospital	150	0	0
" " Porirua Barracks.....	600	0	0
Roads and Bridges	4840	0	0
Total Works and Buildings	5668	15	0
<i>Militia and Works of Defence</i>	4465	10	5

Miscellaneous.

Advances to his Honour the Superintendent for defraying petty expenses	294	16	0
Interpreters	177	0	6
Surcharges repaid.....	6	0	0
Stationery, Printing, and Office Furniture	179	9	6
Travelling expenses to officers on special duty	54	6	8
Commission on negotiation of Treasury Bills	875	0	0
Presents to Natives	125	9	6
Supplies to persons plundered on the Hutt	103	1	10
Purchase, &c., gun-boat for Porirua Harbour	100	17	11
Repayment excess Property-rate levied	3	10	0
" advances by Union Bank of Australia ..	216	0	0
" surcharge Spirit Licence	10	0	0
Purchase of Land for Natives in exchange for cultivations on the river Hutt	350	0	0
Interest paid on Funded Debentures	31	18	5
Cash Balance (being one-fourth) paid in exchange of old for Funded Debentures	1138	16	3
Gratuity to military mess, Porirua, for messing civil officers.....	50	0	0
Advances in aid of other Sub-treasuries	2810	4	7
" " Military Chest	*1000	0	0
Debenture Certificates issued	37	17	1
Total Miscellaneous	7564	8	3
Total Disbursements	£26,561	4	2

The above Statement includes the arrears of previous years.

It also includes the Receipts and Disbursements of "Petre." See next Chapter.

There are three Cemeteries, all in most picturesque situations, and remote from any part of the town where

* Repaid by the Commissariat to the Auckland Treasury.

many dwellings are likely to be erected. The largest the Cemetery used by all Protestants, both White and Native. The Roman Catholics and the Jews have each a separate piece of ground allotted for the burial of their dead.

There is a Mechanics' Institute, which is well supported, has a tolerable Library and collection of scientific articles, and occasionally is well attended, to hear a lecture from some of the more learned Colonists.

A Branch of the Union Bank of Australia affords some assistance in the transaction of money affairs, and supplies the paper currency of the Settlements. In a succeeding Chapter, there is a short account of the manner in which this company, having a complete monopoly of such business, manages its affairs in New Zealand. The office is at a neat wooden house in Manners-street. The present manager is Mr. A. Macdonald.

There is also a Savings Bank, which has been in operation for two or three years, and is managed by Directors, consisting of the principal Colonists of all classes.

STATEMENT OF THE WELLINGTON SAVINGS BANK, JULY 5, to
OCTOBER 4, 1847:

Number of accounts brought forward	99		
" " opened during the above period,	19		
			<hr/>
			118
Number of accounts closed during the above period,	12		
			<hr/>
Carried forward	106		
58 accounts have been opened by individuals (<i>seven</i> <i>of them being aborigines</i>) which 58 accounts now amount to the sum of.....	£751	4	8
40 accounts have been opened by parties in trust for others in the sum of.....	208	10	3
8 accounts have been opened for public funds in the names of friendly and benevolent societies, &c., in the sum of	288	16	7
			<hr/>
106	£1248	11	6

STATEMENT OF WELLINGTON SAVINGS BANK—*continued.*

Assets of the Bank.

Debentures on hand bearing 8 per cent. interest, reckoned at par	£1242	3	9
Cash in Union Bank of Australia.....	192	14	6
	<hr/>		
	1434	18	3
Deduct liabilities as above.....	1248	11	7
	<hr/>		
Nominal balance in favour of the bank.....	£186	6	9

E. and O. E.

Wellington, Oct. 4, 1847. (Signed) J. WOODWARD, Actuary.

BALANCE SHEET OF THE WELLINGTON SAVINGS BANK FOR THE
QUARTER ENDING OCT. 4, 1847.*Dr.*

To balance of deposits as per last report	£1178	16	11	
„ amount of weekly de- posits received as under:—				
1847. July 12, week end- ing this day	£27	5	6	
19 „ „	7	10	6	
26 „ „	24	18	0	
Aug. 2 „ „	0	8	6	
9 „ „	12	17	0	
16 „ „	43	8	6	
23 „ „	59	4	0	
30 „ „	25	8	6	
Sept. 6 „ „	18	0	0	
13 „ „	33	5	0	
20 „ „	2	8	0	
27 „ „	0	5	0	
Oct. 4 „ „	6	10	6	
Interest added to various amounts withdrawn ..	3	8	0	
	<hr/>	264	17	0
				£1443 13 11
To balance of interest as per last report	3	16	0	
Less amount added to accounts with- drawn	3	8	0	
	<hr/>			0 8 0
				<hr/>
				£1444 1 11
				<hr/>

BALANCE SHEET OF WELLINGTON SAVINGS BANK—*continued.*
Cr.

By amounts withdrawn as under :

1847. July 26, week end-

ing this day £22 2 10

Aug. 2 " " 194 16 5

16 " " 1 10 0

30 " " 3 0 0

Sept. 20 " " 11 3 0

Oct. 4 " " 22 10 2

£195 2 5

Nominal Value.

Cost.

By funded debentures on hand

as per last report .. £1342 3 9 1150 0 0

Less 2 deposited in Co-

lonial Treasury against

cash received by autho-

rity from the Governor 100 0 0 100 0 0

1050 0 0

By charges paid Actuary

one quarter 1 6 5 0

By cash in Union Bank

of Australia 192 14 6

£1242 3 9

£1444 1 11

(Signed)

GEO. MOORE, }
 GEO. HUNTER, } *Auditors.*

A wooden building near the Bank, erected by subscription, is called the Exchange. The newspapers of the neighbouring Colonies are to be found there; but except for public meetings, balls, or horticultural shows, the building is rarely used. The Council of the first Wellington Corporation used to meet in it, in the years 1842-3.

There are two or three Hotels, in which very good accommodation is to be had. The principal one is "Barrett's," a large wooden two-storied house, opposite the Public Jetty, and in the centre of the town. Attached to this Hotel, is a roomy, well-fitted subscription billiard-room, and a large apartment above, used for balls, and the meetings of the Freemasons' Lodge.

At the Te Aro, or southern end of the town, is the "Ship," a tolerably good Hotel. There are several other Taverns and public-houses scattered along the main thoroughfares. At one of these a Lodge of Odd Fellows meets; at another, Jenkins's "New Zealander," there are livery stables.

Besides the Stores of the wholesale merchants, there are many miscellaneous shops, in which almost anything may be bought. A few, however, confine themselves to a distinct business; such as butchers, bakers, fishmongers, (who also deal in greengrocery,) plumbers and glaziers, tailors, shoemakers, carpenters, and blacksmiths. There is also a hair-cutter and perfumer, a watch-maker, a shop for grocery on one side and haberdashery on the other, and there was, not long ago, a cigar shop. But the great show-shop of the young town has long been "Medical Hall," which parades its red and blue bottles, vases of tooth-brushes, and heaps of sponges, phials, mortars, and hieroglyphic labels. The visitor is supplied, too, with excellent soda water, made on the premises, and the windows are filled with Cockney puffs of ointments and horse medicines. The doctor's shop being opposite the Public Jetty, and situated between the principal Hotel and the Garrison Mess-room, is a lounge much frequented by the few idlers of the town, and by the rural residents on their necessary visits.

A wooden building, near the Jetty, is used for the purposes of the Law Courts. In New Zealand, both barristers and solicitors are allowed to combine the business of those two separate professions in England. The gentlemen so acting at Wellington in March, 1848, were Messrs. Brandon, Cheesman, Fox (Attorney-General), Hart, King, Ross, and D. Wakefield (Crown Solicitor and Counsel for the natives).

A Horticultural Society has been established since 1841; which receives seeds of the best kinds from that of London, and distributes them among its members.

This Society also holds shows of fruits, flowers, and vegetables, every three months, and gives small prizes for excellence in these as well as in the cultivation of cottagers' gardens. Its officers are as follows: *Patron*—The Bishop of New Zealand; *President*—Colonel Wakefield; *Secretary*—J. E. Featherstone, M. D.; *Treasurer*—R. Stokes.

The Garrison Mess-room, formerly the house of the Wakefield Club, stands on the beach road, close to Barrett's Hotel and Medical Hall.

There is a very good Cricket Club at Wellington; and this really English game is carried on with great vigour, the different distinctions of civilians, military, officials, &c., affording some emulation in matches.

A festival is held at Wellington on or about the 22nd January in each year, to commemorate the Anniversary of the day on which the first Colonists landed at Pitone. A subscription is entered into a few weeks previous to the day: a committee is appointed to expend the fund, and prizes are given for horse and foot races, rifle-shooting, wrestling, and other rural sports; rowing and sailing matches, &c.; and one or two public balls are given on this and the succeeding days. A feast of rice and sugar, or something of the kind, and prizes for canoe and horse-racing, are also provided for the natives resident in the town and neighbourhood.

Two Newspapers are published, each twice a-week. These are the "*Wellington Spectator and Cook's Strait Guardian*," and the "*Wellington Independent*." At the two printing-offices, stationery of every kind is sold. At the office of the former newspaper has been published yearly, since 1843, the "*Cook's Strait Almanac*," from which numerous extracts have been made in this book. The following were the contents of the 1848 number:—

"Preface, Signal Station, Duties, Principal Articles of the Calendar, Almanack, Gardeners' Calendar, Latitude, Longitude, &c., of Port Nicholson and Nelson, Table of Port Establishment of the

principal Harbours, &c., of New Zealand, Table for finding High-water, Right Ascension, Declination, and Meridian passage of the principal Stars in the Southern Hemisphere, Eclipses, New Zealand Itinerary, List of Whaling Stations, List of Ordinances passed in 1847, Principal Occurrences of 1847, Military and Naval Directory, Directory for the Southern Settlements, Weather Table, &c., Statistics, &c."

A few numbers are published in London by Longman and Co., of Paternoster-row.

The Postal arrangements for New Zealand are exceedingly imperfect, in consequence of the general defectiveness of our regulations for Maritime and Colonial postage, and also of the absence of any regular packets between New Zealand and any other part of the world. To and from England direct, however, the greater number of ships arrive at or depart from Wellington; and these, although varying in regularity with the progress of emigration and of commerce, afford the most certain mode of conveyance. Next best, is to send letters *viâ Sydney*, between which port and London there is a regular line of mail packets (sailing-vessels). The letters have still to find their way as they best can between Sydney and any port in New Zealand. Letters sent from New Zealand to the ports of India by vessels happening to sail thither, generally arrive in England safely and expeditiously by the Overland Mail; but letters cannot be sent by that route from England, as there are no arrangements for forwarding mails from India to the Australian Colonies. A similar facility exists in favour of letters sent from New Zealand to England *viâ Valparaiso*; but these must be directed to the care of some agent at the latter place; as our Consul there is in no way empowered to facilitate and enforce the sending on of any mail-bag by the Steamers to Panama. On the contrary, the master of the ship may, if he chooses, keep the mail-bag for months on the coast of South America, and take it round Cape Horn after all. It would be almost hopeless to send a letter to New Zealand *viâ*

Panama and Valparaiso ; because, owing to the prevalence of the westerly winds in the Southern Hemisphere, comparatively few sailing vessels return to the eastward, and those that do are obliged to shape a very circuitous course. The mails between the different ports of New Zealand are carried, from time to time, by such vessels as happen to be sailing; and the only regular mail yet established is one which is carried every fortnight *over-land*, partly by the patrols of the mounted police, and partly by natives, between Wellington and Auckland, by way of Petre and New Plymouth.

Owing to all these irregularities, the cost of sending a letter from England to any part of New Zealand is composed of one or more of a number of varying rates, such as the ship-letter rate, for one or two voyages as the case may be; the Colonial rate of India, or of some other Colony through which the letter may have passed; the Overland Mail rate; and lastly, the local postage rate in New Zealand. An ordinary ship-letter, carried the whole distance from London to Wellington in the same private ship, is charged at the enormous rate of eight-pence at each end, or one shilling and four-pence in the whole for every half-ounce weight. Newspapers are also charged at this rate by private ships, and this charge amounts to a virtual prohibition of them in the Colony. At one time piles of English newspapers used to lie in the post-office in Wellington, the postage remaining unpaid by those to whom they were directed; now they are sent as parcels. It seems strange, that with a postage system in England of which we are so justly proud, the conveyance of letters from England to her Colonies, and between the Colonies themselves, should be so grossly mismanaged.

An Omnibus was started early in 1847, to run twice a week from the Ship Hotel at Te Aro, Wellington, to Aglionby and back. The distance is about nine miles; the fare either way was four shillings.

The following is a brief Directory for Wellington on some points not above mentioned:—

<i>Lieutenant-Governor of New</i>	}	*John Edw. Eyre, Esq.
<i>Munster</i>		
<i>Private Secretary</i>		W. Gisborne, Esq.
<i>Native Secretary</i>		H. T. Kemp, Esq.
<i>Colonial Secretary</i>		* Alfred Domett, Esq.
<i>„ Treasurer and Re-</i>	}	* Hon. H. W. Petre.
<i>ceiver General</i>		
<i>Officer Commanding Troops</i> ...		Lieut. Colonel W. A. M'Cleverty.
<i>Judge of Supreme Court</i>		H. S. Chapman, Esq.
<i>Registrar do. & Commissioner</i>	}	R. R. Strang, Esq.
<i>of Court of Requests</i> ...		
<i>Attorney General</i>		William Fox, Esq.
<i>Crown Solicitor, and Legal</i>	}	Daniel Wakefield, Esq.
<i>Adviser and Standing</i>		
<i>Counsel for the Natives</i>		
<i>Sheriff & Resident Magistrate</i>		Henry St. Hill, Esq.
<i>Justices of the Peace</i>		Lieut. Colonel W. A. M'Cleverty; Lieut. Col. C. E. Gold, commanding 65th regt.; Major J. Patience, 65th regt.; Major A. F. W. Wyatt, 65th regt.; Major C. A. Arney, 58th regt.; Captain G. F. Murray, 65th regt.; Captain A. H. Russell, 58th regt.; Henry St. Hill, Esq.; The Hon. H. W. Petre; P. D. Hogg, R. R. Strang, A. E. M'Donogh, D. S. Durie, A. R. Chetham Strode, H. T. Kemp, W. Wakefield, C. Clifford, W. M. Smith, W. Swainson, F.R.S., E. Daniell, A. M'Donald, R. Baker, W. Hickson, W. Fitzherbert, A. Ludlam, A. Hort, A. Domett, and W. Fox, Esqs.
<i>Inspector of Police</i>		D. S. Durie, Esq.
<i>Deputy do.</i>		A. Chetham Strode, Esq.
<i>Government Surveyor</i>		T. Fitzgerald, Esq.

* Members of Executive Council,

<i>Collector of Customs</i>	P. D. Hogg, Esq.
<i>Coroner and Colonial Surgeon</i>	J. Fitzgerald, Esq., M.D.
<i>Postmaster</i>	J. Hoggard, Esq.
<i>Harbour-Master</i>	Charles Sharp, Esq.
<i>Principal Agent of the New Zealand Company</i>	Col. W. Wakefield.
<i>Accountant to do.</i>	J. Kelham, Esq.

There are, besides the Colonial surgeon, two practitioners with the degree of M.D., and three others.

The Colonial Hospital at Wellington was opened on the 15th of September, 1847. The building is two stories high, of brick plastered with Roman cement outside, the plan being made for the addition of two large wings. It is now capable of holding fourteen, or in case of emergency, eighteen patients. From the date of opening up to the 19th of January, 1848, thirty-one patients were admitted, of whom eight were Europeans, and twenty-three natives. Of these, two Europeans and three natives died; two Europeans and fourteen natives (one since dead) were discharged cured. Seventy native and eight European out-patients also received medical treatment during the same space of time; of whom one, a native child, died, and sixty-one were cured. Dr. Fitzgerald, at the end of his very interesting Official report* on the 21st of January, 1848, says, in a note:—

“The fevers amongst the natives do not appear to be of a contagious character, but generally the effect of inflammatory action in some part of the body. There are very few cases amongst the white people. . . . With the exception of the late prevailing epidemic, influenza, and subsequently hooping cough, this climate is, generally speaking, healthy for Europeans. The amount and nature of the diseases amongst the native population is no criterion of the climate as regards the white people, for there are causes operating among the natives which fully explain the difference of effect on the two populations.”

* New Zealand Government Gazette, (Province of New Munster,) vol. i. No. 7, Feb. 2nd, 1848, page 31.

There are twelve Mercantile Firms, one Custom-house Agent, and four Auctioneers.

The *New Zealand Pacific Lodge of Freemasons*, No. 758, under the Grand Lodge of England, holds its meetings on the third Wednesday in every month, at the Masonic Hall, adjoining Barrett's Hotel.

The *Independent Order of Odd Fellows, Manchester Unity, Britannia Lodge*, holds meetings on every Monday evening.

The *Loyal Antipodean Lodge* holds meetings on every Wednesday evening.

MILITARY.

The *Commander-in-Chief*, His Excellency Major-General G. D. Pitt, K. H., resides at Auckland.

Officer Commanding the Troops in the Province of New Munster, Lieutenant-Colonel W. A. McCleverty, who is also *Deputy-Quarter-Master-General*.

Major of Brigade, Captain E. M. O'Connell, 99th regiment.

There is a Staff-surgeon at Wellington; and a Staff-assistant surgeon at Wanganui.*

There are two Deputy-assistant-commissary generals at Wellington, and one at Wanganui.

There are also a captain and lieutenant of the Royal Artillery, a captain of Royal Engineers, and a clerk of the Ordnance Department, quartered in the province of New Munster.

The head-quarters of the 65th regiment, Lieut.-Col. C. E. Gold commanding, are at Wellington, and also a detachment of the 58th regiment, under the command of Major C. A. Arney.

There are detachments of both regiments at Wanganui, under the command of Major A. F. W. Wyatt, 65th regiment; and also at the different stockades at Porirua and in the valley of the Hutt.

The precise number of men composing these garrisons is not known: probably from 800 to 1000.

NAVAL.

New Zealand has been recently made a separate Naval Station. Captain Erskine has been appointed to its command, and is now on his way thither in the *Havana*, 22 guns. It is supposed that Auckland will be made the head-quarters of the Naval Station; but at least one man-of-war is generally stationed at Wellington.

* See next Chapter.

The other men-of-war on the station in March, 1848, were the following:—

H. M. Steamer *Inflexible*, 6 guns, Commander J. C. Hoseason. Gone to Bombay to be docked, but will be replaced by another steamer from the East Indian Station.

H. M. S. *Dido*, 26 guns, Captain John Balfour Maxwell. At Auckland.

H. M. S. *Calliope*, 26 guns, Captain Edward Stanley. At Auckland.

H. M. S. *Racehorse*, 18 guns, Commander E. Sotheby. At Wellington.

H. M. Steamer *Acheron*, Captain E. Lort Stokes, is on her way to New Zealand, viâ Madeira, Cape of Good Hope, Western Australia, and Sydney, for the purpose of making a complete marine survey of the coasts of New Zealand.

CHAPTER VI.

Coast, Country, and Rivers, N.W. of Wellington District.—Wanganui River.—Sailing Directions.—Rural District.—Town of Petre.—Statistics.—Native Rebellion.—Climate.—Hams and Bacon.—Native Population.—Coal.—Inland Navigation.—Foot-paths.—Garrison.

BEYOND the North-western corner of what has been described, at the beginning of the last Chapter, as the Wellington district, the sandy beach, backed by a broad belt of level, or gently undulating, and fertile country, continues to trend to the N.W. towards Cape Egmont. This belt attains its greatest breadth in that part of it which is watered by the river Rangitikei and its tributaries. Seventeen miles N.W. of the mouth of that river, the Turakina river, fordable at low water, flows into the sea; and three miles further on, the Wangaihu, also fordable at low water. This last river has its source in the S.E. side of the Ruapelu mountain, and thus waters a considerable tract of country.

The country between the Manawatu and the Wan-

gaihu is generally of the most rich and fertile character, including large tracts of heavily-timbered land, as well as a great extent of grassy pasture land.

Nine miles beyond the Wangaihu is the mouth of the Wanganui river. This river has its source on the N.W. side of the Tonga Riro mountain, and flows along a bed of about 200 miles in length, in the course of which it is swollen by several considerable tributaries.

The following sailing directions are extracted from the *Cook's Strait Almanac* for 1846 :—

“RIVER WANGANUI (Heads); S. lat. $39^{\circ} 57' 19''$; E. long. $175^{\circ} 2' 8''$; T. of H. W. F. and C. 10 hr. 20 min.; Sp. rise 9 ft.

“From 5 to 8 feet water in the channel over the bar at low-water spring tides; between the heads, 5 to 14 feet: the Bluff called the ‘Landguard’ is on the south bank of the river, two miles from the heads; about half a mile above the lower end of it the water shallows, but deepens soon after; the Town of Petre is four miles from the heads; abreast of the town there is from 8 to 24 feet water at low-water spring tides; and under Shakspeare's Cliff, opposite the town, 30 to 41 feet.

“Vessels coming from Kapiti (*Entry Island*) must steer N. by W. for fifty-five miles; on making the land, the *Landguard* is the most prominent object as a dark steep bluff; on nearing the shore, the *Cliffs*, one mile to the N.W. of the heads, will be seen; also the *Castle Cliff* and *Beacon*. *Taupiri*, or the Devil's Thumb, (the highest mountain visible in that direction except Tongariro, and appearing as a double hump,) and *Tongariro*, are in a line with the heads, bearing N. $19^{\circ} 12'$ E.

“As the bar is a shifting one, vessels must look out for smooth water to enter in.”

The Clydeside, a barque of 250 tons burthen, entered the river in 1841; and, though she was run aground through not keeping in the right channel, she both entered and went out again without the slightest damage.

37,700 acres of land, of which about one half lies on either side of the river, and the most inland point of which is about ten miles from the sea, have been laid out here as a rural district; in which 254 sections of 100 acres each have been selected by purchasers from

the New Zealand Company, and 27 reserved for the natives.

The general character of this land is level and open; and a considerable portion of it consists of table-lands, of greater or less extent, lying at elevations varying from 6 or 8 to 200 feet above the level of high water. Groves of timber, both large and small, are scattered irregularly over this district; but the most thickly wooded parts are generally those which lie lowest, and the steep sides of the picturesque gullies, which numerous tributary streams have cut out of the table-land on their way to the river. East of the river's mouth, the high table-land does not reach within a mile or two of the coast; but on the western side it forms stratified argillaceous cliffs, containing recent shells and occasional lignite, which are washed by the sea at high water.

The open portions of this district are covered either with high fern, or with the mixed growth of flax, grass, and shrubs, which has been already described. The soil, even on the highest table-lands, is capable of very advantageous cultivation; and that of the lower valleys is still more fertile. In some situations a little drainage is required, to let off the surface water; but this land possesses a very rich soil. There are several fresh-water lagoons, in which eels abound, even on the highest table-lands.

The Wanganui river, passing through a great extent of mountainous country, is subject to very strong freshets; which, however, do not rise above its present banks. On such occasions, the surface of the stream is covered with pumice-stone, from the volcanic district round Tonga Riro, and drift-wood; which are found in large quantities all along the northern shore of Cook's Strait.

The site of the Town of Petre, about four miles up the west bank, contains 508 sections of a quarter of an acre each, besides reserves, and a belt for public

purposes—thus extending in all over 807 acres. It forms nearly a square, of which two sides are bounded by the river, and a third by a steep wooded slope, leading up to the high table-land. The situation is exceedingly picturesque; bold cliffs forming the opposite bank of the river. The town-site itself is level, with the exception of two or three low sand-ridges covered with fern. On one of these ridges is built the stockade, in which a detachment of troops is quartered.

254 sections have been selected by the purchasers from the Company, to whom these town allotments were granted beyond the rural sections they had purchased, on condition that the Company should be allowed to select town-sections alternately with, and to the same number as, the purchasers.

A small Church, and a Lock-up-house, a Post-office, and a School, all of wood, constitute the only public buildings of the little Town, which has not more than thirty houses in it altogether. The first English settlers arrived from Wellington in 1842; in August 1845 the white population of Wanganui was 186: and there were in the settlement 10 horses, 310 head of cattle, 174 sheep, and 159 goats; and 89 acres of land were under cultivation. Since that time, although no regular census has been taken, it is known that the stock of cattle and sheep had been considerably augmented by importations from Wellington, and that a larger quantity of land had also been brought under cultivation. In consequence, however, of a rebellion among the resident natives, which broke out early in 1847,* the most lamentable disasters have, for the present, destroyed the little settlement. By the last accounts, the principal settlers had abandoned, or were abandoning, the district, the homesteads and crops having been destroyed, and the greater part of the cattle killed or driven off by the natives. Some of the settlers have

* See p. 84.

arrived at Nelson, some at New Plymouth, and others at Wellington, with the remains of their property; and the district is at present occupied by a force of some hundred troops, provided with armed boats, artillery, and ammunition of every description.

The Climate of Wanganui is comparatively free from the constant winds which blow in the neighbourhood of Wellington, where the Strait forms a narrow funnel; and it has been likened by Dr. Peter Wilson, one of the principal Colonists, who had resided for many years in the South of Spain, near Cadiz and Seville, to the climate of that country, but with the addition of frequent showers.

This Settlement had already become famous for the excellence of the *hams and bacon* cured there, and sent to Wellington—wild hogs abounding in all parts of the district. Fish of all the kinds common at Wellington abound off the mouth of the river; and the *kawai*, as well as smelts, and the *aua*, or so-called herring, ascend the river with the flood-tide, as high up as the Town. Eels are also obtained in plenty. The Rev. James Taylor, a clergyman employed by the Church Missionary Society, resides near the native village called Putikiwaranui, opposite the Town, on the East bank, and used to officiate in the English Church.

The aboriginal population living at various spots on the banks of this river, has been variously estimated. The Rev. Mr. Taylor took a very accurate census in 1843, between the sea and the pa of Pipiriki, which is situate about eighty miles up the river, and he counted 2200 souls; but there are known to be many populous villages still higher up: and Governor Grey, in a despatch dated July 1, 1847,* which describes the origin and prospects of the above-mentioned hostilities, estimates the total number of inhabitants residing on the banks of the river at 5000 souls, of whom 1400 are fighting-men. It appears that about 600 or 700 fighting-men

* Papers (N. Z.), presented to both Houses in December, 1847, page 59.

were engaged in the skirmishes of June and July 1847, with the troops.*

On the banks of a small tributary called Tangarakau, which joins the river from the W. about 100 miles inland, *Coal* has been found by the natives; but the numerous falls and rapids which obstruct the navigation beyond the distance of twenty miles from the sea, would prevent this resource from being, at present, easily made available for use on the coast. The upper part of the river's course lies in the midst of a closely wooded country, mountainous and picturesque, but containing extensive districts of fertile and desirable land. The natives bring the hogs which they catch, and the produce of their cultivations, to the sea in canoes, some of which carry a cargo of a ton weight, and which they guide over the rapids with singular dexterity. The return voyage is accomplished by means of long poles, in handling which they are also very skilful. From various points on the river's bank, the footpaths in common use by the natives strike off in various directions, whether towards Tonga Riro and Lake Taupo, or towards the head waters of the Waitera and Mokau rivers, and the harbour of Kawia, which are on the West coast, North of New Plymouth.†

The present garrison of Petre consists of detachments of the 58th and 65th regiments, and of the Royal Artillery, under the command of Major A. F. W. Wyatt; and it amounted, in the end of 1847, to 300 or 400 men. Major Wyatt holds the appointment of Resident Magistrate; and S. King, Esq., is a Justice of the Peace for this Settlement.

* Papers (N. Z.), presented to both Houses, 3rd February, 1848, page 8.

† See Chapter VIII.

CHAPTER VII.

Nelson District.—Mountain Ranges.—Waimea Plains.—Nelson Haven and Town.—Facilities for Building Steam-Docks.—Sailing Directions.—Massacre Bay.—Coal.—Motueka.—Moutere.—Suburban.—Coasts of Blind Bay.—Port Hardy.—French Pass.—Admiralty Bay.—Pelorus Sound.—Port Gore.—Queen Charlotte Sound.—Newton Bay and Waitohe Pass.—Projected Town.—Tory Channel.—Te-awa-iti.—Tide in Cook's Strait.—Port Underwood.—Wairau River.—Plain.—White Bluff Hills.—Kaipara-te-ao.—Massacre of 1843.—Cape Campbell.—Sheep-runs.—South Wanganui.—West Coast.—Rivers Buller and Grey.—Lakes Howick and Arthur.—Summary of Available Land.—Climate.—Meteorological Tables.—Soil.—Roads.—Natural Productions: 1. Vegetable.—2. Animal; Agricultural Society, 1847; Sheep-farming.—3. Mineral; Coal and Limestone.—Distribution of Land.—Revised Plan.—Cost of Clearing Land, &c.—General Statistics, &c.—Latest Prices Current.—Directory.

THE Nelson district may be shortly described as all that part of the Middle Island which lies north of the forty-second degree of south latitude.

In about that latitude, the Kaikora Mountains, or Southern Alps, already described in the third Chapter, page 41, branch off into numerous lower ranges, which stretch northwards into the sea at various points on the south shore of Cook's Strait. Thus one range strikes the sea at Kaikora, or the Lookers-on, forming a precipitous coast thence northwards nearly to Cape Campbell. Another range extends along between Cape Campbell and Cloudy Bay, terminating in a cliff called the White Bluff: a third forms the north-western boundary of the Wairau Plain, and is again subdivided into the ridges which enclose the magnificent harbours of Port Underwood, Queen Charlotte Sound, Port Gore, and Pelorus Sound between their numerous spurs: and a fourth range extends west of Blind Bay, nearly to Cape Farewell. The greater part of the Nelson district which borders on the sea is, therefore, mountainous,

in general heavily wooded, and steep to the water's edge. Numerous level spots, however, of greater or less extent, have been formed by the countless streams which drain this country, at their mouths in the intervals between the lesser spurs. But on the western and southern sides of Massacre Bay, at the south-west extremity of Blind Bay, and immediately adjoining the coast between the mouth of Port Underwood and Cape Campbell, there are tracts of level or gently undulating country extensive enough to be called plains: and between the north-east part of the White Bluff range and the east coast there is also a considerable breadth of level table-land, as well as of low plains close to the coast.

The mountain ranges are of the same volcanic formation as those in the northern island; and the remaining part of the country also bears generally a similar geological character.

A sandy beach extends across the south-west end of Blind Bay, from the mouth of the Motueka river on the north, to that of the Waimea on the south, a distance of nearly twenty miles. A smaller river, the Moutere, flows into the sea about three miles south of the Motueka. At the back of this beach lies the undulating tract above mentioned, of which the most level parts lie immediately on the banks of these three rivers, and contiguous to the sea-shore. The eastern and western hills gradually approach each other, and close in a few miles inland; the valleys of the streams becoming then mere gullies.

At the southernmost end of the beach, and in the south-east corner of Blind Bay, are the Haven and Town of Nelson. The following extracts give an idea of their situation and appearance:—

“A curious bank of boulders, of no great breadth, and raised but few feet above the highest tides—which, indeed, wash over it in some low spots—runs along parallel with the land for about six miles, thoroughly sheltering a space, which averages a quarter of a mile in

width, from the force of the sea. This natural breakwater joins the land at its northern extremity, but leaves a narrow gut, between its southern point and the steep coast adjoining, at the very south-east corner of Blind Bay. This gut is the entrance of Nelson Haven. Farther to the west, a moderate-sized river, called the Waimea, empties itself by several mouths into the sea. This river and the waters which flow out of the haven form a deep pool, sheltered by a bar. The bar extends from a spot on the seaward shore of the boulder bank, about half a mile north of its southernmost point, to the sands, which stretch out some distance from the low coast, extending ten or twelve miles to the westward of Nelson Haven."

"Our anchorage was outside the bar. On the bar are found nine feet of water at low-water spring tides; but the springs rise thirteen or fourteen feet on this coast. In the pool which I have described is excellent anchorage, as in stormy weather the sea is broken by the bar."

"From thence the navigation to the inner haven requires a practised pilot; as the tides are exceedingly rapid, and the channel very narrow. A peaked rock, called 'the Arrow,' rises high out of water, not a hundred yards south of the point of the boulder bank; and the ship channel is between the two."

"The inner gut, between the boulder bank and the main, is still narrower, but holds out less danger, as the tide sweeps fairly through it."

"Once inside this, you may fancy yourself in a dock, except that a rapid tide sweeps along the land side for about a mile. The side towards the boulder bank is out of the influence of the tide, and there vessels generally anchor."

"The eastern shore of the haven is formed, for a mile from its entrance, by a low but steep ridge of hills that are bare of wood. But beyond this, the haven expands to the eastward into a broad space, which is a lake when covered by the tide, and a mud-flat at other times, intersected by the branching channels of a small river called the Maitai. An amphitheatre of about 1000 acres, shelving up from the southern shore of this lagoon to the base of abrupt mountains on the east and south-east, seems made for the site of a town, and here Nelson is situated. It is only separated from the entrance of the haven by the ridge of hills which I have mentioned; and a path over its summit forms a short cut between the haven and the town. Facing to the north, it enjoys a view over the wide part of the haven and the boulder bank into the expanse of Blind Bay; and the fringe of wood on the banks of the Maitai leads the eye to the forest gullies and towering crags in the direction of the Ohiere, or Pelorus river." * * * *

"It is a curious sight to see a large ship enter the haven under sail. The most favourable time to do this is with the full force of the flood, and against a working breeze that blows out of the harbour.

Passing rapidly between the Arrow Rock and the Boulder Bank, she comes up head to wind, as her jib-boom-end is almost over your head while you stand on the beach just inside the gut, and she makes way on the starboard tack enough to shoot out of the tide, which has swept her half a mile up the harbour, into the eddy where she is to anchor."—*E. Jerminham Wakefield's 'Adventure in New Zealand from 1839 to 1844.'* Vol. II., Chap. VII., pp. 178—184.

Two men-of-war entered the Haven of Nelson in the course of the year 1847. One was H. M. Steamer *Inflexible*, which draws from thirteen to fifteen feet; the other was H. M. S. *Racehorse*, 18 guns, which was hove down high and dry on the Boulder Bank to have her bottom cleaned. The great rise and fall of the tide in this harbour afford unusual facilities for this important operation, and also for the establishment of dry docks, which might easily be made there, thoroughly available for Steam-ships of the largest size. According to the plan on which the Nelson Settlement was founded,* a portion of the purchase-money of land was reserved as a fund for the encouragement of Steam Navigation; and the purchasers were discussing, in the beginning of the year 1848, in what manner they should direct the expenditure of this fund, which already amounts to nearly 11,000*l*. It is well worth consideration whether, by joining this fund to a contribution from the Government Expenditure, such a work might not be executed, and thus render exceedingly attractive the unsold portion of the Settlement, which would continue to furnish further resources for the encouragement of Steam Navigation in this and other ways. *The proximity of coal in abundance, suited to steam purposes*, is a great recommendation of the locality of Nelson for the establishment of such a dock. The only large dry-docks now existing in the whole of the Pacific and Indian Oceans are at Bombay and Calcutta: very inconveniently situated for the use of English and French men-of-war Steamers stationed on the west coast of America, at Tahiti or the Marquesas, or in

* See p. 252.

New Zealand, or the other Australian Colonies. The commercial Steamers, now plying between Panama and Concepcion on the west coast of South America, return to England if they want docking: and those which will soon be established to connect the Australian Colonies with the Indian line of Steamers, as well as the screw-Steamers which it has been recently proposed to lay on to the same part of the world *viâ the Cape of Good Hope*,* will have to go, as H. M. Steamer *Inflexible* has lately done,† a six weeks' journey out of their way, *to a place where there is no Coal*, whenever they may require such repairs as call for the use of a dry dock.

The following *Sailing Directions* for the Port of Nelson are from the *Cook's Strait Almanac* for 1848:—

"NELSON, S. lat. $41^{\circ} 14'$; E. long. $173^{\circ} 16'$; T. of H. W. F. and C. 9hr.; Sp. rise $11\frac{1}{2}$ feet."

"*Sailing Directions*.—Ships bound to Nelson Haven, if the weather be fine, should run boldly down on the eastern shore of the Gulf, making Pepin's Island, which has the appearance merely of a point, as it is nearly dry at low water between it and the main. The island is situated about seven miles south-westerly of Croixilles' Harbour, and from nine to ten miles from the entrance of Nelson Haven; four or five miles S. W. from Pepin's Island will be seen a long shingle spit or boulder bank, running in a S. W. direction, which may be approached to a mile with the lead going: this may be run along safely at that distance until you get into seven fathoms, keeping the wood on the banks of the Maitai river well open with Green Point, when you may anchor, and wait for a pilot. Great attention should be paid to the lead, as the water shoals on the flats very suddenly."

"The leading mark for running over the flats, when the tide answers, is Mount Rintoul, just open to the westward of a clump of trees near the beach, bearing S. $\frac{1}{4}$ E. by compass until you bring Arrow Rock well into a remarkable hollow in the Yellow Cliff, when you may steer for the Arrow Rock until you bring the Whitby Beacon on with a mark on the opposite land; then steer for the beacon until a ship's length from it, and give it a berth of a ship's breadth and a half, and you are in deep water. If the wind be out, put her about, and if the ship does not come round, let go an anchor and sheer over to starboard, run a kedge out and haul her into a berth in the eddy, or drop up to the deep water at the head of the

* See "*Steam Communication with the Cape of Good Hope, Australia, and New Zealand*," &c., by F. Jerningham, 1848.

† See p. 208.

harbour. Ships should not attempt this harbour without a pilot, if they are unacquainted with it. There will be found at spring tides twenty feet over the flats at high water, at the neaps about seventeen feet; the entrance of the harbour has a foot more."

A Nelson Colonist, writing in the latter end of 1845, thus describes the country districts around Blind Bay:—

"They are," he says, "valleys opening into the bottom of the gulf, separated by low hills, and into Massacre Bay. These are all surveyed. The land in them is good, bad, and indifferent; no two opinions agree as to the relative proportions of each kind. As to the relative qualities, flax land is considered the best; wood land next, but from the expense of clearing it is not often attempted here. Fern land should have a summer's fallow and a winter's frost; it will then yield a good crop of potatoes, and the next year of grain. Sheepfolding secures a good crop from fern land the first year. An experiment is being made on the very worst land of all—the clay hills between the Waimea and Moutere. A patch is sown with turnips, to be fed down with sheep, and a good crop is expected for the second year."

A writer in the *Nelson Examiner*, a local newspaper, in 1846, gives a detailed description of the country districts, from which the following extracts are made. It must be premised, however, that the writer has an exaggerated notion of the expense of clearing wooded land, which will rarely be greater than that given by Mr. Molesworth as that on his farm near Wellington (see page 177).

Beginning at the north-western extremity of the district,

"Massacre Bay contains about 45,000 acres of level or comparatively level land, of which 15,000 lie in the Aorere* Valley, and 30,000 in that of the Takaka* and tributaries, or along the line of coast between the two. The character of the land in both districts varies exceedingly; some being apparently very fertile, consisting of rich alluvial soil; whilst a large portion is either utterly worthless, or unprofitable for cultivation during the early periods of a settler's life in a new Colony. Nearly the whole of the Aorere is densely covered with heavy timber, the clearing of which would be attended with a great outlay, on account of the large size of the rata trees, which abound, and the extensive ramifications of the roots. A large

* These are small rivers, which flow into Massacre Bay; Aorere from the west, Takaka from the south.

portion of the valley is said to be subject to inundation, but the general indications of the soil do not appear to infer that floods are of frequent occurrence; the river, although rapid, being tolerably direct in its course. The rich alluvial land near the mouth is probably liable to be overflowed, owing to the passage of the river being choked up in several places by large masses of trees, which different floods have collected. Probably about 10,000 acres of land in the Aorere Valley might be considered to be fertile and desirable for occupation, but heavy expense must be incurred in clearing."

"The above remarks will apply to the Takaka district as regards the expense of clearing, although the timber is generally of less size, the number of rata trees being comparatively few. The district altogether may be considered more desirable and of greater value than that of Aorere. On the Motupipi side,* in particular, the land appears to be exceedingly fertile, with two or three thousand acres of open country, mostly of alluvial soil. Much of the valley bears evident traces of being frequently flooded, the course of the stream being more circuitous than that of the Aorere, and its channel still more choked up with trees and driftwood."

On the coast at Motupipi,† the bed of a flat, dry at low water, is formed of bare *Coal*; which, with a stratum exposed in the adjoining hills, has been worked since the end of the year 1845 at the expense of some Wellington Colonists who purchased the section. The Coal has been tried, and Captain Hoseason, of H. M. Steamer *Inflexible*, has made a most favourable report on it, which will be found in Appendix A.

Limestone is also abundant in this neighbourhood; and the same persons have also a lime-kiln at work.

"A tract of land bordering the coast between the mouths of the Aorere and Takaka, consisting of alternating flats and low hills, and containing about ten or twelve thousand acres, has been surveyed; but its character is very inferior, with the exception of one or two thousand acres of bush near the centre of it. The amount of fair average land in the Takaka district may be estimated at 15,000 acres."

The easiest means of communication with the above districts is by water. The distance from Nelson to Separation Point, which forms the S. headland of Massacre Bay, is 35 miles; from Separation Point to Mo-

* i. e., the eastern side.

† At the mouth of the Takaka river.

tupipi about 8; and from Separation Point to the mouth of the Aorere about 17 miles.

"The district of Motueka is next in order. The great bulk of this plain adjoining the coast has been distributed for accommodation sections, and comprises some of the best land in the settlement, although somewhat distant from the Town.* A small portion only remains for rural sections, and this lies in very detached situations. Altogether the amount may be about 5000 acres, most of which is fertile soil, partly timbered. A larger quantity than this has been surveyed for rural sections, but they are at present difficult of access."

"In the Mouere district there is no land of any consequence available for profitable cultivation, excepting the wooded valley which has been given out for accommodation sections, and these are considered by most who have visited the locality to be of inferior quality and difficult of drainage."

"Of the remaining portions of Blind Bay, or connected with it, the largest amount of flat land occurs on the banks of the Motueka river and its tributaries, some fifty or sixty miles from its mouth. This is mostly contained within narrow gorges, varying from half a mile to a mile and a half in breadth. Some portion of this land is of tolerable quality, mostly at the lower part below the junction of the Motupiko,† but the remainder is subject to inundation, and much broken up in its surface. The access to this valley is difficult; the route being over the range that separates it from that of the Wai-iti.‡ The whole amount of level land in all the tributaries may be about 15,000 acres, but of this quantity barely 5000 can be considered of fair average quality. There is about a similar quantity of land contained in the narrow gorge of the Wai-iti and sundry other gullies or gorges tributary to it. Some of this may be of an average quality; but, confined, as it is, between lofty ranges of hills, must be much subject to floods and cold winds sweeping down such narrow channels. In the more immediate neighbourhood of Nelson, in detached portions,§ there are about 2000 acres of good land, 1000 of which are contained within the Boulder Bank at the upper end, where it joins the Bluff near Wakapuaka. There is also a small tract of rich timbered land, near the pah at Wakapuaka, stretching upwards to the Happy Valley, which may probably contain 2000 acres."

* The nearest part of the plain is about eighteen miles by water, and at least twenty-five by land, from the town of Nelson.

† A main tributary of the Motueka, flowing from further south than the parent stream, and joining it on its west bank, about thirty miles above its mouth.

‡ A tributary of the Waimea.

§ Including what is called the Waimea plain.

A native village near Pepin's Island, north of Nelson.

There are small native villages, with cultivations appertaining to them, at various spots on the shores of Massacre Bay, and along the coast as far south as the mouth of the Motueka:* also at Wakapuaka, mentioned above. But the whole native population inhabiting the shores of Blind Bay, between Wakapuaka and Cape Farewell, amounted to no more than 335 males and 280 females, or 615 in all, at the end of 1847.

There is a good roadstead, sheltered from all winds, under Tata Island, at the S. end of Massacre Bay, affording anchorage in from 3 to 4 fathoms to a limited number of ships. This has been called Victoria Haven, and is distant about 2 miles from Motupipi before mentioned, lying between it and Separation Point. The anchorage is good in other parts of Massacre Bay, except in a strong easterly gale.

Astrolabe roads, between Adèle Island and the main, about 7 miles N. of the mouth of the Motueka, and 13 miles S. of Separation Point, is a perfectly safe roadstead in all weathers. The following notice of it occurs in the *Cook's Strait Almanac* for 1846:—

“Astrolabe Roads (W. shore of Blind Bay), S. lat. $40^{\circ} 58' 22''$; E. long. $173^{\circ} 5'$; T. of H. W. F. and C. 8hr.; Sp. rise 12ft.”

“Anchorage in 5 fms. between N. Point of Adèle Id. and main.”

Small craft, by taking advantage of the tide, which rises at springs from 13 to 15 feet all along this coast, may enter most of the rivers.

There are a few European settlers already in the Aorere and Takaka valleys, and at Motupipi; a good many on the banks of the Motueka: but the principal farms at present in cultivation are in the plain of the Waimea and its tributaries.

North of Nelson, the east shore of Blind Bay, including D'Urville Island, is steep and backed by high mountains, for the most part wooded. It is remarkable, however, for two fine harbours: Croisilles

* The Natives of this place have abandoned their old style of living, and dwell on the Reserves made for them, cultivating farms after the English fashion.

Harbour on the main; and Port Hardy on D'Urville Island.

The latter is thus described in the *Cook's Strait Almanac* for 1846:—

“PORT HARDY. Nelson's Monument, S. lat. $40^{\circ} 44'$; E. long. $173^{\circ} 57'$; T. of H. W. F. and C. 8 hr.; Sp. rise 12 ft.”

“Excellent harbour; general soundings in middle of harbour 12 to 15 fathoms. The tides set across the entrance, and vessels must therefore keep well to the E. on the flood, and to the W. on the ebb, but avoiding the reefs off Nile and Trafalgar Heads (W. headlands of the harbour), as the ebb, from the W., sets on them.”

Port Hardy was the rendezvous of the ships containing the first Wellington Colonists. They arrived from England in January and February, 1840, ignorant of the spot which had been selected for the Settlement;* and the ships were piloted to Port Nicholson by a whaler named James McLaren, who had been engaged by Colonel Wakefield to await them for that purpose. This man was living, with some of his native connections, at a village called Rangitoto, on the E. side of the island, near which there is good anchorage for small craft. The natives, in number about 50, have a small tract of mountain land under cultivation for potatoes.

The French Pass, between D'Urville Island and the mainland, is practicable for vessels of any draught: but the violence of the tides, and the uncertainty of the wind in this narrow channel, render the attempt to thread it very dangerous.

The passage between D'Urville and Stephens Islands should not be attempted by any but small craft; or by any but navigators well acquainted with the rocks, and with the set of the tides and currents.

Admiralty Bay lies to the east of D'Urville Island, its extreme capes being Cape Stephens and Point Lambert. This bay is studded with hilly, wooded islands, of various sizes; and among these very good anchorage may be found. The largest of them is

* See pp. 64, 66.

Guard Island, about a mile in length. Here 30 or 40 natives generally reside; having some productive potato-grounds on the E. face of the island. The channel between Guard Island and the mainland is only passable for boats.

At the S. end of Admiralty Bay is the entrance of Pelorus Sound, about a mile in width. The estuary immediately expands, and you continue to advance for 20 or 30 miles along a magnificent arm of the sea. The wooded mountains which enclose it are on the grandest scale, and the depth of water is 30 or 40 fathoms. Bays and harbours, many of them more capacious than Plymouth Sound, branch out in every direction. So numerous and varied in their forms are these ramifications, that it would be easy to mistake the track to the principal fresh-water river at the head of the Sound. The whole scene forms a labyrinth on an immense scale, in which you may lose your way among tortuous paths of water 2 or 3 miles broad, and between hedges composed of mountains from 2000 to 3000 feet in height, clothed to the summits with the most luxuriant and majestic timber. Even on a second visit, some persons have been guided in the most intricate passes only by watching the set of the tide. Here and there level spots, varying in extent from 1 to 10 or 15 acres, are found between the water and the steep hillsides. Two deep bays, with valleys at their heads, stretching to the E. and S.E., afford a communication with the W. end of Queen Charlotte Sound and with the Wairau plain.

The one communicating with the Wairau plain is called the Kaituna pass. From the head of Kaituna Bay the valley of a stream stretches nearly due S., forming, with the valley of a tributary of the Wairau extending in the same direction, the Kaituna pass, about 14 miles in length from Pelorus Sound to the Wairau Plain, which it joins about 10 miles W. of the sea in Cloudy Bay.

The pass communicating with Queen Charlotte Sound is a neck of level land, only about three miles across from beach to beach.

Into the head of Pelorus Sound a considerable stream flows through a narrow valley, wooded at its lower end, but covered with fern or flax higher up. It contains, perhaps, 2000 acres of land available for cultivation. The hills which bound the upper part of the valley are also bare of wood, and are supposed to be suited to pastoral purposes. The *phormium tenax* in this valley is of a very superior quality; and some slaves of the Kapiti natives sometimes undertake expeditions for the purpose of collecting the flax from it. Otherwise the whole district is uninhabited, the original inhabitants, remains of whose villages are to be seen in some of the level spots, having been exterminated by Rauperaha about twenty years ago.

Countless flocks of wild-ducks of various kinds are found near the mouth of the stream: teal on its banks; and pigeons and parrots in every part of the woods near the Sound.

There is a herd of wild cattle near the eastern head of the entrance; which have originated in the same manner as those described at Kapiti (see page 128).

Between Guard Island and Point Lambert, two or three bays stretch back among the wooded mountains. The westernmost of these, Anakoa Bay, is supposed to be five or six miles in length.

Port Gore, of which the entrance is between Point Lambert and Point Jackson, forms a noble harbour of refuge for vessels caught by an adverse gale in the Strait. The inner anchorage, Melville Cove, lies round to the west after entering. The surrounding land is very high, and wooded. Except as a resting-place on a journey, or during a fishing excursion, this spot is unfrequented by natives. The following particulars are given in the *Cook's Strait Almanac* for 1846:—

"PORT GORE (Hart Point) S. lat. $41^{\circ} 1'$; E. long. $174^{\circ} 8'$; T. of H. W. F. and C. 8 hr.; Sp. rise 12 ft. Entrance 7 miles wide; direction about S.W."

E. of Point Jackson is the mouth of another noble arm of the sea, Queen Charlotte Sound. Its E. side is formed by the Island of Arapawa, which is about 15 miles long and 2 miles broad. The passage between this island and the mainland on its S.E. side is called Tory Channel, because first surveyed in 1839 by Captain Chaffers and the officers of the ship *Tory*, containing the preliminary expedition of the New Zealand Company.

Queen Charlotte Sound resembles Pelorus Sound on a smaller scale. The immediately surrounding mountains are none of them more than 1500 feet in height: the Sound, although 9 miles wide at its northern entrance, narrows as you advance; and the *Tory Channel*, at its E. entrance and in several other places, is scarcely more than a quarter of a mile in breadth.

Entering from the north, numerous islands and projecting points are dotted over the expanse of water which penetrates into the interior; and a glimpse of the snow-covered Southern Alps is obtained in the distance.

The principal entrance lies between Long Island and Motuara. The latter island is remarkable for having been the spot which Captain Cook selected for his observatory and garden; while Ship Cove, an excellent harbour between it and the western shore, was his favourite anchorage for refitting during his visits to New Zealand in the years 1769 to 1777.

There is a fine harbour called East Bay at the north-western end of Arapawa Island; the entrance being about six miles south of Cape Koumaru.

On the western side of the Sound, besides Ship Cove, there are several harbours, one of which is called West Bay, capable of holding any number of shipping, and surrounded with excellent timber of all kinds. W. of the point where Tory Channel joins Queen Charlotte Sound, the latter extends about 10 miles nearly due

W., the westernmost point being what has been recently called Shakspeare Bay, from which the level pass before mentioned communicates with Pelorus Sound.

The next harbour on the S. side of the Sound, Waitohe, or, as it has been recently called, "Newton" Bay, is of importance, as found to be, by a Committee of Nelson Land-purchasers appointed to make the necessary examination, the most eligible site for a shipping-town to the Wairau plain.

This Committee, in their Report, dated January 18, 1848,* quote the following authorities as to the excellence of Queen Charlotte Sound generally. Captain Cook says:—

"It is at the entrance (north) three leagues broad, and is a collection of the finest harbours in the world."

Captain Chaffers, who surveyed Tory Channel and a great portion of Queen Charlotte Sound in 1839, says:—

"The tides are regular, the soundings from Motuara Island (at the mouth) gradually deepen from seven and eight to thirty and thirty-five fathoms mid channel. The shores on both sides are bold, and may be approached with safety to one cable's distance. In case of night coming on, good anchorage can be found in the coves on either side of the Sound."

The Report then goes on as follows:—

"The water continues deep almost to the head of the Sound, and its width diminishes very gradually. It is two or three miles wide between the south end of Tory Channel and Newton Bay. The projecting points on the opposite sides of the sound at Newton Bay, are from one mile and three-quarters to two miles apart, and the sound widens again above these points. Then the soundings give twenty-two to twenty-three fathoms."

"With such a breadth and uniform depth of water, with the same abundance of deep and safe coves and harbours, with a singular freedom from rocks, and shoals, and sand banks, the upper part of the Sound, even above Newton Bay, deserves, as well as the lower, the terms in which Col. Wakefield, in his excellently written journal, describes the Sound in general. 'On the whole,' says

* *N. Z. Journal*, July 1, 1848, Vol. IX., No. 224, p. 150.

he, 'considering the position and capabilities of Queen Charlotte Sound, whether with a view to its becoming a port for homeward bound vessels to take in cargo and provisions, a safe channel of communication between the W. part of the Straits and Port Nicholson and the E. coast, or as a situation for docks and ship-building, it is of the first importance, and cannot be spoken of in too high terms.'**

Newton Bay itself is thus described:—

"At the mouth lies a little island, leaving a passage of about $\frac{3}{4}$ of a mile wide on the E., and one of half a mile wide on the W. The soundings, which are 22 fathoms at the harbour's mouth, decrease within the islet to 17 fathoms, and then diminish very gradually, and with the utmost regularity, to 4, and $3\frac{1}{2}$ fathoms, within 100 yards at most from the shore at the head of the harbour. The harbour, or cove, within the islet, may be called about $1\frac{1}{2}$ mile deep, by $1\frac{1}{4}$ mile wide. The soundings across are as regular as those from N. to S., in which direction the harbour lies. At the bottom of the cove, on the E. and W. sides, where the hills come down to the water's edge, there are from 4 to 7 fathoms within a boat's length of the shore. The bottom is sandy clay with broken shells."

* * * * *

"The harbour is connected with the (Wairau) plain, by a pass through a valley which is densely wooded for the first 8 or 9 miles. The path crosses some slopes which can scarcely be called more than undulations, and, indeed, would hardly render incorrect a description of the whole pass as an almost level one" * * * *

"Beyond the wood, the valley takes a winding course into the plain, and consists of an unbroken flax and raupo swamp. This is apparently of easy drainage, but at any rate the road might be continued at the most trifling expense, about the foot of the fern hills, which rise with a gentle ascent on the E. side of the valley. Thence it would have to cross a patch of wood at the foot of the hill, in which the massacre of 1843 took place.+ It should then be carried across the Wairau Plain to the highest reach of the river, which is at all seasons deep and tranquil, and where a ferry would have to be established."

It would be easy, according to the Report, to make a

"road from the pass to the point proposed, by the high strips of ground covered with strong fern, and stretching along the banks of

* See Appendix to First Report of New Zealand Company.

+ About 2 miles from the head of Newton Bay, are the head waters of the Tua Marino, a tributary of the Wairau, which joins it at that spot. The whole length of the pass, from Newton Bay to the banks of the Wairau, is about 10 miles. Its direction is nearly due N. and S.

the river at this part of its course. This seems to be all that is requisite to connect Newton Bay with the Wairau plain, and the districts immediately to the S. of it."

"For a town site, the land at the head of Newton Bay presents all the requisite capabilities in a most satisfactory degree. Between the bay and the valley at the back, spreads a flat, which contains between 200 and 300 acres of land, at the most moderate computation. A little river winds through it, which, though not navigable for boats for many yards above its mouth, may be considered sufficient to supply a town with fresh water all the year round. Two or three other small brooks were still running in the Midsummer months. There is plenty of timber, for building and fuel, in the wooded valley behind, and on most of the neighbouring hills; and the flat is sufficiently high in most places, to make drainage easy. The water frontage strictly belonging to the town site is not very considerable, but may extend to a quarter of a mile in length, the best part of it being formed by a low abrupt bank, on which the town flat terminates in the middle of the head of the bay. A little creek, or lagoon, on the E. side of this, is separated from the bay itself by a narrow spit or bank of mud, which boats might pass at high water. The shore round this might be included in the water frontage, which, however, might be indefinitely extended by building at the foot of the hills on each side of the head of the bay; where, as has been said, are from 4 to 5 fathoms' water a boat's length off shore."

"But all these latter advantages are doubled by the existence of another bay or cove in the immediate neighbourhood of the one just described. This cove, which it has been proposed to call Milton Bay, lies a little to the N.E. of it, and is separated from it by a narrow neck or peninsula of hills, joined to the main land by a level isthmus. The level spreads round the heads of both bays, running about 3 miles in length, by half a mile in breadth, from the top of one bay to that of the other, and losing itself in the Pass. There is, in fact, one extensive town-site abutting on two bays. Milton Bay is in itself also an excellent harbour, though more open to the Sound than the other; the soundings are as regular, the water generally as deep. The only circumstances that make it inferior to Newton Bay being; first, that the water shoals more gradually in the former than in the latter, so that the $3\frac{1}{2}$ and 4 fathoms' depth, which is found 100 yards from the shore in Newton Bay, is 300 yards, at least, off shore in Milton Bay; and, secondly, that the bay itself is 3 miles further from the Wairau plain. The first circumstances would make the throwing out of wharves into deep water three times as expensive as it would be in Newton Bay. The second would increase the expense of the road, and the distance to carry produce; although, as the additional track consists of firm and level land, the increased expense of the road would be but trifling."

"Shakspeare Bay lies immediately to the westward of Newton Bay. But a range or two of hills lie between it and the Wairau Pass. The three harbours, however, are so close to each other, as to constitute one group."

There is but little level land on the shores of Queen Charlotte Sound. The writer in the *Nelson Examiner*, already quoted, says—

"The only available land at Queen Charlotte Sound, is at its W. arm, where probably, in detached situations, 5000 acres may be found of very fertile character, exclusive of that contained in the Waitohe Pass, which, with some tributary valleys, may amount to 10,000 acres. The Kaituna Pass, leading from the Pelorus to the Wairau Plain, has been estimated to contain 10,000 acres of desirable land."

About 100 natives live and cultivate small patches of land, at a spot near Ship Cove, and also at another on the shores of East Bay. They catch large quantities of fish, whether with the hooks or with nets.

There is a small native village at Newton Bay; another called Mohio, on the south shore of Tory Channel; and two larger ones on the island of Arapawa, near its E. entrance. These are called Hokikari and Wekanui. All these villages together have perhaps a population of 300 souls.

Near the Eastern entrance there is also a whaling village. The native name of this place is Te-awa-iti, or "The little Stream;" but it is more generally called "Tar-white" by the whalers. This was the earliest European settlement in Cook's Strait, having been formed by sealers in the year 1827, and since inhabited by whalers, and runaway sailors, and convicts, from the Australian Colonies. In 1839 this village had about 100 European inhabitants, and six or seven boats were fitted out there for the whale-fishery. Since that time new whaling stations have been formed in other places, and some of the population has been drawn away to them. It still, however, fits out two or three whale-boats, the necessary supplies for the station being bought, and the oil and bone sold, at Wellington.

The Eastern entrance of Tory Channel should not

be attempted, except with a fair wind and tide, without an experienced pilot. It is exceedingly narrow, and the tide very rapid, both at ebb and flow.

Queen Charlotte Sound, from its N. to its S. entrance, has ample depth of water for the largest line-of-battle ships: so deep, indeed, is the mid-channel, that fast anchorage must be sought in the bays on either hand.

Wellington Head, between Cape Koumaru and the S. entrance of the Sound, is the point of the Middle Island nearest to the North Island. The narrowest part of Cook's Strait, between this headland and Cape Terawiti, is 17 miles across. Between Wellington Head and Cape Koumaru, a group of rocky islets called the Brothers lie, about a mile off the shore. A dangerous rock, covered at high-tide, is situated about 4 m. N.E. of this group.*

The tide in Cook's Strait flows to the N. about 5 hours, and ebbs to the S. upwards of 7. Strong tide-rips, or races, are formed in different parts of the Strait, in which a short, violent sea, resembling breakers, prevails in rough weather. The flood-tide enters at the S. entrance of Queen Charlotte Sound, flows through Tory Channel, and up the wider portion of the Sound, until it meets the flood from the Strait, near Long Island, at the N. entrance; and the ebb returns by the same route. But the numerous channels between the islands, and the peculiar formation of the land, together with the great force of the tide setting either way through Cook's Strait generally require much experience and observation in order thoroughly to know their effects.

S. of the entrance of Tory Channel, a rugged and barren coast stretches in a S.E. direction for about 17 miles. The principal points along this coast are the Coomb Rocks, Fighting Bay, and Rununder Point.

Beyond this is the entrance of Port Underwood. This harbour lies N. and S. It is about a mile wide at its entrance, and 5 or 6 miles in length, widening

* See page 93.

a little inside up to its N. end, where two smaller and well-sheltered bays branch off right and left. In the principal harbour there is excellent anchorage; but the S. part of it is much exposed to the southerly gales, which send in a heavy, rolling swell.

The harbour is surrounded by lofty and barren mountains, especially on the western side. There is but very little level land on any part of its shores; the easiest road from one cove to the other being in a boat, in order to avoid climbing over the steep spurs which separate them from one another.

A station, fitted from Wellington, is generally established here for the whale fishery, during the season, which sends out two or three boats. It is also a favourite resort for whaling vessels, as they can here combine the process of refitting with the procuring part of their cargo.

There are generally a few natives living in a village near the mouth of the harbour; but except on the occasion of a festival, there are rarely more than thirty or forty of them here, the barren clay land in the immediate vicinity being unfavourable to their rude system of cultivation.

The European population varies very much; amounting sometimes, during the whaling season, to 70 or 100 persons, who are almost all distributed among the other settlements as soon as the season is over.

S. of Port Underwood, the coast continues steep and rocky for about 6 miles. The coast then trends out to the E.; the hilly range recedes towards the S.W.; and a broad sandy beach extends across the W. end of the Wairau plain.

The Wairau River rises among the mountains to the S.W., in about the latitude of 42° S., at a distance of about 60 miles in a straight line, and about 70 or 80 miles by its windings, from its mouth in Cloudy Bay. Some of its head waters are only divided by a single range from those of the Waimea and Motueka rivers, which flow into Blind Bay near Nelson, and from

those of the Buller river, which flows into the sea on the W. coast, a few miles N. of Cape Foulwind. Two of its northern tributaries rise in still closer proximity to the Kaituna and Waitohe streams, which flow respectively into Pelorus and Queen Charlotte Sounds. The passes between these N., W., and E. waters are more or less practicable, and all afford facilities for the construction of good roads to unite the respective districts.

There is a bar at the entrance of the Wairau, which renders it difficult of access, except in boats and in calm weather. In the Report already quoted from, the Committee, comparing Port Underwood and Newton Bay, as sites for a shipping-town to the Wairau Plain, say:—

“You may send produce down the Wairau river to Cloudy Bay, and so to Port Underwood, the distance being 10 miles. But the river has a bar across its mouth, which makes this an operation not to be risked with any wind but one off shore. The N.W. wind is such a wind. It generally prevails, and then the bar is crossed with safety. But whenever this wind is violent, there is the impossibility, for small vessels certainly, to get into Port Underwood; while nothing but boats, or decked vessels of very small draught, could cross the bar at all. The depth of water on the bar was said by some persons to be 8 feet, by others 15. What is certain is, that it varies according to the previous weather,—a continuance of S.E. winds raising the bar considerably, while N.W. gales, or large floods in the Wairau river, probably lower it as much. The delays and risks to be created by this obstacle in the export or import of any goods will, it is evident, be great and expensive.

“The communication by land presents nearly equal difficulties. The hills which bound the Wairau plains on the N., turning off almost at right angles, are continued till they form the W. side of Port Underwood, leaving a space of 6 miles between the plain and the port, where their bases are washed by the sea. Along the whole of this distance, with the exception of two places, where they recede and form two small coves, open to the S.E., their declivities are abruptly cut off seaward into craggy cliffs and broken rocks, hanging over and jutting out into the sea, and split and shattered into every variety of ruggedness.”

Inside the bar, the river is navigable for boats and barges for four or five miles.

The Wairau plain is about 7 or 8 miles wide at the E. end, adjoining Cloudy Bay; chiefly consisting of open country, but dotted with groves of timber. At the distance of 10 or 15 miles from the sea, the valley narrows to a mile, and even less. Here there is less wood.

S. of the Wairau plain, the range mentioned before (see page 214), does not continue steep down to the sea; but extensive upland pastures, of excellent quality, stretch from above the remarkable cliff called the White Bluff, which forms the S. headland of Cloudy Bay, back for 30 miles to the S.W., in a breadth N. and S. of about 10 miles, separating the Wairau plain from another called Kaipara-te-ao.

A river so called flows into the sea, between the White Bluff and Cape Campbell, watering a plain resembling that of the Wairau in its general character, but not quite so large. 20,000 acres have, however, been laid out in it for rural sections.

Between this last plain and the east coast, low grassy downs, well adapted for pastoral purposes, extend as far south as the Kaikora, or Lookers'-on Inlet, about 60 or 70 miles S.E. of Cape Campbell.

The writer in the *Nelson Examiner*, already quoted, thus roughly estimates the quantity of land in this part of the district to be surveyed for the use of the Nelson Settlement:—

“The level land in the broad part of the Wairau Valley, including Kaiparate-ao, amounts to about 100,000 acres, and probably the tributary valleys and low hills may give 40,000 or 50,000 more, adapted for pasturage more particularly. The gorge of the Wairau has, before now, been estimated at 50,000 acres, more particularly adapted for sheep-feeding. Of the 100,000 acres in the plain, 60,000 may probably be set down as available for agriculture, and of the remainder there possibly will be found some adjoining the river at the upper part of the plain equally desirable. The agricultural portion of the Wairau Plain is assumed to comprise Kaiparate-ao, and the tract of country contained within the hilly boundaries on either side, extending about ten miles from the coast. The progress of the surveys, and a closer examination of the land, may, however, somewhat modify this statement.”

No natives whatever permanently inhabit this district; and though a few sometimes come from Cloudy Bay to a small village near the mouth of the river, for the sake of fishing, they have not cultivated more than five acres of land in the whole valley and plain.

All the disputes as to the Company's title to the land here have been recently arranged by Governor Grey, who has agreed to pay the natives concerned the sum of 3000*l.* for their claim.

In the course of these disputes, the fatal massacre of Wairau occurred, on the 17th of June, 1843. It is needless to enter into the details of that lamentable event. The victims, twenty-two in number, including Captain Arthur Wakefield, and other leading men among the first Colonists of Nelson, lie buried on the spot where the massacre took place, on the east bank of the tributary stream called the Tua Marino, near its confluence with the main river.

The attention of some of the Wellington settlers has been recently called to the advantages held out by the extensive tract of rich pasture country on the south-eastern side of this district. Mr. Clifford, in the years 1846-7, received upwards of 3000 sheep from Sydney, which were landed at Port Underwood. He has formed a sheep-station, as a squatter, in the neighbourhood of Cape Campbell; and employs a vessel of ten tons, built at Wellington, to run between that place and his station. His example has been followed on a smaller scale by several other Wellington Colonists.

On the W. coast, about 10 miles S.W. of Cape Farewell, there is a very good harbour for small vessels, called South Wanganui. Here there are extensive coal beds, equally easy of access with those in Massacre Bay, which are probably portions of the same formation.

As far as Rocky Point, about 35 miles S.W. of South Wanganui, the coast is rocky and iron-bound; steep spurs from the high mountains, composed of granite and gneiss, come down into the sea. The

coast then trends nearly due S., and bears the same character for 14 miles, a snowy range approaching close to the sea. Numerous small streams have their mouths along this coast; and there are two larger ones,—the Wakapori, 5 miles S. of Rocky Point, and the Haihai, at its southernmost extremity. Then succeeds a sandy beach for 16 miles, with 5000 or 10,000 acres of low, level land at its back, through which the Karamea river flows. The coast again takes a S.S.W. direction, and iron-bound character, for about 10 miles, at the end of which is the mouth of the Mokihinui river. 8 miles further, along a sandy beach, to which, however, the mountains approach closely, is the mouth of the Ngakuhau river.

Here the mountains continue in a due S. direction, while the low sandy coast trends gradually S.W. and W. to Cape Foulwind. In the bight of the bay thus formed, which faces the N., is the mouth of the Buller river, in latitude about $41^{\circ} 45'$ S. This is about 18 miles S.W. of the mouth of the Ngakuhau, and 10 miles E. of Cape Foulwind.

From that cape, the coast again lies N. and S., for about 10 miles, sandy and low; then an isolated ridge reaches the sea from the main range of mountains. Cape Foulwind itself and the immediately neighbouring land is high and rocky, but a wide tract of low, level, wooded country, of the most fertile character, amounting probably to 30,000 or 40,000 acres of land, occupies the space on either bank of the Buller, which traverses it for about 10 or 12 miles, between the mountains and the sea.

Although larger than any of the rivers between it and Cape Farewell, the Buller appears unavailable for navigation to any but small craft, having a shallow entrance. It takes its rise in the lakes Arthur and Ilowick, which have been before mentioned,* and which are situated amidst the mountains, in the heart of a

* See page 43.

very picturesque country, about 40 miles S.S.W. of Nelson in a direct line. In the same neighbourhood the Motupiko, Motueka, and Wairau rivers have their sources.

Lake Arthur, about 4 miles long, N. and S., by one mile broad, is only separated by one ridge of hills from the Wairau. The main stream of the Buller flows out of the N. end of the lake.

Lake Howick, 8 miles long, N. and S., by one broad, lies 10 miles W. of Lake Arthur, separated from it by the spurs of a neighbouring snow-covered range to the S. A tributary stream of the Buller flows out of its N. end.

Narrow tracts of land available for tillage, varying in extent from 500 to 3000 or 4000 acres, lie in these valleys; and a great part of the mountainous country which girds them is excellently adapted for pasturage. They are, however, difficult of access, either from Nelson or from the W. coast. Below the Aglionby valley, which is the largest of these tracts fitted for tillage, and which lies about 13 miles W. of Lake Howick, the Buller plunges into mountain gorges, and traverses a snowy range. It is about 15 miles in a straight line E. and W., from this spot to the egress of the river on to the level plain near its mouth; and the only part of its course which has been explored below the Aglionby valley, is that immediately contiguous to the sea-coast. S. of the ridge mentioned as bounding the great plain of the Buller, a small river, the Ngawaipakiri, has its mouth; and here there appears to be another tract of level country, amounting probably to about 5000 acres, and extending 8 miles along the coast.

An iron-bound coast, and mountains close to the sea, again succeed for 19 miles, with the exception of a beach about 8 miles long, not backed by any level country.

The coast is then again low, with sandy beach, for

about 30 miles, as far as Bold Head. In this space are the mouths of three rivers, the Grey, the Teramau, and the Greenstone, or Arahura River. Of these the Grey is the principal. Its mouth is in latitude about $42^{\circ} 32'$ S. Like the Buller, its entrance is unavailable for more than small craft.

Here there is a great extent of level, fertile, wooded land. The valley of the Grey, which stretches inland towards the E. and N.E., appears to keep a breadth of 20 or 25 miles, as far as can be seen from the coast. The mountains between the valley of the Grey and that of the Greenstone do not approach within 30 miles of the coast; and a few natives, who live at the mouth of the latter river, report that there is an easy communication, by the valley which it forms, across the island to Banks's Peninsula. They speak of a large lake on the path, and of a vast extent of level grassy plains.

Bold Head is in about $42^{\circ} 50'$ S. latitude. The general direction of the coast from Cape Foulwind to Bold Head is about S.S.W.

These particulars are gathered from the interesting journals, maps, and sketches of two separate exploring parties from Nelson.* The first, in 1845-6, was headed by Mr. W. Fox, then Agent of the Company at Nelson, and proceeded by the Waimea and Motupiko valleys to explore the Lakes, and to the W. end of the Aglionby valley. The second, starting in March, 1846, consisted of Messrs. Brunner and Heaphy, the latter of whom had accompanied Mr. Fox. They walked along the W. coast from South Wanganui to the Greenstone, and endured considerable hardships and privations in their journey there and back.

There are only two native villages along that coast; at the Greenstone river, and a few miles N. of the Buller. The population of both together probably does not amount to 100 souls.

* To be seen at New Zealand House, on application to the Secretary.

The following, by the before-mentioned writer in the *Nelson Examiner*, is a rough summary of the probable amount of comparatively level land within the supposed Boundaries of the Nelson Settlement:—

DISTRICT.	Gross Amount of Land surveyed or supposed to be comparatively level.	Estimated Amount of Land of fair average quality, immediately available for cultivation.
MASSACRE BAY	Acres.	Acres.
(a) Aorere	15,000	10,000
(b) Takaka and Motupipi	30,000	15,000
BLIND BAY.		
(c) Motueka	10,000	5,000
(d) Moutere Cliffs	15,000	—
(e) Moutere Wood	5,000	—
(f) Upper Motueka and Motupiko	18,000	5,000
(g) Wai-iti and tributaries	6,000	5,000
(h) Nelson Suburbs, Waimea West, and Waimea Islands	7,000	2,000
(i) PELORUS, including Kaituna Pass and tributaries	*15,000	15,000
(k) QUEEN CHARLOTTE SOUND, including Waitohe Pass and tributaries	*15,000	15,000
(l) WAIRAU.		
Kaiparata-ao	*20,000	60,000
Wairau Plain	100,000	
Wairau Valley	*50,000	
	306,000	132,000

“GENERAL DESCRIPTION OF THE DISTRICTS.

(a) Heavily timbered with rata, kaikateu, mai, rimu, and tawai or black birch. (b) A small portion open land covered with fern and the usual herbage on alluvial soil; the rest with timber as above, but less rata, and many totara trees in some spots. (c) Some hilly, open, and timbered land; much good soil, but very difficult of access. A few rich timber sections on the banks of the river. (d) Barren clay hills, covered with stunted fern and manuka. A small portion of rather better land near the cliffs. (e) Low undulating clay hills, covered with tawai and rimu principally. (f) A

large portion consists of very broken ground, covered with fern, toitoi, grass, and tall manuka. About half the Motupiko gorge is timbered, but the land is poor: the land below the junction of the two rivers is best. The tract is well suited for pasturage, but is much subject to floods. (g) A series of narrow gorges, covered with flax, fern, and grass; the soil supposed to be of medium quality. (h) The best portion of this is marshy ground, covered with flax, raupo, and grass, and is easy of drainage. The land at Waimea West consists of barren clay hills, and the Waimea Islands are little better than sand hillocks. (i) The greater portion timbered land, said to be fertile. (k) The greater portion finely timbered with totara, pine, hinau, &c., and the soil generally very productive. (l) The prevailing character of this tract of land is decidedly pastoral, more especially at Kaiparate-no, the upper part of the plain, and most of the valley. The portion most suited for agriculture lies within the lower half of the plain, and at Kaiparate-no; some of it is swampy, and said to be difficult of drainage. There is not much bush or timber land on it.

"N.B.—The asterisk prefixed to some of the figures denotes that the quantities are only roughly estimated by the eye or from vague information. All the other data are compiled from the actual surveys and information derived from personal inspection."

The Climate of the Nelson district generally, is very nearly the same as that of the Wellington district: but the country in the immediate vicinity of Blind Bay, including the site of Nelson, differs from that of the Town and neighbourhood of Wellington, in its remarkable immunity from frequent or violent winds.

Blind Bay has often been compared to one of those bays in the Mediterranean, to the head of which the wind scarcely ever blows home. The following extracts are descriptive of this peculiarity:—

"The climate in this deep bight of a bay is very remarkable. The wind which blows almost incessantly one way or the other through Cook's Strait, seems suddenly to lose its power before reaching the southern part of Blind Bay. Thus it is common for a vessel to be under double-reefed top-sails in the strait, and to have her sails all flapping in a calm soon after she has passed D'Urville Island or Massacre Bay. And I frequently observed that the speed and direction of the scud overhead, and driving masses of black clouds on the northern horizon, indicated a storm outside, when all near Nelson lay calm and slumbering, except a heavier swell than usual rolling on to the shoals at the bottom of the gulf. And in those cases, a little coaster, which had been out in the gale, would confirm our

conjectures on arriving a day or two later. During the month (April, 1842,) I only saw one day on which it blew a hard breeze; and then two large vessels rode it out in perfect safety in the anchorage outside the bar, although the wind was nearly due north. Now and then a light sea-breeze would bring welcome refreshment for two or three hours during the afternoon." * * *

"This very remarkable immunity from wind causes an almost incredible difference between the climate of Nelson and that of Wellington, although the two towns are as nearly as possible in the same latitude." — *Wakefield's 'Adventure in New Zealand,'* vol. ii. chap. vii.

The general aspect of Blind Bay, too, and especially of the Town of Nelson, is towards the warm north; while it is sheltered by very lofty mountains from the cold southerly winds which blow direct on to Wellington from the sea.

Thus Nelson, together with its immediate vicinity, enjoys more calm, and more hot weather, than Wellington; while at the same time the proximity of such high land appears to cause night-frosts, which are more frequent and more severe than at Wellington. All persons who have lived some years at Nelson, agree in praising the weather there. The following is extracted from the letter of a resident, dated May 4, 1846:—

"The Nelson climate is that of Paradise. To-day, for instance, it is equal, you know, to the 4th of November in England; I am in white trousers, summer waistcoat, and light shooting-coat; the sun is very hot, and walking half a mile makes one sweat heavily; there is hardly a breath of air; the sea is blue as the sky, and the ships as well as mountains on the other side of the bay reflected in the water as in a glass. It has been this weather for a week, and will continue all this moon. At full and change there will be two days' rain, and then fine hot weather again. The trees, grass, and flowers, are springing as if it were early summer, and all vegetation is deliciously green."

Of the following Meteorological Registers, No. I., being for the year 1846, was kept at the residence of Mr. Stephens, Rewaka, in the Motueka district. The observations were made in an exposed situation, out of doors, but quite sheltered from the rays of the sun, two miles distant from, and about fifty feet above the level

of the sea. No. II. was kept on the Waimea Plain, from September 1, 1846, to August 31, 1847, by Mr. J. W. Barnicoat. The site of the observations is the open plain, about two or three miles from any hills, and about fifteen feet above the level of the sea. In the absence of a self-registering thermometer, the height of the thermometer about an hour before sunrise is taken as the nearest approximation to the minimum, and from about half-past one to half-past two (according to the season) as the maximum.

I. Meteorological Register for 1846, kept at Rewaka.

MONTHS.	THERMOMETER.						WEATHER.				
	Mean Lowest.	Mean Highest.	Mean Noon.	Mean of the day between 8 A.M. and 8 P.M., taken every 4 hours.	Lowest on any Day.	Highest on any Day.	Fine Sunny Days.	Cloudy, but Fair.	Showery or partial Rain.	Continuous Rain.	Frosty Mornings.
January .. . . .	..	74	72	70	..	83	18	7	5	1	0
February .. . . .	..	71	70	68	..	77	15	5	8	0	0
March .. . . .	..	69	68	65½	..	76	19	2	8	2	0
April .. . . .	..	65	64	..	..	67	20	5	4	1	9
May .. . . .	..	60½	60	56	..	65	22	1	6	2	12
June	39	56	54	50	32	66	16	1	10	3	9
July	40	57	55	50	30	63	20	5	3	3	9
August	36½	58	55	50	29	65	13	2	13	3	8
September	34½	64½	61	55	29	72	23	1	6	0	8
October	40½	67	63	59½	34	87	18	3	9	1	0
November	40½	72	68	63½	34	84	18	3	9	0	0
December	42½	75	70½	67	37	89	22	4	3	2	0
Whole year	39	65½	63½	59½	29	89	224	39	84	18	55

II. *Meteorological Register for 1846-7, kept on Waimea Plain.*

MONTHS.	WIND.				WEATHER.							THERMOMETER IN SHADE.			
	North-East.	South-West.	From other quarters.	Calm Days.	Fine Sunny Days.	Cloudy Days, but Fair.	Rainy Days.	Showery or Partial Rainy Days.	Quantity of Rain In Inches.	Frosty Mornings.	Mean Lowest.	Mean Highest.	Lowest on any Day.	Highest on any Day.	
September, 1846	18	4	0	8	21	5	1	3	4.22	9	40	56	31	63	88
October	16	9	2	4	20	5	1	5	1.15	2	43	65	29	75	79
November . . .	21	7	2	0	26	2	0	2	0.23	0	47	71	38	80	85
December . . .	23	8	0	0	26	4	0	1	0.13	0	50	80	46	82	88
January, 1847	23	3	0	5	19	6	1	5	2.35	0	53	78	46	88	88
February . . .	16	7	0	5	19	6	2	1	3.40	0	52	78	41	88	88
March	10	9	2	10	20	4	2	5	2.59	0	48	74	38	77	77
April	18	2	0	10	17	6	1	6	2.22	4	44	63	34	71	71
May	18	5	0	8	20	5	2	4	3.34	2	41	60	30	70	70
June	14	4	3	9	17	9	2	2	3.56	4	42	55	31	58	58
July	22	6	1	2	16	7	5	3	4.22	9	39	53	30	56	56
August	20	7	8	1	18	6	2	5	1.32	7	40	56	29	59	59
	219	71	13	62	239	65	19	42	28.73	34	45	66	29	88	88

The *Nelson Examiner** thus comments on these Tables:—

“The statistics of the weather, as given in No. I., would probably require some slight modification with reference to the locality of the Town, in various particulars; but it may be assumed that the difference would not be very material in the aggregate details throughout the year. Rewaka is distant from Nelson about twenty miles, in a north-westerly direction across the Bay, and consequently is thus much nearer to the quarter whence apparently the greatest amount of rain proceeds, which circumstance would account for the supposition that showers are more frequent there than at Nelson or in the Waimea district. The fact, also, of its position under the hills, which shelter it from the south and south-westerly winds, tends to confirm the opinion that the range of the thermometer is rarely so low as in the town. In other respects, probably, the tabular columns, &c. would not exhibit any striking variation.”

“The prevalent winds in fine weather, during the greater part of the year, are from N.E. and S.W., usually termed sea and land breezes. During the summer months, which may be said to include December, January, February, and March, the sea-breeze is usually fresh, sets in from nine to eleven, A.M., and continues from four to six, P.M. In the months of April, May, June, July, and August, the breezes are usually much lighter than in the summer, the S.W. and westerly winds being rather more prevalent. During September, October, and November, the wind is more variable than in the preceding months, the southerly and south-easterly being often accompanied by strong gusts; heavy gales seeming to be more prevalent than at other periods. The N.W. and W. appear to be the most rainy quarters, but the gusty squalls from the S.E. often bring heavy storms.”

“The different phases of the moon are almost invariably accompanied by an apparent or real change in the state of the weather. That is to say, at every change of the moon’s quarter during fine weather, either the sky becomes obscured, or actual rainy weather in a greater or less degree occurs.” * * * *

“Comparing this (No. II.) with the one for the preceding twelve-months, it exhibits a higher temperature throughout the year. In 1845-6, the thermometer only rose to 80, and that but in the month of December; whereas last summer it rose to 88, and stood as high as 80, both in November and February. In the winter, also, of 1846, both in June and July, the mercury was down to 24 and 24½, while 29 has been the minimum in the winter we have just passed. In the mean highest for the year there is, therefore, an advance of three degrees, and in the mean lowest two degrees. The number of

* The local newspaper, published at Nelson.

frosty mornings has also been far less than in the preceding year; in 1845-6 they numbered fifty-four, the present table gives only thirty-four. The quantity of rain which fell last year was not so great by four inches as in the year preceding, and there were twenty-three days less on which rain fell. In bright sunny days there was a slight increase."

The Soil varies, as on the other side of the Strait, according to the different circumstances under which the land has been formed. Thus, there is every variety of superficial soil to be found in the district, from barren rock and sand-hummocks, or clay lands—unproductive until they have been manured, or exposed to the fertilizing influence of the atmosphere—to the richest alluvial deposit. The sub-strata, also, are nearly the same, except that limestone and coal are found together, and also granite in the western parts of the district.

The Roads already made to the country districts, early in 1845, were as follows:—

One from Nelson to beyond the village of Wakefield, in the valley called Glen-iti, twenty-one miles. This road, for the first two miles from town, wanted gravelling to be good in winter; also for a mile six miles from town, and at a few other places. During the dry months, (eight out of twelve,) a coach and four might be driven all the way to Glen-iti; and Mr. Stafford and the Hon. A. C. Dillon contrived to get their gigs from the Waimea through the worst parts all the preceding winter. The cross roads from this line amounted to eight miles; they open out and drain various blocks of land, much resorted to. From Glen-iti, pack-horses or bullocks can travel all the way to the big wood at the south-east end of the Wairau Valley without difficulty at all seasons. The wood, twelve miles in extent, could easily be cut through, being of black birch without underwood. Parts only of the road from the Waimea to Motueka, equal in all to ten miles, had been made. There was, however, a good horse track over the hills in those parts in which it was not complete. From Motueka to Rewaka, three miles and a half were made. Of the road to Wakapuaka and the Happy Valley, nine miles were completed; very little was wanted to make it a good cart and horse road at all seasons. The roads above enumerated pass ground of various kinds—through swamps, woods, or fern—and required in some places heavy cuttings, or embankments, in many drainage, in some only cutting of the fern.

About the Town were the Haven Road, one mile and a half, the

sea-wall much damaged; beyond the town sections, that to Brook Street Valley, one mile; up the Maitai, half a mile. Total extent of roads, fifty-four miles and a half.

The Natural Productions, whether indigenous or introduced, are nearly the same as those of the Wellington district. Only points of difference will be here noted.

I. VEGETABLE PRODUCTIONS.

Indigenous.

The *Anise* plant is very abundant in all the pastoral districts near Nelson; and, as has been before-mentioned, it much improves the quality of meat fed on land where it grows. A small quantity of *oil* has already been made from this plant and exported.

The shores of Pelorus and Queen Charlotte Sounds teem with Timber, of which some kinds, if first thoroughly seasoned, are particularly well adapted for *Cask-staves*. Much discredit, however, has hitherto been cast on this article of export, through the neglect of sufficient seasoning, and through carelessness in cooperage. The casks have been reported against as subject to excessive leakage.

Introduced.

Barley and *Hops* both flourish exceedingly in the districts cultivated near Nelson. *There is no hop-fly or flea*. A considerable quantity of *Beer* is brewed at Nelson, and exported to the other settlements.

The *Vine* has not been tried yet, to any extent, only six years having elapsed since the first foundation of the settlement: but it is believed that the great prevalence of calm, hot weather in this district, would be peculiarly favourable to its growth and prosperity. Even at Wellington the vine has been found to succeed well in the open air in sheltered situations; and there is no doubt but that Nelson, although as nearly as possible in the same latitude, is subject to far less wind, and enjoys a greater continuance of steady hot weather.

The following is an extract from the letter of a lady at Nelson, dated October 22nd, 1847:—

“Our garden is now looking uncommonly well, and there is a very large promise of fruit of all kinds—cherries, plums, apples, pears, figs, strawberries, gooseberries, and a few peaches. The vines are just beginning to thrust their buds; there is one—the ‘early black July,’ I think it is called—that is very much more forward than the rest, and has the bunches formed. I think we shall have great quantities of grapes this year, all the vines look so remarkably

healthy. We have made an orchard this year, and grafted some five dozen apple stocks, so that in three years, which is the age at which apple trees come into bearing in New Zealand, we shall be well stocked with fruit."

A short account of most of the Vegetable Productions introduced into the district occurs in the next page, in the extracts from the Report of the Agricultural and Horticultural Society.

II. ANIMAL PRODUCTIONS.

Indigenous.

Quail abound to a remarkable degree throughout the fern and grass districts. *Wild hogs*, also, and the *Wood-hen*, called *Weka* by the natives, (see page 163,) are numerous in all parts hitherto explored.

There are *Shrimps* and *Oysters*. The latter are abundant on several parts of the coast. Their principal haunts hitherto discovered are:—1st. The rocks at the entrance of Nelson Haven. 2nd. A cove called Oyster Bay, on the eastern side of Tory Channel in Queen Charlotte Sound. 3rd. A cove also called Oyster Bay, at the N.W. end of Port Underwood.

Introduced.

The Agricultural and Horticultural Society established at Nelson, which has fifty members at a guinea a year each, held its Autumnal Meeting on the 10th of March, 1847. (This answers to the 10th of September in England). The following is an account of the proceedings, abridged from the local newspaper:—

"The first day was devoted to a ploughing-match, for bullock-ploughs and for horse-ploughs. The spot selected for it was Mr. Saxton's farm, on the Waimea, about six miles from the town.

"In consequence of the short notice given, only eleven ploughs were on the ground, seven of which were bullock-teams, and four horse-ploughs; had more time been given, there would have been at least double the number. The governor, who happened to be then at Nelson, came on the ground, and generously gave 5*l.* 5*s.* as a subscription. The bullock-ploughs were the first to start; but an accident occurring to one reduced the number to six.

"The ground to be ploughed was a quarter of an acre, and the time allowed was two hours and twenty minutes. The whole did their work considerably within the specified time. The horse-ploughs followed."

" On the next day, there were given the following AGRICULTURAL PRIZES:—Cart filly, saddle filly, long-wooled ram, bull (second prize), best boar, second best ditto, best sow, second best ditto, pair of rabbits, sack of wheat, bushel of ditto, bushel of ditto, sack of barley, ditto (second prize), bushel of oats, sainfoin seed, vetch seed, rye grass seed, Swede turnips, white turnips, mangold wurzel."

" A capital collection of grass seeds, both native and European, was exhibited, but there was not the required quantity to entitle them to a prize."

" The exhibition of fruit was highly satisfactory, considering the infancy of the settlement. The show of apples, for quality, would have been creditable to any Society at home. Peaches were also shown in great abundance, many measuring from eight to nine and a half inches in circumference, and the number of such fruit grown on one tree is truly astonishing. Grapes, too, were plentiful, though the vines on which they were grown are necessarily very young. Some required, perhaps, another fortnight to ripen thoroughly, particularly those grown in the open ground; but there is no reason to doubt but the grape will do remarkably well in this settlement. The black Hamburg, which received the first prize, were very fine grapes indeed. The black cluster grape exhibited, was also a delicious fruit. These were the only dark grapes shown, the remainder being all white. There was also a pomegranate exhibited, which had ripened in the open air, and several fine melons. Of course it was too late in the season for many fruits, and, with the exception of a few Cape gooseberries, plums, and Alpine strawberries, no others were shown. The show of vegetables was scanty, which was to be expected, after the unusually dry summer. Most of the vegetables shown were, however, fine. The samples of grain were excellent. Among the exhibitors of wheat were Maories,* and a very excellent sample they showed, though they did not get a prize. They bore their loss with the best humour, and seemed thoroughly to understand the principle on which the show was conducted.

" HORTICULTURAL PRIZES.—Dessert apples, kitchen ditto, grapes (first prize), ditto (second prize), peaches (first prize), ditto (second prize), rhubarb, water melon, melon (first prize), ditto (second prize), kitchen plums, tomatas, pumpkin, cucumber, vegetable marrow, nosegay, dahlia, carrots, parsnips, onions, onions (second prize), beet, celery, salading, kidney beans, peas, potatoes, turnips, cabbage, broad beans.

" HONORARY PRIZES.—Alpine strawberry, kidney beans, horse radish."

With regard to *Sheep-farming* in the Nelson district, the following extract of a letter from one of the leading Colonists, dated 22nd of October, 1847, conveys very valuable information:—

* Natives.

" Attached to the house, which is a very comfortable cottage, not ugly in appearance, is a garden and orchard of about twenty five acres, and a farm of fifty acres. The former is a never-failing source of amusement to both of us; whenever at a loss for occupation, we take a hoe or a pruning-knife, and sally forth to the garden; as a great deal there is daily being made, (it being only three years old,) it presents even more than the average choice of occupation.

" Of the farm, thirty-five acres is made a rotation of crops, the remainder I retain in grass, for the use of my horses and cows.

" I do not farm for profit, at least not as a source of income, (it is of too small an extent to pay largely,) but with a view to raise my own flour, oats, barley, potatoes, and hay; the present prices and difficulty of procuring labour, deter many from enlarging their farms. Our principal stock are our sheep, of which we have about 1400, running in the Upper Motueka valley, about sixteen miles long, with an average breadth of three-quarters of a mile; the station is about twenty-three miles from the house, an easy ride of five hours.

" I purchased my sheep in April, 1844, from the late Sir John Jamieson, of New South Wales, whose sheep were celebrated for the purity of their Merino blood, he having bred from the Spanish Merino, without any admixture for thirteen years, except a cross with some rams from the Empress Josephine's flock, (the latter were derived from the celebrated Negretti flocks.) I brought down from Sydney thorough bred Merino rams, and some with a cross of Southdown. I find a cross with the latter, though it of course alters the character of the wool, gives additional size, disposition to fatten, and weight of fleece, whilst the mothers are better nurses, particularly in cold weather, and have a tendency to produce more twins than the pure Merino. Although the wool is not so fine, the greater weight more than makes up for any loss on that head, as from their greater hardihood, they are more adapted for the colder hilly runs; they are, I think, to be preferred, with say one fourth Southdown, three-fourths Merino blood, to the thoroughbred Merino. In warmer localities near the sea coast, I believe the others, however, (the Merino) to be the most profitable sheep, but I cannot speak decidedly on this head, until after the receipt of more advices as to the sale in the London markets of the different descriptions of wool.

" One general rule must be borne in mind, that you must get a very considerable increase of price per lb. for fine wool, to compensate for the loss of weight of fleece and of mutton, and for the want of the more prolific and hardy constitution of the half-bred. As to the Leicester cross, I must strongly condemn it; the wool is of the worst quality, not to be improved for many generations; whilst the sheep, although doing well enough, where they have great abundance of food, are not generally adapted for the wild runs

of this country, and the ewes are not such good nurses as those with Southdown blood. A large breeder at Port Philip, who has for many years bred from Leicester rams, has now quite given them up, and lately wrote that he would as soon see a mad dog in his flocks as a Leicester ram. Up to the present time, Mr. ———'s sheep and cattle ran with mine, but the run being now overstocked, his share are to start for the Wairau in a few weeks. Many stations will be formed in the latter district this summer; the settlement of the land claims, and the returns obtained up to the present time from stock-breeding having given a most healthy stimulus to the settlers of Nelson, who, with the exception, perhaps, of those who may have emigrated under the impression that they would make large fortunes here (they do not well know how) are satisfied with their prospects.

"I really know of no pursuit in which a limited capital, say from 1000*l.* or even less, to 5000*l.* can be more advantageously employed than in sheep and cattle feeding, whilst literally no skill or previous knowledge of the business is requisite, provided that the new beginner will only keep his eyes out of his pockets, and judge for himself.

"I can consequently recommend capitalists of the amount stated above, to come to New Zealand, with all but a certainty of success.

"For labourers, also, there is steady market, as farm-servants, shepherds, dairymen; some good shearers are much wanted; young women, too, are in demand as house-servants, dairywomen, and wives for the bachelor portion of the community.

"Almost all the *ci-devant* labourers are now small farmers and stock owners, whilst some have re-emigrated to the other settlements, induced by the employment to be obtained on Government works, which absorb all the surplus labour. The young women are all married, and doing their best towards increasing the Anglo-Zealand race. They generally make what are termed good matches, marrying men above themselves in society.

"I hope ——— may be successful with the rooks and sparrows; the first would soon find their way over the country, though the sparrows are more local in their habits. Woodcocks, snipes, and partridges, should also be brought out, although there might be a difficulty during the voyage with the two first; still young ones might succeed, and the country is admirably adapted for them. The two last would be certain to succeed if well looked after; they do not mind captivity, if kept clean.

"If swallows, too, could be introduced, they would be a great boon: the flies during the summer months annoy the horses much: I would give 10*l.* to have a brood of swallows under my stable eave.

"I have always wished to see red or fallow deer, or both, turned out in New Zealand; the prairies, from Otago to Port Cooper, are just the place for them, but they would do anywhere in this island.

"We have had a capital lambing season in the one just over. ——— and myself have had 123 per cent. of lambs, all doing well."

Bees have been introduced; and have succeeded as well as at Wellington.

III.—MINERAL PRODUCTIONS.

Coal is found at South Wanganui; at Motupipi in Massacre Bay, where it is worked; and also in small strata on the east shore of Nelson Haven. It has also recently been discovered in the Wairau Plain.

Limestone has been discovered in Massacre Bay; and also at two spots in the immediate vicinity of the town. There are limekilns at Massacre Bay, and at a spot about three miles south of the town, in the district called Suburban South. The other limestone quarry is north of Nelson, in the district called Suburban North, and very advantageously situated for a good supply of fire-wood, and for water-carriage.

There is plenty of *Clay* for brick-making, in all parts of the Nelson district; and *White Pipe-clay* is found at Port Underwood.

The following is the outline of the Plan on which the Settlement of Nelson was originally founded:—

The settlement was to consist of 201,000 acres, in 1000 allotments of 201 acres each.

Each allotment to consist of three sections, viz., 150 acres of rural land, 50 acres of suburban land, and 1 town acre: the town to consist of 1000 acres, exclusive of reserves for public objects.

The price of each allotment was 300*l*.

As soon as a certain number of allotments had been paid for, a ballot was held, as in the case of the Wellington settlement, (see p. 175,) in order to establish the order of choice: but with this difference, that a separate ballot was held for town, suburban, and rural sections; so that the purchaser of an allotment might become entitled to a different order of choice for each of the three sections included in it.

The company added a quantity equal to one-tenth of the Settlement as Native Reserves, so that the whole land to be appropriated was 221,100 acres, and the town was 1100 acres exclusive of public reserves.

The Company exercised a right which had been stipulated for, of purchasing 100 allotments for its own benefit, at the same price and subject to the same terms in every respect as other purchasers.

The Company agreed to expend the purchase-money received in the following proportions:—

One half to the exclusive purpose of Emigration to the settlement

of Nelson. (Out of this, 20,000*l.* was reserved as a Special Fund for making allowances of passage-money to purchasers and their families, according to the discretion of the Directors.)

One-sixth to defray the Company's expenses in selecting the site and establishing the Settlement. (Any surplus of this fund to be applied to the purpose next mentioned.)

One-sixth to public purposes, for rendering the Settlement commodious and attractive, such as Religious uses and endowments for colonists of all denominations, the establishment of a College, and the encouragement of Steam Navigation for the benefit of the Settlement.

The remaining sixth to the Company, for its expenses, and profit on the use of its capital.

In exercise of a discretionary power stipulated for by the Company, they reserved 200 allotments for sale in the Australasian Colonies.

When the purchase-money of 370 allotments had been paid, the whole 1100 numbers were balloted for, on the 31st August, 1841, and an order of choice determined for each of the sections included in each allotment.

The selections took place in the Colony, as the districts were surveyed. The first was that of the Town allotments, which took place in April, 1842. There were five classes of allotments, which were all chosen in the order of choice which had been determined for them by the ballot in London; and the map of the Town of Nelson thus showed the lots chosen by private landowners, by a Government officer for the Native Reserves, and by a Company's officer for the Company's own sections, for those reserved for sale in the colony, and for those remaining unsold.

Subsequently to the first ballot, 64 allotments were purchased in London, and 8 allotments in the colony.* In these cases, another ballot was gone through, in order to determine what allotment, with its orders of choice, as fixed by the first ballot, and in virtue of which selections had already in some cases been made, should belong to the purchaser.

In the year 1845, however, the inhabitants of the settlement applied to the Company to modify the arrangements, so as to allow the landowners the option

* A few Town and Suburban sections have since been sold there, or leased with purchasing-clause.

of acquiring fresh land, and promoting concentration, by means of re-selection under certain conditions. In furtherance of this object, but not in the precise mode suggested by them, the Company proposed a new set of Regulations in October, 1845. These, however, were received with great dissatisfaction, and consequently withdrawn. The settlers continued to press for a remodelling of the original scheme, and the Directors therefore made another endeavour to carry out such an alteration.

Negotiations ensued between a committee of the resident land-purchasers on the one hand, and the Company's Agents on the other, who were apprised of the almost unanimous consent of the land purchasers resident in this country to certain broad principles on which the re-modelling of the arrangements should be conducted. On the 30th of June, 1847, the Nelson Committee came to the following Resolutions:—

“ 1. That it is indispensable that the Company should apply to Parliament immediately for an Act to enable them to make the adjustment in the Scheme of the Nelson Settlement now proposed.

“ 2. That such Act should contain a clause to empower any Purchaser who should decline to avail himself of such adjustment, or who, having availed himself of such adjustment, should still be dissatisfied, to refer his claim—in the first case to Arbitration, in the Settlement or in England, at his option, without reference to such adjustment;—and in the latter case, to have it determined by Arbitration to what amount of additional compensation, if any, he may be entitled.

“ 3. That where such Arbitration shall take place in the Settlement, the expense thereof would be properly chargeable on the Establishment Fund.

“ 4. That the propositions now submitted are founded on the physical impossibility of carrying out the Original Scheme of the Settlement, and the consequent necessity of some equitable compromise.

“ 5. That a re-distribution of the Town and Suburban Sections is just and necessary; and that some land not hitherto included in Suburban Choices should be made available for that purpose.

“ 6. That upon consideration of the various modes proposed for the re-distribution of the Town and Suburban Land, the plan which most combines fairness, simplicity, and capability of imme-

diate application, and best meets the spirit of the conditions under which the purchases were made, is a simple re-selection according to the Original Order of Choice, with the exception of those Orders representing the Unsold Sections.

"7. That a Town should be laid out as a Shipping Port to the Wairau District, the site to be determined hereafter, upon a careful examination of the localities; that the Town should consist, if possible, of not less than 1000 Sections of quarter-acres; and that the selection thereof should be made in the Original Order of Choice fixed by the ballot for the Nelson Town Sections, including the Choices representing the Unsold Sections as well as the Sold.

"8. That a limited quantity of land in contiguity to the new Town, to be determined by the nature of the locality, should be laid out and offered for distribution as Suburban Sections, in order to make up for the ascertained deficiency of available Sections in the Blind Bay district.

"9. That it is desirable to compensate such Resident Original Purchasers, being Cultivators, or others who have been Residents and Cultivators, who have debarred themselves of the advantages of the proposed re-distribution by the outlay made on the Sections in their occupation—by enabling them to take their Rural Sections, or portions of land equivalent thereto in amount to be determined by Arbitration, in contiguity to their Suburban Sections; and that the re-distribution of Suburban Land be postponed until after such cases shall be adjusted.

"10. That the above Resolution, however, should not extend to the holders of those Suburban Sections who have already effected exchanges for 'Unsold' Sections subsequent to the ——— day of September, 1844.

"11. That it is desirable to allow of two or more inferior Suburban Sections, or portions thereof, according to degree of inferiority, to be decided by Arbitration, being united and made available together for choice as equivalent to a cultivable Fifty-Acre Section.

"12. That the Purchaser should have the option of taking Suburban Sections rejected in the re-selection, for Rural Sections.

"13. That the Company should be at liberty to accede to applications for increased quantities of inferior land in exchange for Rural Land-Orders.

"14. That in the selection of the Rural Sections the Unsold Orders of Choice should be suppressed, so that the actual Purchasers may choose first; and that the distribution of the Rural Sections should be postponed until the proposed arrangements respecting the Suburban Sections shall have been carried out.

"15. That the surplus Sections in the town of Nelson, including portions of land within the outside boundary lines not yet surveyed, should be sold by Auction in quantities and at upset prices to be fixed from time to time; that such lands should be let, if possible,

in the meanwhile; and that the Proceeds should be appropriated according to the proportions of the Original Scheme.

" 16. That the land taken for the Unsold Choices in the proposed Town at Wairau should only be sold by Public Auction, the Proceeds to be appropriated as above mentioned.

" 17. That supposing the estimates which have been made of the available land in the various Districts should be inaccurate, and any quantity of the land should remain towards the completion of the original number of 1000 Allotments, it will be desirable to dispose thereof by Public Auction on the spot, the Proceeds to be appropriated as mentioned in the two preceding Resolutions.

" 18. That the Committee defer expressing any opinion on the subject of the past administration of the Trust-Funds, until the receipt of the promised information from the New Zealand Company, but consider that the future management of them should be vested in a Board of Trustees residing in the Settlement, to consist of Seven Members, of whom two should be appointed by the Company, two by the Private Absentee Proprietors, and three by the Resident Proprietors.

" 19. That after agreeing upon the general principles on which the Scheme of the Settlement would be fairly remodelled, and after carefully considering the complicated question of compensation, the Committee remain sensible that the details of the proposed Arrangements will probably be insufficient to meet all the cases contemplated; but, after the most anxious deliberation, they can perceive no mode of meeting the merits of such cases, except the recourse to Arbitration of special claims provided for by the second Resolution.

" 20. That the co-operation and assistance of the Non-Resident Proprietors be most earnestly requested to promote and carry into execution the foregoing Resolutions.

" 21. That, taking into consideration the diminished amount of the Trust-Funds, as compared with the sums originally contemplated, it is not desirable strictly to limit the powers of the proposed Board of Trustees to the specific application of those Funds to the exact purposes named in the Terms of Purchase, provided their general application to analogous purposes be maintained."

On the 3rd March, 1848, the Company communicated to the Committee their concurrence with the above resolutions, subject to certain modifications, explained in the following extracts from a letter of the same date, from the Secretary of the Company to their principal Agent in the Colony:—

" To the several proposals of re-distributing the Town and Suburban Lands by means of re-selections according to the respective Original Orders of Choice, with the exception of the Orders

representing Unsold Sections—of including as Suburban some Lands not hitherto laid out as such,—of permitting, with the exception stated in the 10th Resolution, persons who have improved their Suburban Sections to take in contiguity thereto their Rural Sections, or such equivalent for the same as may be determined by Arbitration;—of allowing larger quantities of inferior Suburban and Rural Lands to be taken under Arbitration as respectively equivalent to smaller quantities of superior;—of suppressing or postponing the Unsold Orders of Choice with regard to Rural Lands;—and of permitting rejected Suburban Lands to be selected as Rural;—the Court gives its full assent, the mode of Arbitration being pointed out below.”

“To the proposals for laying out a Town as a Shipping-Port to the Wairau District, in such locality as may upon examination be deemed most eligible;—of allowing Quarter-acre Sections to be selected therein [without additional payment] in the original order of Town choice, including the Numbers both Sold and Unsold;—and of permitting some Suburban Lands to be laid out, if practicable, adjoining such Town;—the Court consents also; and it has requested of the Secretary of State that the Governor may be instructed to take steps for acquiring possession of the Site of such Town without delay. But it appears to the Court that, if the Site eventually determined on permit, and if no material objection suggest itself either to you or to the Settlers, it will be advisable, with the view of eventually obtaining larger Funds for Public Purposes, to lay out a Town of 2000 instead of 1000 Quarter-acre Sections only, —the Proceeds of the Sale being applied always to the purposes of the several Special Funds in the established proportions.”

With regard to the proposed Arbitration, the Secretary refers to an arrangement with the Colonial Office, by which Governor Grey has been empowered to dispose as he may think fit of the whole landed estate of the Company, so as to compensate any claimants who may be discontented; and it is only stipulated that compensation must be made exclusively in land.

“In those Resolutions which relate to the future disposal of such lands as shall remain available after the arrangement now contemplated shall have been carried out, it appears to the Directors that the Landowners propose unnecessarily to tie up their own hands, and so far to run a risk of defeating their own intentions, by restricting all future sales to the one mode of Auction.”

“They therefore propose in the parliamentary enactment—if such enactment shall be found necessary—to release the Company from the obligation of adhering to the mode of sale by *ballot*, but to leave

open the power of adopting any mode that on mature consideration shall from time to time appear to be best."

"To the appointment of a Board of Trustees, to be constituted as proposed in the 18th Resolution, and empowered to appropriate and expend the several special funds, (with the exception, of course, of the fund for emigration, which evidently can only be administered in England)—and to the application of those funds to purposes analogous to the purposes originally specified, but not exactly identical with them—the Court will cheerfully consent, if it be found that it either has, or can obtain, legal power to divest itself thenceforward of the responsibilities which it has undertaken. To such Board, also, the Court will be prepared to give the fullest information on every point connected with the past administration of the funds, and suggests that in the interim, the landowners should instruct their Committee to draw up a statement of the points upon which such information is specifically required. It must be understood, however, that the proposed Board is to execute in detail the several measures upon which it may resolve, as the Court cannot consent to interfere, or be in any way concerned in the administration or expenditure of any fund which may be entrusted to such Board after its appointment."*

A sub-committee of the Nelson land-purchasers has already proceeded to examine the sites eligible for a town, according to the 7th Resolution, and has reported,† as mentioned at page 227, in favour of Newton Bay, or Waitohe, at the western extremity of Queen Charlotte Sound. By the last accounts, this site had not yet been purchased from the natives who claim it, but there appeared every likelihood that this would soon be effected. The Wairau Plain had been surveyed, and the re-selection of suburban lands, and selection of rural lands, had been advertised to take place immediately. Many of the Colonists were preparing to establish themselves in the Plain, with their flocks and herds.

The price and rent of land, and the cost of clearing

* The whole correspondence on this, and other subjects connected with the *Adjustment of Land Questions* in all the Company's settlements, was printed in a pamphlet bearing that title, which was given in 1848, by the Company, to every purchaser of land in their settlements.

† This report is published in the *New Zealand Journal* of July 1, 1848, vol. ix., No. 224, page 150.

and farming it, are about the same as in the Wellington district. The chief part of the land, however, yet cultivated near Nelson is flax or fern land. It is much less expensive to clear than the heavily-timbered land in the Hutt Valley, but it neither bears so heavy a crop at first, nor will it last so long without manure.

Mr. John Ward, a Colonist of moderate means, who had spent two or three years at Nelson, published, during his stay in England in the year 1847, some letters which he had written to friends who asked his advice as to whether they should emigrate. The following extracts from those letters, which are dated in April and May, 1847, will give some idea of *the cost of clearing, price, and rent of land* about Nelson. They refer rather to open land, covered with flax and fern, than to wooded land, of which there is comparatively little in the Nelson districts which have been as yet cultivated. Mr. Ward returned to Nelson, with several members of his family, in July, 1848.

“I will now give you a short outline of the expenses that must necessarily be incurred in order to commence with a farm of fifty acres at Nelson; it may vary a little in the other Settlements; I only mention Nelson, because I know nothing of the other Settlements personally. The fifty acres of land at Nelson would cost you, to buy it—if near town, or within five or six miles of it, and being good flax land—150*l.*; if inferior land, within that distance, 50*l.* to 100*l.*; if at a greater distance, less in proportion, especially bad land, which at a distance from town is unsaleable; no person would have it as a gift to cultivate it; quality and situation are the two main things to be attended to in selecting land in New Zealand; but without buying the land it can be rented at a low rent, with a purchasing clause inserted in the lease, so that the tenant can buy it at any time within seven years at a given price, if he chooses. This is very convenient, and many sections are let at Nelson in this way. The rent of land varies according to quality and situation—some sections are let at 2*s.* 6*d.* per acre per annum, some at 5*s.*, and some at 6*s.*, for the first seven years; but it is a general rule for the tenant to have it rent-free for the first year, and sometimes for two years; this is regulated by the apparent difficulties and expense that the land offers to get it in a state of cultivation. I will inclose my estimate of the first year's expense, so that you may form some idea what you can do in the Colony; you must recollect

the first year is the most difficult and expensive—during that, you will have all to buy and nothing to sell; but after the first year the scale will be turned—you will have plenty to sell and little to buy.”

* * * * *

“The best time to sow wheat is May or June, but it is sometimes sown in July, August, and September. Barley can be sown at any time from May to the 1st January; potatoes, from 1st August to 1st February; cabbages, turnips, and those kind of things, all the year round.”

* * * * *

“Estimate of the necessary expenses to commence a farm at Nelson, New Zealand—fifty acres, at 5s. per acre per annum, for seven years, first year's rent free:—

“Wooden house, large enough for five or six people..	£15	0	0
(A good substantial brick house of this size, 30 <i>l</i> .)			
“Four working bullocks 40 <i>l</i> ., plough 6 <i>l</i> ., harrows and roller 5 <i>l</i> ., cart 12 <i>l</i> ., gear and small tools 7 <i>l</i>	70	0	0
(Two horses will cost 50 <i>l</i> ., and the harness 6 <i>l</i> . more; bullocks are the best until the land is in a state of cultivation.)			
“Fencing a ten acre field	10	0	0
(It would be cheapest to fence the whole in at once, 25 <i>l</i> .)			
“Seed for three acres wheat, 2½ bushels to the acre, at 5s. per bushel, say seven bushels	1	15	0
“Seed for two acres barley, three bushels to the acre, at 4s.	1	4	0
“Seed for half acre potatoes	0	15	0
“Garden seeds and plants	0	5	0
“One cow, a good one 12 <i>l</i> ., a few pigs and fowls 3 <i>l</i> ..	15	0	0
“Housekeeping expenses for three of you for twelve months	£50	0	0
(After the first six months you could have your own vegetables, eggs, and fowls, if you go the right way to work.)			
“Furnishing the house, and incidental expenses	20	0	0

£183 16 0

“(Suppose it takes 200*l*., as I have allowed nothing for accidents or breakages—you may have a bullock die, or break the plough or cart.)

“At the end of the year your account would stand thus:—

	Value at the end of first year.
"Crops, three acres wheat, thirty bushels per acre, allowing the straw to pay expenses, at 5s. per bushel	£22 10 0
"Crops, two acres barley, forty bushels per acre, straw will more than pay expenses, at 4s. per bushel....	16 0 0
"Crops, half acre potatoes, four tons, at 2l. per ton ..	8 0 0
"Cow and calf 15l., pigs and poultry 10l., sold butter and milk 6l., two pigs, 1l., twenty fowls at 9d. 15s.	32 15 0
"Bullocks, cart, plough, &c., allow 5 per cent. for wear and tear	66 10 0
"House and goods	30 0 0
"Improvements, ten acres land fenced 10l., and six acres got in a good state of cultivation 24l.	34 0 0
"Improvements on four acres land, cleared, ploughed, once harrowed and rolled, at 2l.	8 0 0
"Improvements by putting up cow-shed, pig-sty, fowl-house, and tool-house, 6l.; loss for materials—boards, 1l. 12s., nails, 6 lbs. at 7d., 3s. 6d.—1l. 15s. 6d.	4 4 6
	<hr/> £221 19 6 <hr/>

"I have supposed you to effect these improvements yourself. Although this may not appear to be a very glowing account, yet in reality it is a very favourable one, and better than it will prove to be, except you are industrious and everything is looked after well as it should be, and the land must be good. I see there has been 96l. 5s. 6d. earned within the year—viz., by produce and increase of stock, 17l. 15s.; nett produce of crops, 42l. 16s.; improvements, 40l. But you must bear in mind that you have much better prospects for the second year; you would be able to get twenty acres under crop the second year; the five and a half acres would take but very little cultivating for the second crop; you would have four times as much produce for sale; and your expenses would not be one-fourth as much as the first year. At the end of the second year your accounts would stand thus:—

	Value.
"Proceeds of crops, sold and unsold, viz., ten acres wheat, at 7l. per acre; eight acres of barley, at 8l. per acre; two acres of potatoes, at 12l. per acre ..	£158 0 0
"Cows and pigs, increase since last year, 12l.; produce sold 12l.; value last year, 25l.	49 0 0
"Bullocks, cart, &c., same as last year, having laid out 10l. in repairs	66 10 0

"House and goods, 30 <i>l.</i> ; improvements on the land, 40 <i>l.</i> ; continued same as first year, 40 <i>l.</i>	110	0	0
	<hr/> £383 10 0		
"Less for expenses, viz., materials and building a barn, 15 <i>l.</i> ; housekeeping, 20 <i>l.</i> ; Rent, 12 <i>l.</i> 10 <i>s.</i> ; sundries, 10 <i>l.</i> —less expenses for the year	57	10	0
	<hr/> £326 0 0		
"Total value at the end of second year	<hr/>		

"I have estimated these expenses from actual experience at Nelson, and I have only to say that the prices would be different in a new Settlement—the bullocks, cart, plough, and seed would be dearer; then, in return, your butter, eggs, and milk would sell for double as much, and you would get a better price for your wheat and potatoes. If you could buy two or three cows at the commencement, it would increase your income considerably; the young cows would soon make you increase the size of your dairy, and the young steers would soon be fit to assist the old ones, or you could increase the size of your farm when you had sufficient young stock to work it; this would cost you but very little, as you would have only to buy another plough and two yokes and bows."

The following Lists of Prices Current are copied from the *Nelson Examiner* of 22nd January, 1848. It will be seen that many articles are cheaper than at Wellington in March of the same year, as given at page 179.

NELSON PRODUCE, FOR EXPORTATION.

Ale, p hhd., 4*l.* 10*s.*; p doz. 7*s.*; Butter, p lb, 10*d.*; Coal, p ton, 1*l.*; Flax, p ton, 12*l.* 15*s.* to 15*l.*; Furniture Wood, 2*l.* to 2*l.* 10*s.*; Spars, p run. ft. assorted, 1*s.*; Staves, p 1000, 14*l.* to 15*l.*; Planks, p 100 ft., 5*s.* to 5*s.* 6*d.*; Wool, clothing, sup., p lb, 8*d.*; Do. average, 8*d.*

LATEST IMPORTED PRICES.

Coffee, p lb, 8*d.* to 9*d.*; Hams, New Zealand, p lb, 5*d.*; Leather, Kip (Col.), p lb, 1*s.* 6*d.*; Sole, 10*d.*; Maize, p bushel, 3*s.*; Oats, p bushel, 3*s.* 6*d.*; Oil, black, p tun, 25*l.*; Pigs, carcass, p lb, 2*d.*; Rice, good, p cwt. 18*s.*; Sheep, each, 1*l.*; Sugar, Mauritius, p ton, 28*l.*; Refined loaf, 70*l.*; Manilla, 32*l.*; Tobacco, Negro-head, p lb, 10*d.* to 1*s.*

WHOLESALE PRICES.

Ale, in bottle, p doz., 9*s.*; p hhd. 4*l.* 10*s.*; Barley, p bushel, 4*s.* 6*d.* to 5*s.*; Bran, p bushel, 8*d.*; Brandy, p gal., 6*s.* 6*d.* to 8*s.*;

Bricks, \pounds 1000, 1*l.* 2*s.* to 1*l.* 5*s.*; Candles, Mould, 8*d.*; Dips, 6*d.*; Cheese, Colonial, 10*d.*; Cigars, Havanna, \pounds 1*lb.* 8*s.*; Flour, first quality, \pounds ton, 12*l.* to 15*l.*; Gin, \pounds gal. 5*s.*; Leather, Kip (Eng.) \pounds 1*lb.* 2*s.* 6*d.*; Sole, ditto, 1*s.* 2*d.*; Oats, \pounds bushel, 3*s.* 6*d.*; Oil, Linseed, \pounds gal., 6*s.* 6*d.* to 7*s.*; Paint, black, \pounds cwt., 1*l.* 5*s.* to 1*l.* 10*s.*; Pickles, \pounds doz. pint bottles, 14*s.*; Pitch, \pounds barrel, 2*l.* 10*s.*; Plank, Nelson, \pounds 100 ft. 5*s.*; Pork, New Zealand, \pounds barrel, 2*l.* 10*s.*; Porter, bottled, \pounds doz., 9*s.*; \pounds hhd., 5*l.*; Potatoes, \pounds ton, 3*l.*; Rum, \pounds gal., 4*s.* 6*d.* to 7*s.*; Salt, \pounds ton, 4*l.*; Scantling, \pounds 100 ft., 4*s.* 6*d.*; Shingles, New Zealand, 7*s.* 6*d.*; Soap, Liverpool, \pounds ton, 30*l.*; London, 40*l.*; Sydney, 35*l.*; Starch, \pounds 1*lb.* 7*d.*; Tar, Stockholm, 1*l.* 10*s.*; Coal, 1*l.*; Tea, per chest, 5*l.* 10*s.* to 10*l.*; Turpentine, \pounds gal., 8*s.*; Whiskey, \pounds gal., 8*s.* to 10*s.*; Wine, Sherry, \pounds gal., 6*s.* to 10*s.*; Ditto in bottles, \pounds doz., 1*l.* to 1*l.* 10*s.*; Port, \pounds gal., 6*s.* to 10*s.*; Ditto in bottles, \pounds doz., 1*l.* 7*s.* to 1*l.* 10*s.*; Wheat, \pounds bushel, 3*s.* 6*d.* to 5*s.*

RETAIL PRICES.

Beef, fresh, \pounds 1*lb.* 6*d.* to 8*d.*; Bread, \pounds 4*lb.* loaf, 8*d.*; Butter, fresh, 10*d.* to 1*s.*; Cheese, Nelson, 10*d.*; Eggs, \pounds doz. 8*d.*; Fire Wood, \pounds cord, 12*s.*; Iron, \pounds 1*lb.* 2½*d.*; Lime, \pounds ton, delivered, 2*l.*; Milk, \pounds pint, 1*d.* to 2*d.*; Mutton, \pounds 1*lb.* 6*d.* to 7*d.*; Oysters, \pounds hundred, 9*d.*; Pork, fresh, \pounds 1*lb.* 5*d.*; Poultry, fowls, \pounds pair, 2*s.* 6*d.*; Ducks, do., 3*s.*; Geese, do., 10*s.*; Turkeys, do., 10*s.*; Pigeons, wild, do., 1*s.*; Ducks, do., do., 2*s.*

Cows, milch, each, 10*l.* to 15*l.*; Mares, each, 20*l.* to 30*l.*; Sheep, wethers, each, 17*s.* to 1*l.* 4*s.* 6*d.*; Working Bullocks, \pounds pair, 20*l.* to 30*l.*

Wages, mechanics, \pounds day, 3*s.* 6*d.* to 4*s.* 6*d.*; Labourers, 2*s.* to 2*s.* 6*d.*

The following Statistical details were collected by order of Government:—

WHITE POPULATION. 1847.

	Males.	Females.	Total.
Town of Nelson:—			
Adults	257	273	530
Children	274	289	563
Total in Town ..	531	562	1,093
Rural Districts:—			
Adults	496	359	855
Children	477	442	919
Total in Country	973	801	1,774
Total White Population.....			2,867

This is an increase of 14 over 1846; but in addition to this, there is a coast population to the number of perhaps 80; so that the whole number of Europeans in the district may be estimated at 2950.

BIRTHS, MARRIAGES, and DEATHS. 1845.

	Males.	Fem.	Total.	Marriages.	Deaths.
Births:—					
In the Town.....	48	40	88	14	6
Country....	41	39	80	8	8
	<hr/>	<hr/>	<hr/>	<hr/>	<hr/>
Totals..	87	79	166	22	14

1846.

	Males.	Females.	Total.
Births:—			
Town of Nelson	21	23	44
Rural Districts	30	35	65
	<hr/>	<hr/>	<hr/>
Total Births	51	58	109

Marriages	16
Deaths	23

Of the deaths five were accidental.

1847.

	Males.	Females.	Total.
Births:—			
Town of Nelson	18	22	40
Rural Districts	35	46	81
	<hr/>	<hr/>	<hr/>
Total Births	53	68	121

Marriages	16
Deaths	12

Of the deaths six were accidental.

NATIVE POPULATION OF BLIND BAY.

	Males.	Females.	Total.
1845	344	265	609
1846	329	258	587
1847	335	280	615

This does not include the natives residing on the eastern side of the bay above Wakapuaka.

EDUCATION.

	Boys.	Girls.	Total.
Nine Day Schools	156	124	280
Seven Sunday Schools.....	178	160	338
	<hr/>	<hr/>	<hr/>
Total—Sixteen	334	284	618

PLACES OF WORSHIP, 1847.—Churches, 4; Methodist chapels, 2; Roman-catholic chapel, 1; German Lutheran, 1: total 8. Divine service is also performed in several school-rooms by lay preachers.

JUDICIAL.—Supreme Court, criminal cases, 6; Court of Requests, cases decided, 20; Magistrate's Court, summary convictions, 36.

LIVE STOCK.—Horned cattle, 2,104; sheep, 20,450; horses, 132; mules, 11; goats, 2,180; pigs, 3,236; head of poultry, 6,350. This does not include 11 horses the property of natives, the stock owned by persons residing on the coast, nor the herd of wild cattle in the neighbourhood of the Pelorus. It includes, however, 4,000 sheep running near the Wairau, the property of Mr. Clifford.* The increase since 1846 has been considerable. The numbers then returned were—Cattle, 1,591; sheep, 10,022; horses, 107; goats, 1,029; pigs, 2,866; poultry, 5,934. The importation during the year has been, cattle, 99; sheep, 1,473; and horses, 28.

NUMBER OF BUILDINGS, 1847.

	Brick.	Wood.	Mud.
Town of Nelson	37	146	50
Rural Districts	17	165	146
Total	54	311	196

Gross total number of buildings 541

AGRICULTURE, 1847.—Land fenced, 4,043½ acres. Land cultivated, 3,508. Land cropped: wheat, 1,551; barley, 1088½; oats, 156½; potatoes, 230½; turnips, 62; grasses, 106; tares, 21; other crops, 141. Total under crop, 3,456¼ acres. In addition to the above, the natives residing in the bay have 340 acres of wheat, 300 acres of potatoes, 80 of maize, and 50 of other crops.

The average yield of the general crop has been estimated, for wheat, 31 bushels to the acre; oats, 30 bushels; barley, 28 bushels; potatoes, 8 tons.

OCCUPATION OF LAND, 1846.

	Owners.	Tenants.	Squatters.
Town of Nelson	20	90	139
Rural Districts	46	212	71
Total	66	302	210

The particular amount of cultivation in each district is not given; but by far the greater part is in the Waimea plain, where most of what can be called farms are. There are two or three at Motueka, and as many at Wakapuaka. The cottier-farmers are principally

* Already enumerated as belonging to a Wellington Colonist, page 191.

located in the Poor Man's Valley and the German Settlement of Ranzau, in Waimea East; Gleniti, or the Wai-iti Valley, Waimea South; and the beautiful Rewaka Valley, north of Motueka.

MANUFACTORIES, MINES, ETC.

Malthouse and brewery, the property of Messrs. Hooper and Co., at which 750 hogsheads of ale were brewed during the year.

Ditto, the property of Mr. Smith. 200 hogsheads of ale brewed.

Ditto, at Waimea West, the property of Mr. Redwood. 100 hogsheads of ale brewed.

Two brick kilns in the town of Nelson, at which 340,000 bricks have been made during the year. In the rural districts, bricks have been made on the spots where required.

Shipwrights' yard, the property of Mr. Strong. Two small vessels and four boats launched during the year.

Ditto, the property of Mr. Freeman. Three small vessels and several boats launched.

Saw-mill at Motueka, the property of the executors of the late Captain Thoms, at present not worked.*

Ditto at Gleniti, the property of Mr. Baigent. One circular and six vertical saws.

Ditto in Waimea West, the property of Mr. H. Martin.

Flour-mill in Nelson, two pair of stones, water power, ground 4500 bushels of wheat. Messrs. Campbell and Jenkins.

Ditto in Waimea South, one pair of stones, water power. Mr. W. Herrick.

Ditto at Gleniti, water power, the property of Mr. Baigent.

Flax-mill and rope-walk in Suburban North, property of Mr. M'Glashen.

Rope-walk in Waimea Road, belonging to Mr. Gardiner. Four tons of flax worked up during the year.

Tanyard and curriery, the property of Mr. G. Lightband; 830 skins prepared in the year. The barks used for tanning are those of the hinau and black birch.† The latter is perhaps the best bark for the purpose, the tannin being so strong in the former as to render the leather too hard. Black birch can be procured in plenty from some parts of the settlement. The hides here have an advantage in being uninjured by the disease called *warbles*, a name applied to lumps raised on cattle by a fly which perforates the hide.

Hand-loom for woollen cloths, the property of Mr. Blick; 250 yards of cloth produced. Sells at 4s. 6d. per yard.

Hand loom for stockings, the property of Mr. Gibson.

* This mill is capable of cutting 20,000 feet of timber per week.

† See page 142, Nos. 9 and 11.

Hand-loom for sacking, from flax, the property of Mr. Devaney; 2080 yards made in the year.

Coal mine at Massacre Bay. A large quantity has been worked during the year, and shipped for Wellington and Nelson.

Lime-kiln in the Haven Road, the property of Mr. Strong. The stone burnt is magnesian limestone, brought from Massacre Bay.

Lime-kiln in Suburban South.

Excellent *hats* and *bonnets* are made of plaited straw.

Salt has been made by evaporation, in pits.

From the Haven Road three jetties have been thrown out; one of them, running from a projecting piled embankment, if carried out a few feet farther, would admit of vessels 300 tons lying alongside it. Another, on open piles, is about 200 feet in length. There are two bridges for carts in the town.

VESSELS BUILT AND REGISTERED.

Years.	Vessels.	Tons.
1842	2	21
1843	1	12
1844	3	32
1845	3	40
1846	4	91
1847	0	90
Six years.	19	286

IMPORTS AND EXPORTS.

Years.	Imports.			Exports.		
	£	s.	d.	£	s.	d.
1842	18,378	0	0	...	...
1843	28,867	17	11	629	11	8
1844	20,228	9	2	1,510	17	0
1845	6,297	0	0	1,891	0	0
1846	9,819	0	4	3,082	0	0
1847	10,566	15	0	3,576	4	0

But this does not include the exports coastwise, of which the value is not declared at the Custom-House. The following is a detailed account for 1847, of the—

Exports to Great Britain and the Colonies:—

Bacon, 45 packages	£26	0	0
Butter, 34 kegs	80	0	0
Curiosities, 1 case	5	0	0
Flax, 1 $\frac{3}{4}$ ton	24	0	0
Oil—black, 2 casks	14	0	0
Oil of Anise, 1 case	20	0	0
Rope, 87 coils	123	0	0
Skins—sheep, 200	20	0	0
„ seal, 40	40	0	0
Spars, 119	37	10	0
Timber—sawn, 332,850 feet	976	0	0
„ logs, 12	12	0	0
Wool, 196 bales	1,878	0	0
<hr/>			
Value of Nelson produce	£3,255	10	0
Ditto of other goods	320	14	0
<hr/>			
Total Value of Exports	£3,576	4	0

Nelson produce, sent coastwise:—Bacon, 10 cwt., 1 package; barley, 301 bushels, 2 barrels; beer, 67 hogsheads, 122 barrels, 4 kegs; ditto bottled, 19 cases; bread, 10 cwt., 27 bags, 3 casks; bricks, 8 tons; butter, 61 kegs, 1 case, 3 cwt.; cheese, 5 casks; coals, 82 tons; curiosities, 1 bundle; eggs, 7 boxes, 400 dozen; flour, 43 tons; hides, 3 packages; sheep, 100; maize, 40 bushels; oats, 60 bushels; oil (sperm), 2 casks; peas, 1 bag; pork, 2 barrels; potatoes, 19 $\frac{1}{2}$ tons; timber, 82,000 feet sawn, 643 logs; vinegar, 3 hogsheads, 1 keg.

The following Table of Nelson Shipping is given by Mr. Grimstone, in his "*Statistics of the Southern Settlements*," already alluded to:—

Year.	BEYOND SEAS.				COASTWISE.	
	Inwards.		Outwards.		In-	Out-
	Ships.	Tons.	Ships.	Tons.	wards.	wards.
1842	34	10,132	15	4323	—	—
1843	27	6316	19	3824	—	—
1844	31	5386	29	5338	—	—
1845	9	1001	13	1147	2771	2068
1846	16	2269	12	1201	1543	2396

But he appears to have made some mistake in the latter years, as the Tables made by order of Government, and published in the *Nelson Examiner*, give the following total tonnage of

VESSELS ENTERED INWARDS.

Year.	Vessels.	Tons.
1845	85	6175
1846	71	7014

GOVERNMENT REVENUE AND EXPENDITURE.

REVENUE, 1846.

	£	s.	d.
Ordinary Revenue (<i>from Customs, Fees, Licences, &c.</i>)	1304	6	1
Incidental Revenue (<i>Surcharges recovered</i>)	13	13	9
Receipts in aid of Revenue (<i>from Colonial Treasurer</i>).	1026	16	6
Total	2344	16	4

EXPENDITURE, 1846.

Civil Expenditure (<i>Salaries of Officers, &c.</i>)	774	14	0
Judicial „ (<i>Law Courts, Police, &c.</i>)	1231	3	6
Public Works and Buildings	65	10	0
Militia	43	10	8
Miscellaneous	64	9	8
Total	2179	7	10

The following is the Official abstract of the revenue and expenditure of the district of Nelson, for the year ended the 31st day of December, 1847 :—

REVENUE.

Ordinary.

	£	s.	d.
Customs	£1381	7	1
Post Office	78	5	10
Fines and Fees—Police	29	19	8
Court of Requests	7	6	6
Licences—Publicans'	206	0	0
Auctioneers'	40	0	0
Rent—Powder Magazine	1	0	8
Total Ordinary		1743	19 9

Incidental.

Surcharges recovered	0	4	4
----------------------------	---	---	---

Receipts in Aid.

Remittances from Colonial Treasurer, or Treasurer of the Southern Division	406	15	7
---	-----	----	---

EXPENDITURE.

Civil Establishment.

	£	s.	d.	£	s.	d.
Sub-Treasurer	5	10	3			
Customs	276	15	8			
Post Office	94	0	4			
Harbour Master	236	17	3			
Government Brig Victoria	8	0	7			
Total Civil				621	4	1

Judicial.

County Court	1	7	2			
Supreme Court	29	5	4			
Sheriff and Gaols	181	0	10			
Registrar of Deeds	83	6	8			
Coroner	10	7	6			
Police	795	13	4			
Crown Prosecutions and Witnesses	8	5	0			
Total Judicial				1109	5	10

Public Works and Buildings.

Roads and Bridges	34	10	0
-------------------------	----	----	---

	<i>Militia.</i>	£	s.	d.
Nelson battalion of militia.....	—————	66	7	0

	<i>Aborigines.</i>			
Presents to Natives	33	18	0	
Rations to ditto	1	12	8	
Native hospitals	25	9	2	
Medical attendance	14	6	2	
Rations to sick and destitute.....	10	0	3	
Total Aborigines	—————	85	6	3

	<i>Miscellaneous.</i>			
Interest on debentures	20	1	8	
Allowance to widows of constables killed at Wairau	16	14	0	
Ditto to persons wounded at ditto	20	18	0	
Rations for the relief of the destitute ..	44	2	6	
H. M. S. Inflexible	28	5	3	
Loan to New Plymouth for the purchase of bricks and lime	60	8	3	
Total Miscellaneous	—————	190	9	8

RECAPITULATION.

<i>Revenue.</i>		<i>Expenditure.</i>	
Ordinary	£1743 19 9	Civil Establishment	£621 4 1
Incidental	0 4 4	Judicial	1109 5 10
Receipts in aid ..	406 15 7	Public Works and Buildings	34 10 0
Balance from last year	83 1 4	Militia.....	68 7 0
		Aborigines	85 6 3
		Miscellaneous	190 9 8
		Balance to next year	126 18 2
Total	2234 1 0	Total	2234 1 0

Sub-Treasury, Nelson,
this 27th day of January, 1848.

STEPHEN CARKEEK,
Sub-Treasurer.

In the town, exclusive of shops, stores, and taverns, are to be noticed, the wooden building in which the business of Supreme, Requests, and Police Courts is carried on, a tiny Jail, and the Fort,* on a low hill in

* A ball-proof stockade, rampart, and ditch, covering an acre.

the centre of the Town; and the Company's Immigration Barracks, excellently adapted for soldiers, built round three sides of a square, with offices detached, at an expense of 800*l*. There is also a Powder Magazine on the Boulder Bank. There is a very good Hotel, the *Wakatu*; and there are four other taverns and a boarding-house, shops, and stores of various kinds.

There is a Literary Institution, with a library of 600 volumes, chiefly on history and useful knowledge. It is supported by fifty subscribers at a guinea a year, and by voluntary contributions. There is also a Mechanics' Institute at the village of Richmond, near Nelson. At both these places lectures are sometimes given by one or two of the leading Colonists. Astronomy and Education are among the subjects which have been treated upon.

There is a printing-press, and a weekly Newspaper, the "*Nelson Examiner*," which has been published weekly since the foundation of the settlement in the end of 1841.

The Union Bank of Australia has a branch establishment here. The notes in circulation amount to 7000*l*.

There is a very good Cricket Club at Nelson.

A Race Meeting is held about March in every year. The fifth meeting took place on the Waimea Course, about five miles from the town, on the 15th of March, 1847. The Tradesman's Plate, Scurry Stakes, Tallyho Hurdle Stakes, and Hack Stakes, were run for in heats. There was also the Ladies' Purse for beaten horses, and a Play-or-Pay Plate *for mules*. But the most novel race was that the account of which is thus given in the local newspaper:—

"MOTUEKA PLATE of Two Sovereigns, for all horses the property of and ridden by Maories. Catch weights. Heats. Once round.

Te Tana's b. h. Priam, 5 yrs.	(Herewini te Taka)	2	1	1
Ngapiko's ch. c. Red Eye	(Wiremu Kawi)	1	3	2
Ngapiko's ch. c. Kaiwakawa	(Te Ngorengore)	3	2	3

"The interest displayed by the Maories during this race was intense, and the jockeyship of the riders most amusing, whilst the perfect good humour and fairness with which they submitted to the

decisions on this occasion, as also last week at the Horticultural Show, although against them, was most praiseworthy. We shall be able to make good sportsmen of the natives in time, and thus give them a more harmless subject of excitement than many of them have hitherto been accustomed to; the aptitude displayed by the aboriginal inhabitants of the Motueka district to acquire our arts, our mode of living, our methods of cultivation, &c., is most cheering, and gives evident proof that they may easily be made to become most useful members of the community with which they are so rapidly becoming identified."

The following is a Directory for Nelson, compiled from the *Cook's Strait Almanac* and the Government Gazettes for 1848:—

Superintendent and Resident Magistrate Matthew Richmond, Esq.
Sheriff (temporarily) John Tinline, Esq.

Justices of the Peace M. Richmond, D. Sinclair, Esqrs.; Dr. J. D. Greenwood; F. Otterson, D. Sclanders, H. Martin, J. Mackay, A. McShane, G. Duppa, G. White, Esqrs.; Dr. D. Monro; E. W. Stafford, W. O. Cautley, F. Jollie, C. B. Wither, C. Thorp, J. Nixon, and F. D. Bell, Esqrs.

Deputy Registrar of Births, Deaths, and Marriages (provisionally)... } J. Poynter, Esq.

Sub-Collector of Customs..... S. Carkeek, Esq.

Coroner and Medical Officer J. F. Wilson, Esq.

Postmaster Mr. W. Howard.

Resident Agent of the New Zealand Company } F. D. Bell, Esq.

There is one Clergyman of the Church of England, the Rev. Henry F. Butt; and one Wesleyan Minister, the Rev. J. Aldred.

There are three *Legal Practitioners*; and five *Medical Practitioners*, two of whom have the degree of M.D.

There are five *Mercantile firms*, one of which carries on Auctioneer's business.

There are no troops stationed in the Nelson district.

CHAPTER VIII.

District of Taranaki, or New Plymouth.—Mount Egmont.—Geological Formation.—Face of Country.—Streams.—Town of New Plymouth.—Devon Road.—Roadstead.—Sugar-loaf Point and Islands.—Inland Bridle-path.—Country to S.E. of District.—Waitera River.—Country Northwards.—Mokau River.—Climate and Soil.—Natural Productions.—Minerals.—Distribution of Land.—Cost of Cultivation and Average Produce.—Prices.—Statistics.—Directory.

THE Taranaki country, so called from the native name of Mount Egmont around which it lies, is commonly described by all who have seen it as “the garden of New Zealand.” Mount Egmont itself, an extinct volcano, rises from a generally level country to the height of 8840 feet, by a gradual ascent from a circle about thirty miles in diameter, which forms the outer circumference of its base. About half this circumference, from Sugar-loaf Point to the mouth of the Waimate river, is formed by the sea-coast; and Cape Egmont forms at once the westernmost point of this circle and the northern headland of the western entrance to Cook’s Strait.

Perhaps half the area of the circle described is sufficiently level for cultivation.

South-east of this circle, a broad tract of fertile undulating country extends as far as the Wanganui district already described in Chapter VI.; and in a northerly direction a similar tract of country extends along the western coast of the North Island beyond the mouth of the river Mokau; being separated, by a low range of wooded mountains, from the country watered by the western tributaries of the Wanganui river.

Another low range of hills diverges from Mount Egmont to the north-east, in the direction of Tonga Riro; and a third low range extends westward, from the mountain nearly to Cape Egmont.

The country lying in the immediate neighbourhood of Sugar-loaf Point, and to the northward, was selected by Mr. F. A. Carrington as the site of a Settlement, founded by Colonists chiefly from the West of England. The first of them started from this country in November, 1840, under the auspices of an association called the Plymouth Company of New Zealand, which afterwards merged in the New Zealand Company.

This extensive tract of country is almost level, excepting the broken ground in the courses of the numerous streams which water it, and that near the foot of the dividing range of hills. It consists in general of aqueous formations, interrupted in places, but more especially at Sugar-loaf Point and Islands, by branches of the volcanic formation which contains Mount Egmont and the small ranges diverging from it. The sub-stratum is therefore generally a yellowish sandy loam, or sandstone. Interspersed among these sub-strata are found formations of lignite. The surface is a rich volcanic mould, of the most fertile character. Near the sea-shore, this soil is light, being intermixed with sand: but it increases in depth and improves in quality towards the mountains.

The land for three or four miles from the coast is mostly open, and covered with a uniform vegetation of flax and fern: but in the little gullies of the streams, and also in scattered clumps, so as to give the country a park-like appearance, there are groves of trees. Towards the foot of the hills, and on the hills themselves, the country becomes generally wooded.

Many streams, large and small, take their rise in the sides of Mount Egmont, and fall into the sea at various points along miles of the coast. The most southerly of these is the Patea, a considerable river, which springs from the north-eastern side of Mount Egmont, and flows by a very tortuous course into Cook's Strait, about forty miles north-west of the Wanganui's mouth. It is unnecessary to record the names of all those which

water the country between Patea and Sugar-loaf Point. North of this spot there are the Huatoki, the Henui, and the Waiwakaio, comparatively small streams; the last of which springs from the northern side of Mount Egmont.

The mouth of the Huatoki is about two miles north of Sugar-loaf Point: that of the Henui about three miles beyond; and that of the Waiwakaio one mile further north.

A block of about 700 acres, situate on the banks of the Huatoki and Henui, and including all the land between those two streams for nearly half a mile back from the sea-beach, has been fixed upon as the site of the Town of New Plymouth. Its nucleus has been formed at the mouth of the Huatoki, on either bank of which are situate the Residence and Office of the Company's Agent; two or three taverns; the Jail; the Court-house; and a few private stores and residences. There are also a Church, a Wesleyan Chapel, and a Primitive Methodists' Chapel. Several small farms, and knots of labourers' cottages are scattered about at various distances from this centre; and north of the Henui there is another Church and another Primitive Methodists' Chapel. About half a dozen of these buildings, including the Jail, the first-mentioned Church,* and the Wesleyan Chapel, are built of either granite or sandstone, which are both found in the neighbourhood. The rest are built of wood.

The country is so level that little labour is required to make such roads as are necessary for the traffic of the Settlement. The soil is of so dry a nature that, in many places, after merely cutting down the high fern, drays can pass in all weathers; and it has only been necessary to make bridges over the streams, and approaches to them down the sides of the gullies. This has been done, over the three streams mentioned, by the Company; and, as there is a good ford over the river

* Built at a cost of 855*l*.

Waiongona, whose mouth is about 9 miles N. of Sugarloaf Point, there is altogether a very passable road from the town to the S. bank of the Waitera river, 12 miles N. of the same point. This line of communication is called the Devon Road. Several branch roads have been marked out, and brought into use, leading from the occupied spots a little way inland into the main road.

The roadstead, or anchorage, of New Plymouth is immediately opposite the Town. It is exposed to the W. and N.W. winds, which frequently blow with such violence as to render the anchorage precarious, and cause a violent surf on the beach; but from all other quarters it is sheltered by the mainland and by the Sugarloaf Islands. The Company, at first, laid down moorings fit for vessels of 600 tons; but the buoys have since been carried away, and, by the last accounts, the chains had not yet been picked up again. They have also provided surf-boats, now manned by experienced boatmen in the employ of Government, and for the use of which a regular charge is made. The appearance of the weather invariably gives a warning of sufficient length, when it is time to get under weigh and make an offing. With W. or N.W. winds, large vessels can easily run across Cook's Strait into Port Hardy for shelter. The following are the bearings taken from the safest anchorage, as extracted from the *Cook's Strait Almanac* for 1846:

“NEW PLYMOUTH, TARANAKI (Sugarloaf Island, foot of hill);
S. lat. $39^{\circ} 4' 30''$; E. long. $174^{\circ} 46'$.

“The anchorage is about half way between Barrett's whaling station and the Huatoki river, rather more than 2 miles off shore; here the moorings were formerly laid down. Bearings—Moorings at Taranaki; outer part of Saddle-Back Sugar Loaf, S.W. by W. $\frac{1}{4}$ W.; Flagstaff on Mount Eliot, S. 53° E.; Mount Egmont top, S. 16° E.; White Cliff, N. 49° E.”

The whaling station mentioned is situate on the beach, immediately to the north of Sugarloaf Point. It was first established by Mr. Richard Barrett, by

means of whose influence with the natives, the district was purchased for the New Zealand Company, in 1839. An inconsiderable rivulet, supplied by two small lagoons, here filters on to the beach. A second whaling station has been established of late years.*

Sugarloaf Point is a dome-like cone of trachitic porphyry, which rises to the height of 500 feet, and stands in an isolated position, with one side of its base washed by the sea. In its neighbourhood, large boulders, consisting of volcanic rocks of apparently an old date, as basalts, greenstones, trachyte, augitic rock, &c., are cemented together into a solid conglomerate, which seems to extend, like a stream of lava, from Mount Egmont into the sea, but cannot be traced far inland. Where the sea washes these rocks the conglomerate is peculiarly hard, the salt water appearing to have a chemical action either on the particles of the iron pyrites, with which several of the rocks abound, and which often cover the pebbles with a metallic crust, or else on the black titanite iron-sand which is found on the beach.

A strong smell of sulphuretted hydrogen gas, and a constant succession of bubbles of some bituminous substance rising to the surface of the sea, may be observed about half a mile from high-water mark, between the mainland and Moturoa, the highest of the Sugarloaf islands.

These islands are five in number. Three of them are very near the shore: indeed, Mikotai, the northernmost of these three, is joined to the main by an isthmus, which is dry at low water of spring tides. Moturoa lies about a mile off this, with a deep water passage between them. And Motuomahanga, the outermost, about a mile and a half still further to the west, also separated from Moturoa by a deep and safe channel.

Dr. Dieffenbach describes one of the Sugar-loaf Islands as consisting of the soft, yellow sand-stone

* See page 193.

above-mentioned; but all the others, he says, are steep and conical masses of greyish trachyte, containing much feldspar. He also gives a more particular description of Moturoa, which is as follows:—

“ This island is a conical rock, extremely steep, about one mile in circumference and 300 feet high: the formation is trachyte; the rock contains much augite and feldspar, and includes here and there fragments of a different formation. The augite appears often in nests; and micaceous iron-ore occurs in thin veins.”*

Previously to the settlement of this district by a large body of Europeans, so as to afford security against attack, the few natives remaining near the spot used to take refuge on this island from the predatory excursions of hostile tribes living to the northward. The huts which they used to inhabit on these occasions are perched in niches on different parts of the rock.

The Waiongona and the Waitera rivers both take their rise in the low range of mountains already described, which separates the plain of New Plymouth from the valley of the Wanganui and its tributaries. A bridle-road has been marked out by the Company, from a spot eight or ten miles up the banks of the Waiongona, across the said range, and round the eastern spurs of Mount Egmont, so as to communicate with the level country near the mouth of the Waimate river in Cook's Strait. This is a rough road; but has been travelled once or twice by persevering horsemen. It is perfectly practicable for pedestrians. The country traversed is densely wooded, and apparently possesses a rich soil, formed from the accumulation of vegetable deposit, and also from the detritus of the numerous streams which gush down from the mountain. The road emerges from the forest near Waimate, on to open plains, which extend to the distance of six or eight miles from the sea, and are covered with a luxuriant vegetation of grass, flax, fern, and shrubs.

There is a Wesleyan Missionary establishment at

* ‘*Travels in New Zealand*,’ by Ernest Dieffenbach, M.D. Murray, 1843. Vol. i., ch. vii., p. 164.

Waimate, and a considerable native population, living near the mouths of this and several neighbouring rivers. The residence of the European missionary, and the chapels in the native villages, are well-built wooden houses: but the natives themselves still live in very rude huts.

This part of the country, and indeed the whole of the belt between the sea-shore and the edge of the forest, which extends from Sugar-loaf Point to the N.W. boundary of the Wanganui district, watered by the Wenuakura, and Waitotara, and several smaller rivers which flow into the sea between the Patea and the Wanganui, is of the most fertile description, and admirably adapted for either tillage or pasture.

The Waitera is a considerable river, whose head waters spring from the dividing range of hills close to those of a tributary of the Wanganui, called Tangarakau. There is a bar at the river's mouth, which is nearly dry at low-water of spring tides; but springs rise about 13 feet; and inside the bar the river is navigable for boats for three miles. The country lying immediately on the banks of this river bears a remarkably rich character; and patches of it have been selected by a few natives for their cultivations.

N. of the Waitera river, the coast rises into cliffs, which attain the height of 100 feet, and form a very conspicuous object from the anchorage of New Plymouth, at about 25 miles' distance from the Waitera's mouth. The lowest formation in this cliff is a marly clay, reaching about 20 feet from the beach; then comes a formation of wood, very little altered or carbonized, and 10 feet in thickness, but irregular; above that is a loamy soil. Several rivers, of which the Mimi, Urenui, Tangaporutu, and Mokau-iti are the principal, water the country between the Mokau and the Waitera. This country resembles that already described: being covered alternately with high fern and forest.

The Mokau is a considerable river; having a bar-harbour at its mouth, practicable for small craft. It flows from a range of hills called Rangitoto, lying west of Lake Taupo, through a fertile and moderately hilly district. A numerous native population resides on its banks; and a few European missionaries and squatters near its mouth.

No accurate meteorological tables are known to have been kept at New Plymouth. The Climate resembles in a great degree that of Wanganui, being free from the constant winds of Wellington, and from the frequent night-frosts of Nelson.

The Soil is, perhaps, more uniformly good, and therefore more suitable for an extensive agricultural settlement, than that of any of the others. While there is hardly any tract of land of such extraordinary fertility as that enjoyed by the Hutt and other alluvial valleys, there is also little or none of the comparatively barren hilly clay-land so common in the more mountainous districts of Wellington and Nelson.

There are but few points of remarkable difference between the animal or vegetable productions, whether indigenous or introduced, of this settlement and those of Wellington, Petre, or Nelson. The following, however, may be noticed:—

I. ANIMAL PRODUCTIONS.

Introduced.

Bees.—A New Plymouth correspondent of the *New Zealander** of the 16th of February, 1848, says:—"Bees thrive here surprisingly. Two years ago there was only one hive of them in the district; this year they tend towards a hundred, and numbers of swarms, as in America, are taking to the woods, and, as there, the harbingers, we hope, of civilization."

II. VEGETABLE PRODUCTIONS.

Indigenous.

Phormium tenax, or indigenous flax. When this district was inhabited by a large native population, it was famous for growing

* A newspaper published at Auckland.

the superior qualities of this plant, as mentioned at page 146. The cultivation was carried on with great care in regular plantations, remains of which are often met with to this day.

Introduced.

Flax.—As may be seen in the return of *land in cultivation*, at page 288, an experiment has been tried, on a small scale, of growing *Linum*, or *European flax*. So far, it is reported to have been eminently successful.

Grain, &c.—Mr. Charles Hursthouse, in a letter to the *Wellington Spectator*, dated “New Plymouth, Nov. 20, 1847,”* reckons the average produce per acre in that settlement for the year 1846, in which year he says the crop was decidedly deficient in quantity, to have been as follows:—*Wheat, twenty-five bushels; barley, twenty-five bushels; oats, thirty bushels; potatoes eight tons.* “Nearly the whole,” he adds, “of the 839 acres (wheat, 1846,) grown at Taranaki was fern land, which can be cleared and cropped in the best style for 4*l.* 10*s.* per acre; and this cost will be materially reduced, when cattle cease to be nearly 100*l.* per cent. dearer here than in other settlements.

“As farming becomes better understood, and reduced more to a system, I think that the fern lands of this district will certainly yield an average of 30 bushels of wheat per acre. The heaviest crop, to my knowledge, that has yet been obtained on any large piece, (of course without manure) was 448 bushels from 8 acres—56 bushels; but this season, at Glanavon (the Messrs. Davy’s) there is a field of 20 acres which promises 60 bushels per acre.

“So little bush land has been cultivated, that it would be premature, as yet, to express a very decided opinion as to the extent of its powers; the crops have been heavier than on fern land, though not generally so fine in quality. I have heard that a labourer has grown nearly 64 bushels on an acre, and I know that potatoes yield from 12 to 16 tons.”†

Turnips and Mangold-wurzel succeed very well. From 20 to 40 tons per acre were grown in one field in the year 1847.

III. MINERAL PRODUCTIONS.

The following exist in the district:—

Iron.—The “Titanic iron sand,” mentioned at page 277, is found all along the sea-beach between Sugarloaf Point and the mouth of the Waitera, twelve miles to the north. It lies in many places in a stratum four feet thick. One of the Colonists has sent to England

* Published in *New Zealand Journal* of 17th June, 1848; vol. ix. No. 223, page 139.

† See, also, page 286.

for the necessary apparatus, which is now on its way, to make smelting-works on a small scale.

Nickel.—A mineral has been found within the site of the town, which is supposed to be nickel. The fact, however, has not yet been tested by any competent authority.

Coal is said to have been found cropping out of the low sandstone cliff, near the mouth of the Waiwakaio. On the banks of the river Mokau, whose mouth is about 50 miles north of New Plymouth, coal and limestone have both been found in abundance.

Granite, or rather, perhaps, *Hornblende*, is to be obtained near Sugarloaf Point, and from the boulders lying along the beach. This has already been used for mill-stones. A pair, 4 feet in diameter, were constructed for Mr. Kebble's steam-mill at Manawatu.

Sandstone, suitable for building purposes, is quarried on the north bank of the Waiongona, and in several other parts of the settlement.

Ochre is obtained from the banks of the Waiwakaio, near the foot of Mount Egmont. The natives collect this earth, and after burning it, mix it with shark's oil, so as to produce a bright vermillion paint, with which they adorn their bodies, houses, and canoes.

Protophosphate of iron is found in small pieces or balls, of an earthy consistence, and of a pale blue colour, in the cliffs which form the sea-coast near the Mimi river, 12 miles north of the Waitera. This is also used as a paint by the natives.

In November, 1842, Mr. Robert Oxland, analytical chemist at Plymouth, examined some specimens of the above minerals, which had been sent to England. The following analysis was the result:—

“*Plymouth, Nov. 14, 1842.*”

“*SIR*,—In accordance with Mr. Bridges' request, I have sent you the following report of the minerals from New Plymouth, sent to me for examination:—

“The sample No. I., is a piece of Hornblende rock, the principal constituents of which are silica, magnesia, alumina, containing about twelve per cent. of lime. It is a very hard rough stone, and, if obtainable in any quantity, well adapted for building purposes, and the making of roads.

“The mineral No. II., from the remains of recent marine shells still attached to it, is evidently from the sea-shore, and is a sample of excellent fine-grained mundic, containing about 50 per cent. of sulphur. It is, therefore, well adapted for the manufacture of sulphuric acid.

“No. III. is an earthy phosphate of iron, which is sometimes used in considerable quantities as a pigment. The colour of this

sample is a delicate bluish grey, and very clean. As this mineral is generally found in a clay or mud, associated with animal remains, it is very probable that the soil from which it is obtained may be found, on examination, to contain phosphates that may be rendered of some considerable value for agricultural purposes.

"The sample No. IV., marked coal, was probably obtained from a partial deposit of vegetable matter, resembling the coal deposits of the primitive geological districts of Great Britain. Perfect coal would not therefore be likely to be met with in the immediate neighbourhood of such a deposit.

"Judging from the character of these minerals, if they were all obtained from the same district, the country would be likely to resemble the primitive geological districts of Devon and Cornwall, rich in metalliferous deposits, but not likely to produce coal.

"Sample No. V. is magnetic iron ore, in the form of fine sand from the sea-shore. It consists of the peroxide and protoxide of iron mixed, containing about 71 per cent. of iron. It is free from the admixture of other substances, and, if obtainable in large quantities, is likely to be, at some future time, in considerable demand, as it is the most valuable of iron ores. The celebrated Swedish iron, in such high repute for the making of steel, is obtained from a mineral of precisely the same character.

"I am, Sir, your obedient servant,

"ROBERT OXLAND."*

The Settlement of New Plymouth was originally founded under the following arrangements or plan:—

While it was directed by the Plymouth Company of New Zealand, several different portions of land were disposed of under terms of purchase varying a little at different times in details of no essential importance. But the leading principle was to afford greater encouragement to actual Colonists than to absentee proprietors, and to hold out better terms to purchasers in England than to purchasers in the Colony.

A Town, consisting of 2,200 sections of a quarter of an acre each, was advertised, of which 200 sections were reserved for the natives, and 1000 for future sale under ultimate arrangements.

A belt of Suburban land was also advertised, to be laid off round the Town, consisting of 10,450 acres, divided into 209 sections of 50 acres each; of which 19 sections were reserved for the natives, and 150 for leasing to farmers, with a right of purchase.

* *New Zealand Journal* of 26th Nov., 1842, vol. iii., No. 75, p. 284.

This first lot was offered at the price of 10*l.* for each Town, and 50*l.* for each Suburban section. Of this, 40*l.* was to be spent in Emigration to the Settlement.

When this first lot, of 1000 Town, and 40 Suburban sections, had been sold, the whole 2200 Town sections were regulated as to priority of choice by one ballot, and the 40 Suburban sections by another.

600 of the 1000 unsold orders of choice for Town land were afterwards offered for sale to actual Colonists, in batches of 100 at a time, each Town section having attached to it a Rural section of 50 acres outside the Suburban Belt. The price was 75*l.* for Town and Rural section together. The Town choices had to be again balloted for among the purchasers of each batch, and selected according to the order provided for them by the first ballot; but the Rural sections were to be chosen from the land open for selection in the Settlement, according to order of application to the Company's Agent there. To actual Colonists purchasing a large number of these sections, the inducement was held out of being allowed to purchase some of the best unsold orders of choice for Suburban land, (which had been reserved for leasing but were not so appropriated,) at comparatively low prices.

Afterwards the remaining 400 unsold orders of choice were offered to the public in general on similar terms.

In May, 1841, the Plymouth Company of New Zealand merged in the New Zealand Company.

Up to that merger, there had been sold altogether 1000 Town sections and 54 Suburban sections, to be selected by ballot; and 148 Rural sections, to be selected according to order of application in the Colony. There were, of course, reserved for the natives 200 Town sections and 19 Suburban sections.

The New Zealand Company then offered the remaining land upon these terms:—

Two hundred and fifty Town-sections, with their orders of choice as determined by the first ballot, each with a Rural section of 50 acres attached, for the total price of 75*l.*, of which 50*l.* to be spent in emigration to the Settlement. The Town orders of choice to be again balloted for among the purchasers, and the Rural land selected according to order of application in the Colony.

The remaining 750 Town, 136 Suburban, and at least 750 Rural Sections, to be put up to Public Auction in the Settlement, at upset prices to be fixed from time to time, never lower than original prices in the Settlement. The upset prices were fixed, in October, 1843, at 12*l.* 10*s.* per section ($\frac{1}{4}$ acre each) for Town; 112*l.* 10*s.* per

section (50 acres each) for Suburban; and 6*2*l. 10s. per section (50 acres each) for Rural, land.

Under all these different conditions, there had been sold, altogether, up to the 5th of April, 1847, 14,159¹/₆ acres of land. No land has been sold in England since that date: but the Company's resident Agent at New Plymouth, in his *Monthly Report for December, 1847*,* says:—

“In the course of the month, sales of one Rural Section and one Town Section have been effected by auction, at the upset prices of 6*2*l. 10s. and 12*l*. 10s. respectively.”

During the process of surveying the land required, and before the whole of the sections so purchased had been selected, many natives, as described above, collected from various parts of the islands to claim possession of various spots, which they or their parents had occupied previous to their expulsion or captivity by the Waikato tribes, and which had now been made safe to live in by the presence of the Europeans. The delay of the Government in arranging these new claims, which were supported by many vagabond Europeans, who had purchased titles from the claimants, laid the foundation of difficulties which have hitherto interfered seriously with the progress of the Settlement. It was not till June, 1844, that Mr. Spain, Her Majesty's Commissioner of Land Claims, examined into the Company's title, as derived from their original purchase of the district in February, 1840. He reported immediately and without hesitation, in favour of the Company's right to a Crown grant of 60,000 acres on the spot selected by them for settlement: but this award was set aside by Governor Fitzroy, who declared his intention of so doing in August of that year, and in November arbitrarily restricted the settlers to a block of 3500 acres immediately around the Town, giving up

* The *New Zealand Journal* of July 15th, 1848, vol. ix., No. 223, contains at pages 158, 159, the full Reports of this officer for the last six months of 1847.

the rest to the natives. In January, 1845, a Crown grant of this restricted amount was offered to the Principal Agent of the Company and refused.* The present Governor, Captain Grey, met with many obstacles to a reversal of this absurd act; especially as the natives, encouraged by so unreasonable a concurrence with their extortions, flocked in greater numbers to the spot, and some of them threatened to maintain by force the side of the question most agreeable to their own wishes. The Governor, however, by the latest accounts, had succeeded by his firm and yet conciliatory policy in so far overcoming their opposition as to obtain the positive cession, in consideration of an additional payment, of a total amount of 29,000 acres, or amply enough to satisfy all existing claims, and to leave a large remainder for present sale by the Company.

On account of the uncertainty which has thus long dwelt on the question of title, no accurate account can be given of the *price or rent of land*.

The following is a rough estimate, noted from the experience of one or two actual Colonists, of the

Expenses of Clearing and Cropping Land, and Average Produce, &c., at New Plymouth.

FERN LAND, FIRST YEAR.		Per acre.		
		£	s.	d.
Cutting Fern, and uprooting Tutu-stumps		0	16	0
Ploughing and Harrowing twice		3	5	0
Raking and burning Fern-roots		0	10	0
Seed, 1½ bushels, at 5s. 6d.		0	8	3
Putting in Seed		0	5	0
Hoeing and keeping clear		0	5	0
Reaping, gathering, and threshing		1	10	0
		<hr/>		
		6	10	3
		<hr/>		
Average Produce, 22 bushels, at 5s.		5	10	0

The expenses for the second year would amount to one half, and the average produce would be increased to about 28 bushels of

* See Appendix to 17th Report of New Zealand Company.

wheat, 28 of barley, 36 of oats, or ten tons of potatoes. (This should be compared with Mr. Hursthouse's statements, at page 281.)

Bush, or wooded land, is *cleared* at about 8*l.* or 10*l.* per acre; the other expenses are the same, except seed, of which only one bushel will be required. The produce will average considerably more.

Good post-and-rail fencing is put up at 10*s.* per chain of 22 yards.

The *prices* of agricultural produce may be reckoned as somewhat lower, and those of imported articles as somewhat higher, than at Wellington. As much, however, as £1 per ton for mangold-wurzel was paid in 1847, for the purpose of feeding cattle, on account of the scarcity of natural pasturage in these fern-covered districts. The New Plymouth correspondent of the *Wellington Spectator* of December 10, 1847, says:—

“Twenty-two head of cattle recently arrived from Wellington overland, were sold by auction in this settlement on the 1st instant, and realized the following average prices:—9 bullocks, 2*s. 4s.* per pair; 4 cows, 14*l. 8s.* each; 8 heifers, 13*l. 16s. 3d.* each; and 1 steer, 8*l.*”

By the latest accounts received on the subject, the *wages* of agricultural labourers were about 2*s. 6d.*, and those of mechanics 5*s.* a day.

The greater part of the following Statistical details relating to the settlement were collected in December, 1846, by the Government Inspector of Police. The like returns for 1847 have not yet been received.

	Males.	Females.	Total.
WHITE POPULATION	586	502	1088
	Births.	Marriages.	Deaths.
In 1845 there were	64	10	6

There is no authentic census of the *Native Population*. In 1840, when this district was purchased by the Agents of the New Zealand Company, its whole population did not amount to more than 50 souls: and these lived in constant dread of the attacks of hostile tribes from the north, who had at various periods killed, captured, or expelled from the district, its former inhabitants. But since the settlement of the place by white people has restored security, numbers of natives, who had either abandoned the district, or been made slaves and since emancipated by the northern tribes, have returned

to the spot. Including both banks of the Waitera, and all the country as far south as Sugar-loaf Point, there was probably, early in 1847, a native population of 1000 souls.

EDUCATION.

In 1847 there was one *Daily Boys' and Girls' School*, with about 40 scholars of each sex, and 2 *Infant Schools*, supported partly by the Bishop; and a *private boys' school*, with about 25 scholars.

LAND IN CULTIVATION, end of 1846.

Nature of Crop.	Acres.
Wheat	839
Barley	132
Rye	3
Oats	74
Potatoes	133
Turnips.....	57
Maize	1
Grass.....	154
European Flax	1
Fallow	122

Total..... 1516

The writer, already quoted, in the *New Zealander* of Feb. 16, 1848, says:—"The quantity of land under crop and in fallow this year exceeds 1600 acres, 700 of which are in wheat."

LIVE STOCK, end of 1846.

Horses, 22; Mules, 2; Horned Cattle, 363; Sheep, 511; Pigs, 702; Goats, 96.

Since that time, the number of live stock is known to have been much increased by importations from Sydney, and also from Wellington and Wanganui, overland.

IMPORTS AND EXPORTS, &c.

Year.	Value of		Inwards.		Outwards.	
	Imports.	Exports.	Ships.	Tons.	Ships.	Tons.
1842	1801 0 0	165 0 0	3	747	2	599
1843	3125 0 0	— — —	4	688	1	329
1844	3572 0 0	— — —	9	2754	3	608
1845	542 0 0	* — — —	1	44	1	44
1846	1287 0 0	— — —	2	83	*	*
	10,327 0 0		19	4316	7	1580

No returns were kept of the coasting-trade of this settlement.

* No returns.

GOVERNMENT REVENUE AND EXPENDITURE.

	£	s.	d.		£	s.	d.
Revenue—1842	314	6	10	Expenditure			
„ 1843	758	15	2	„	No returns.		
„ 1844	1187	4	8	„			
„ 1845	136	16	10	„			
„ 1846	315	10	0*	„	1401	5	0

The detailed account of the Government Receipts and Disbursements for 1846 is as follows:—

RECEIPTS.				DISBURSEMENTS.			
<i>Ordinary.</i>				<i>Civil Establishment.</i>			
	£	s.	d.		£	s.	d.
Customs	130	0	0+	Dep. of Sub-Trea-			
Fees and Fines—				surer	20	0	0
Police Court ..	15	10	0+	„ Customs	150	0	0
Publicans' Li-				„ Harbour-			
cences	120	0	0+	master	46	0	0
Auctioneers' ditto	50	0	0+				
				Total Civil..	216	0	0
Total Ordinary	315	10	0+	<i>Judicial.</i>			
<i>In Aid of Revenue.</i>				Police	1185	5	0
Remittances from							
Colonial Trea-							
surer	1500	0	0				
Total	1815	10	0	Total	1401	5	0

On the river Huatoki and its tributaries there are already three *Flour-mills*; one of which drives one pair, and another two pair of stones. The third is on a much larger scale. The *Wellington Spectator* of the 16th of April, 1848, gives the following account of—

“NATIVE MILLS.—A very excellent water-mill with one pair of stones has been erected within the last eight months at Warea, about twenty-six miles south of New Plymouth, at which, we are informed, a considerable quantity of wheat has already been ground. The machinery and other parts of the mill requiring European labour, amounting to 250*l.*, were paid for in pigs and other native produce.

* By estimate of Mr. Grimstone, before receipt of the Official Returns. The actual sum was probably greater, as under the head of Customs an Official Return gives 212*l.* 17*s.* 0*d.*, and Mr. G. only allows 130*l.*

+ Estimated by Mr. Grimstone before receipt of Official Returns.

A mill is also in the course of erection near Waimate,* about eight miles inland, which will be finished in the course of the next six months. Another mill has also been built at Waimate by the Rangitapu natives within seven miles of the former, and is now in operation. In both the mills last named the machinery and construction of the building has been performed by European labour, which has been paid for, as in the case of Warea, with pigs and other native produce. Each mill will be under the management of Europeans. These mills include a line of country of about sixty miles, and will greatly extend the cultivation of wheat among the natives. In other parts along the coast where there are no water-mills, the natives are well provided with steel flour mills."

There are four thrashing-machines, worked by cattle. One of them was constructed in the Settlement.

The following is a Directory for New Plymouth:†—

<i>Resident Magistrate</i>	Captain H. King, R.N.
<i>Justices of the Peace</i>	Captain H. King; D. M'Lean, J. Webster, J. G. Cooke, G. Cutfield, J. T. Wicksteed, J. Flight, W. Halse, and P. Wilson, Esqrs.; and Captain M. Campbell.
<i>Inspector of Police</i>	D. M'Lean, Esq.
<i>Sub-Collector of Customs,</i>	} J. Webster, Esq.
<i>Harbour-master, and</i>	
<i>Post-master</i>	
<i>Pilot</i>	Mr. J. Watson.
<i>Resident Agent of the New Zealand Company</i> ..	} (Vacant.)
<i>Clergy</i>	
Rev. H. Govett, B.A.,† Church of England; Rev. H. H. Turton, Wesleyan; R. Ward, Primitive Methodist.	

There are three *Legal Practitioners*;§ three *Medical Practitioners*, one of whom is M.D., and four *Mercantile Firms*. There are no *Military* at New Plymouth; but a small corps of *Armed Police* has been organized.

Mails are despatched to Wellington, Auckland, and Nelson, at

* See page 278.

† By a recent Proclamation, New Plymouth is included in "New Ulster," or the Northern Province: and is thus governed from Auckland, although in more natural connexion with the Cook's Strait Settlements. It is understood, however, that this arrangement may yet be revised, if the inhabitants desire it. The last accounts received describe them as wishing to remain in the Northern Province.

‡ Salary £150 per annum, with residence.

§ New Plymouth is attached to Auckland for judicial purposes; a very inconvenient arrangement, as most of the commerce of the place is carried on with Wellington and Nelson.

the discretion of the Postmaster, by occasional coasting and other vessels: and the *overland* mail, between the two first of those places, passes through New Plymouth each way once a fortnight.*

The present Governor-in-Chief, Sir George Grey, has purchased the house formerly inhabited by the Resident Agent of the Company: and has expressed his intention to reside here during a great part of the year.

CHAPTER IX.

Free Church of Scotland Colony projected in 1843—Exploring Expedition to select site—Country on the East Coast of Middle Island—Authorities—Otago District—Inland Water Communication—Face of Country—Otago Harbour—Proposed Sites of Dunedin and Port Chalmers—Sailing Directions—Rural Districts—Downs—Taieri Plain—Waiora Lake—Tokomairiro Plain—Clutha, or Molyneux, River—Lagoons—Plain of the Clutha—Bluff Harbour—New River—Jacob's River—Chalky and Dusky Bays—Milford Haven—Country between Banks's Peninsula and Otago—Irregular Settlements—Climate—Weather-Tables—Natural Productions—Minerals—Coal—Greenstone—Free Church Association—Plan of Colonization agreed upon—Completion of Surveys—Departure of First Colonists—Provision for Education—Land Sold—Subsequent Emigration.

As far back as the year 1843, a settlement had been projected by an Association of members of the Free Church of Scotland, to be founded in the territory, and under the auspices, of the New Zealand Company. When Captain Fitzroy was appointed Governor of New Zealand in that year, he carried out instructions from Lord Stanley, in compliance with the earnest request of the intended Colonists themselves, to assign Port Cooper, on Banks's Peninsula, as the site for the Scotch Colony (at that time named New Edinburgh), *provided that a better site could not be found on the same Middle Island.* Mr. Tuckett, having been appointed by the New Zealand Company (whose Chief Surveyor at Nelson he had been) to conduct the preliminary steps for the formation of the proposed Settlement of New Edinburgh, suggested the propriety of previously exploring the south-western and southern

* See p. 204.

coasts of the Middle Island, in order to determine the most desirable site—a suggestion that was immediately adopted. The brigantine *Deborah*, Captain Wing, was accordingly chartered for this purpose; and the exploring party sailed from Nelson on the 31st of March 1844. Besides Mr. Tuckett, on whom the responsible office of selecting the site of the new Colony entirely devolved, and Mr. Symonds, the officer appointed by Governor Fitzroy to superintend and assist in effecting a valid purchase of the requisite amount of land, the brigantine conveyed from Nelson, Dr. Monro, Messrs. Wither, Wilkinson, Barnicoat, and Davidson, the two latter in the capacity of draughtsmen and surveyors. The Rev. Mr. Volhers, a German clergyman, also embraced the opportunity thus afforded him, of seeking a suitable scene for his missionary labours. The *Deborah* first proceeded to Wellington, whence she set sail on the 2nd, and arrived at Port Cooper on the 5th of April. Of this exploratory expedition Dr. Monro published an extended narrative in the *Nelson Examiner*.* Mr. Tuckett also kept a Diary, which was published in London for the above-mentioned Association, but is now out of print. Colonel Wakefield, likewise, in a letter† to the Secretary of the New Zealand Company, gives an able account of the Otago district, which was finally selected, and of his perambulation of it, previous to the final completion of its purchase. Captain W. Mein Smith, R.A., had examined the coast and adjoining country, between Cape Campbell and Foveaux's Strait, in the latter end of 1842; and reported, in pursuance of instructions from Colonel Wakefield, as to the best site within that space for a new Settlement.‡ Mr. Joseph Thomas, who resided in the district for

* Re-published in the *New Zealand Journal*, Vol. vi., 1845, at No. 135, p. 55; No. 138, p. 95; No. 140, p. 119; No. 141, p. 131; and No. 149, p. 232.

† Printed in the Appendix to the New Zealand Company's 17th Report, p. 131, No. 36.

‡ For Extracts from this Report, see *New Zealand Journal* of August 19, 1843, Vol. iv., No. 95, page 213.

about twelve months—between April 1846 and April 1847—being engaged during a great part of that time in the performance of a surveying-contract for the New Zealand Company, returned to England in 1848, and communicated to several persons in this country the result of his observations.*

From these numerous authorities, many of which have been already quoted in a Pamphlet called the *Otago Journal*,† the following account of the Otago District is collated.

It must be premised, that the chain of Southern Alps, already mentioned at pages 41 and 214 rises within ten or twelve miles of the East Coast of the Middle Island, from the Kaikora or Lookers-on Inlet as far South as the latitude of Banks's Peninsula, leaving a plain between its foot and the sea-coast. South of Banks's Peninsula, however, this snowy range diverges towards the West Coast, thus leaving at the South end of the Middle Island, a vast undulating prairie, composed of high downs covered with grass, and admirably suited for pasture, alternately with extensive alluvial valleys. The following quotations will serve to give an idea of this part of the Island, the most central position in which is occupied by the Otago District.

The Hon. Henry W. Petre says:—

“According to the accounts from captains of whaling ships, who had visited Port Otago, and who were questioned on the subject by Colonel Wakefield, the winter there is scarcely less mild than at Port Nicholson; and native inhabitants of the place have concurred in declaring that snow remains only on the hills. The growth of vines at Akaroa, in Banks's Peninsula, which were planted by the French Colonists in the depth of winter, almost proves the mildness of the climate in that place. And Major Bunbury, in his Report‡ to Governor Hobson of a voyage to the southward in Her

* This gentleman has since been despatched by the Canterbury Association to select a site for their projected Colony.—See p. 18.

† Two Numbers have been published in Edinburgh. Can be procured at New Zealand House, price 2d. each.

‡ This Report will be found entire in Par. Papers, *Correspondence*, N. Z., 11th May, 1841, No. 311, p. 105.

Majesty's ship *Herald*, dated 28th June, 1840, (the dead of winter,) in speaking of Stewart's Island, the southern extremity of New Zealand, says—'In some excursions I made, I was much pleased with the fertile appearance of this beautiful island; and although the winter was so far advanced, it was not so cold as I had anticipated from its being so far to the south. Indeed, the number of parrots seen flying about gave it rather the appearance of a tropical island.'

"The cassowary* has also been seen in different parts of the island; and I am told by Captain Stuart, that he has seldom found snow to lie here for any number of days, even in the depth of winter." * * * *

"In this way, settlement after settlement will be formed on both Islands. On the Middle Island there are several very eligible sites for the purpose, though little known. The soil is excellent; there is abundance of coal, and I believe the climate is much milder than that of England. Major Bunbury, in the Report which I have already quoted, speaks as follows of this Island:—'At Akaroa we found a native village, and some Europeans connected with whaling establishments. A Captain Lethart, of Sydney, also here since the 10th of November last, has established a cattle run with about thirty head of horned cattle, and has two stock-men in charge of them. From the appearance of this herd, I am inclined to believe the pasturage much better than at the Bay of Islands. Potatoes, grown from this to the southward, are unquestionably of a superior quality, and in no respect inferior to those grown in Van Diemen's Land.

"The country has a very picturesque and park-like appearance, and seems well adapted for farms where both arable and pasture lands are required, yielding a mixed produce.

"On leaving Tavai Poenammoo, or the Middle Island,' continues Major Bunbury, 'I was forcibly struck with the bleak and savage appearance of its chain of mountains covered with eternal snow, as viewed from the sea, and contrasted with the *real amenity of its climate, and fertility of the soil* near the coast. I am inclined to believe that the capabilities of this Island for purposes of agriculture have been *much underrated*, to say nothing of its splendid harbours and mineralogical productions.'—*Hon. H. W. Petre's Account of New Zealand.* London, 1841, pp. 84, 86, 87.

The present Governor of New Zealand, Sir George Grey:—

"In my recent visit to the Southern Settlements, an opportunity offered of my examining a portion of the country lying in the vicinity of the port of Otago, at which I understand a Settlement is to be formed; indeed, I am informed that the first emigrants are already on their voyage from England for the purpose of occupying this locality.

* The *Weka*, or *Wood-hen*, (see page 163.)

"I am happy to be able to state that I have never seen any locality which appeared to me better adapted for the occupation of British settlers; and from the fertility of the soil, the unequalled facilities which it offers for the depasturing of sheep and cattle, and its general remarkable advantages, there can be no doubt that the Southern portion of the Middle Island offers prospects of the most cheering kind to the intending emigrants, of whose ultimate success there can be no doubt. * * * I believe that, with the advantage of possessing from its earliest days the presence of an efficient local Government, the progress of the Settlements formed in this Southern province would be so rapid, that it would shortly yield a large surplus revenue.

"It will be seen, from Lieut.-Colonel Bunbury's Report to Governor Hobson, of the 28th June, 1840, that this Officer, even at that date, fully reported the apparent capabilities of the Southern portion of the Middle Island, and my own observations lead me entirely to concur in his views; in fact, I have never seen a country better adapted for the reception of Immigrants." * * * —*Extracts from a Despatch, dated Government House, Auckland, 16th March, 1848, addressed, by Governor Grey, to the Secretary of State for the Colonies.*

The Bishop of New Zealand:—

"January 9 (1844).—At sunset, from the top of the last hill at the S.W. angle of the (Banks's) Peninsula, we obtained a magnificent view over the vast plains of the south. Below us stretched out the apparently interminable line of the 'ninety miles beach'—a continuous range of uniform shingle, without head-land or bay. Within this shingle bank is a great lake, Waihora, * * * * eighteen miles in length. Beyond the lake are plains of vast extent, bounded by a range of snowy mountains, behind which the sun was setting. * *

* * * January 17.—The Waitangi River (south of Banks's Peninsula) runs from west to east, through a vast plain of forty or fifty miles in length, and about twelve in width, stretching east and west, without a tree or shrub. * * *

January 18.—Walked over a beautiful grass plain, at first altogether without trees, but after twelve miles, covered with the Ti palm. * * *

January 19.—Remained at Moerangi (south of the Waitangi), a whaling station, but of a better stamp than those which I had seen on the Peninsula, the men having employed their spare time in agriculture, and having good crops of wheat and potatoes on the ground. * * *

January 23.—The wind being contrary, I stayed at Waikouaiti (south of Moerangi), and walked over the Settlement, visiting most of the English Settlers, many of whom had good fields of corn nearly ready for harvest. In the afternoon, rode to a large farm belonging to Mr. Jones, a merchant of Sydney, where I saw a noble field of wheat of fifty acres, and a very large stock of cows, sheep,

and horses."—*Annals of the Diocese of New Zealand.* London, 1847. pp. 116 to 126.

Mr. Tuckett:—

"I have omitted to mention, that from Moerangi (30 miles North of Otago) to this place (Otago), the stalks and leaves of the potatoes, wherever cultivated, were as verdant as at midsummer; the distance of the snowy mountains west of these parts of the island more than compensating, in respect to climate, for its southern latitude; whilst, in superiority of soil, it possesses a decided advantage over most of the districts of available land on the island adjacent to Cook's Strait."—*Tuckett's Report*, p. 34, 35.

Dr. Monro:—

"The village of Tukurau (that lies far in the interior, in the route from Otago to the Bluff Harbour in Foveaux Strait) is spoken of by whites and natives as being situated in a district of remarkable fertility. The natives residing there are reported to be extensive cultivators of wheat. Indeed, the whole country between the Bluff and the Clutha (Molyneux) inland is said to be available, and such as to present no serious obstacle to the formation of a road."—*Monro*, p. 55.

"On the whole, the result of this interesting trip must be the firm conviction in the minds of all who took a part in it, of the ample field for colonization afforded by the Middle Island of New Zealand. It may be considered as ascertained that a vast tract of country, extending from sixty miles north of Port Cooper (in Banks's Peninsula) to Jacob's River at the southern extremity of the island, admits of occupation in one unbroken line. How far into the interior such country may extend, it is still undetermined; but the great success attending this expedition cannot but have generated a belief that farther exploration will be rewarded by farther discoveries."—*Ibid.*, p. 56.

"On the large plain, from what I learnt, the climate appears to be a good deal like our own.*

"The summer is said to be very warm, with much bright weather, and less rain than could be desired; and the frosts of winter are sharp. This is, in fact, what is generally observed on large open levels: the thermometer is higher in summer and lower in winter than in countries of irregular surface; at the same time, within the twenty-four hours, its range is greater. The frosts, as might be expected, set in sooner on the Port Cooper plain than to the northward. A fortnight before we arrived, there had been a frost which withered the potato stalks. At Otago, on the other hand, which we did not reach till the 24th of April, though so much farther

* That of Nelson.

south, and later in the season, we found the potatoes still green and flourishing. It thus appears that the frost set in at Port Cooper at least a month sooner than at Otago."—*Ibid.*, p. 57.

"On the whole, the east coast of the Middle Island much exceeded my anticipations, which, however, I may mention, were by no means extravagant. It offers a large extent of level and undulating land; while the circumstance of its being covered with grass is of the greatest importance, as affording to industry a natural production of inestimable value, capable of being converted, with the smallest amount of labour or outlay, into a source of wealth and abundance. * * * * Altogether this portion of the country has much more the appearance of being matured, and has an older and more respectable look (than the North Island.) You do not see those numberless sharp, fresh-fractured looking ridges which cut up the surface. * * * * On the contrary, the outline of the hills is more rounded and swelling, with expanded tops, while plains lie at their feet, resulting from the same causes which have produced the rounded outline of the former, what geologists term 'degradation,' viz., the washing down of the more elevated portions of the land, by the long-continued action of the elements. The geological structure of the country appeared to me of an older character than that of the North Island. Thus in Banks's Peninsula we find an old vesicular trap—at Moerangi, Waikouaiti, and Otago, we met with the coal formation and old basaltic rocks—between Molyneux (the Clutha) and Toetoe* the coast consists of grand and lofty cliffs of dark red sandstone, the strata of which rise not towards the interior of the country, but towards the sea. * * * * There is a very large field for the production of wool along the east coast of this island, and I am convinced that it can be grown with greater profit there than in any part of Australia. * * * * There is abundance of water enabling the flock-master to wash his wool thoroughly; and the climate of this country is particularly favourable to the constitution of the sheep. Having seen most of the Australian colonies, and acquired a little experience at some expense, I see no occupation which affords so good a prospect of rapid return upon the money invested, as sheep-grazing in this country, wherever pasture is sufficiently abundant; and there is a great extent of grass land between Banks's Peninsula and the Bluff."—*Ibid.*, p. 234.

The New Zealand Company has received a Crown grant, under the seal of the territory, dated 13th of April, 1846, of the portion of this District which possesses the most central position, combined with other advantages. It is a well-defined block of land, com-

* Half-way between the Clutha River and Bluff Harbour.

prehending 400,000 acres, situated on the east coast of the Middle Island, about 150 miles south of Banks's Peninsula, extending from S. lat. $45^{\circ} 40'$, to S. lat. $46^{\circ} 20'$; it has a noble harbour; abundance of untimbered fertile land and open grassy pastures, interspersed with an adequate supply of wood; a navigable inland water communication running up the centre of the block for nearly its entire length, and the richest land lying on either side of it, remarkably well watered; with an ample field of coal; and to the west, and stretching away to the feet of the snowy mountains, an unbounded sheep-walk, open to the farmer and flock-owner;—a series of combined advantages rarely to be met with within such a moderate compass. It is described in the following quotations:—

Dr. Monro says:—

“ The block from which it is proposed to select the lands of the New Edinburgh settlement, has a coast line of from fifty to sixty miles in length, lying between the mouth of Otago harbour and a headland called the Noggetts, about three miles S. W. of the Clutha. It extends to an average distance inland of seven miles. The more hilly portions near the coast being omitted, the sections will be taken in one continuous line, extending throughout the whole district, branching out at various points, so as to include all that is most desirable. The most remarkable feature in this district is the great facility of internal water communication. To so great an extent will this invaluable privilege be enjoyed, that no section will be far from, and many will be adjacent to, a navigable river or lagoon. In point of land, certainly there need not be an inferior section in the whole settlement.

“ The southernmost portion of this block is watered by the rivers Puerua, Koau, and Clutha, besides a multitude of smaller streams. The two last-named rivers are navigable for vessels of considerable tonnage. Connected with one another, and with the Clutha, by navigable streams, are the shallow lagoons of Kaitangata and Rangitoto, one and six miles long respectively. Their fertile shores will furnish an admirable series of sections; the only drawback to which is the scarcity (not the absence) of wood. The head of the Rangitoto lagoon is about eighteen miles from the mouth of the Clutha; and here, in this direction, water communication ceases. There is no formidable obstacle to the formation of a road between this and the plain of the Tokomairiro. The plain itself is about 7000 acres in extent, and consists entirely of grass; the neighbour-

ing hills also are nearly destitute of wood. Though well watered, it is free from swamps. From this valley there is almost a level pass into that of the Taieri, where water communication again commences, and by means of the Waihola lagoon and the Taieri river, continues uninterrupted to within about nine miles of the Otago harbour. The Waihola and Rangitoto lagoons are about twelve miles apart. The plain of the Taieri is swampy to a large extent; but, on the whole, will be a valuable district. The river of the same name flows into the sea about twenty or thirty miles south of Otago. For the first five miles from its mouth, it is confined within lofty and precipitous hills, that barely afford it room to pass. Beyond this the valley suddenly opens, and the river branches, leading to the Waihola on the south, and passing through the bulk of the valley on the north. Like the preceding districts, this is rather bare of wood.

“Between the Taieri and Otago, the country consists chiefly of hills of moderate elevation, covered with a good soil. Over them, and through the passes between, a practicable road might readily be formed.”—*Munro*, pp. 55, 56.

Colonel Wakefield:—

“At Port Cooper, half of the labourers' time would be consumed in bringing fuel from a distance from any suitable site for a settlement; and it may be safely asserted that a section of fifty acres there would not pay the cost of fencing, and building on it, in the course of the owner's life. The neighbourhood of Otago is essentially, as was observed to me by a labouring man from Nelson, a poor man's country—containing good land and plenty of wood. The plains in the vicinity of Banks's Peninsula would be more appropriately colonised under a system of division of the land into sections of not less than a square mile each, with facilities to flock-holders and capitalists to acquire a contiguous property to an extent to meet their means and wishes. Happily the block of land purchased by the Company for the settlement of New Edinburgh, out of which we are at liberty to select 150,000 acres to meet the engagements made with purchasers, contains in the immediate neighbourhood of the good land that will be surveyed as properties, extensive tracts of excellent pasture grounds, which will be open to all under the sanction of the Government; and outside the boundary of the block to the westward, there is an extent of land of the same nature—boundless to the view, untrodden by the foot of man, and affording abundant food for sheep and cattle during the whole year, with the exception of a few weeks in the winter, when the uplands are covered with snow, during which time the plains and valleys yield a more abundant herbage than in the heats of summer.”

It has been determined to found the Town of the proposed Scotch colony, to be called Dunedin, at the

Southern end—with a port-town, to be called Port Chalmers, on the West shore of the narrow channel between the outer and inner portions—of the harbour of Otago, which is situated, as described, at the Northern extremity of the Block.

The harbour is thirteen miles long, by an average width of two miles; with six fathoms of water for seven miles up, from the Heads to the Islands, and with three fathoms for the remaining six miles, up to the very head of the harbour; perfectly sheltered; the tide runs at the rate of three miles an hour, which will aid a vessel in working up and down the harbour. The harbour runs in a direction nearly north and south, and opens towards the meridian sun, which is justly esteemed a great advantage. The Capital Town of Dunedin will stand at the very head of the harbour, in a situation of great natural beauty, and connecting the rural land of the interior with the sea-port.

Colonel Wakefield says:—

“ The first impressions created by the sight of the harbour are extremely favourable. Lying open to the north, it is entered with a fair wind from the other Settlements of New Zealand, and from Australia.

“ This also prevents any delay at the Heads, on leaving the port. A fair wind out of harbour takes a vessel soon free of the land, and, if seized at the commencement, may carry a ship of average sailing qualities to Cook's Strait in forty-eight hours.

“ The distance between Port Nicholson and Otago is 320 miles. There is no lee-shore, except in the bays along this coast, with the winds that usually blow with any violence. That from the north-east is known for its mild character. Its northern aspect, moreover, renders Otago much more agreeable than if it opened to the south,* as do Akaroa, Port Underwood, and Port Nicholson. The morning sun enlivens every part of the harbour, which is protected from the cold wind by an amphitheatre of hills. The wind prevails from the S. W., which draws right down and out of the harbour; but this need not prevent a vessel bound to the place, and unable to enter the port in consequence of its strength, from anchoring in perfect safety at about a quarter of a mile from the eastern head

* It will be remembered that in the Southern hemisphere the sun is North at noon.

(called Tairoa's head,) in smooth water of about eight fathoms depth, with good holding ground. Ample sea-room presents itself to strange vessels unable to fetch into the anchorage before night-fall. The sand-banks which lie immediately within the Heads are of inconsiderable extent, and have, according to Captain Wing, who sounded carefully all over the entrance, three fathoms and a half of water on them at dead low water, spring tides. The tide runs about three miles an hour, and may be made good use of in working a vessel up or down the harbour; as the port is land-locked on three sides, the sea seldom rises on the banks: and the sandy nature of the bottom prevents damage to small vessels touching it. Pilots and buoys will hereafter render the channel extremely easy to navigate vessels not exceeding five hundred tons burthen up to the islands; but larger vessels will find safe anchorage a mile inside the Heads abreast of the village, which has sprung up there from its having been the site of a whaling station, and the residence of the natives visiting the harbour on their voyages from Banks's Peninsula to Foveaux's Strait. An American whaler of 600 tons was lying there lately to refresh. A great advantage presents itself at Otago over Port Cooper, in the abundance of timber and fire-wood that grow on its shores."

"Before leaving Hoputai, which you will observe by the chart is a small bay near the islands, and about mid-way between the entrance of the harbour and its head, I examined with Mr. Tuckett the capabilities it affords for the site of a seaport town. The land available for building around and contiguous to the bay, consists of about 150 acres. The face towards two sides of the bay is steep, but on the top there is table land, and at the base sufficient level to afford room for a road. Warehouses might be also built almost even with the water, by excavating back into the hill. The great advantages of the site are, its being perfectly sheltered both from wind and swell of the sea, and having four and five fathoms water close to a sufficient part of its shores for the construction of ample wharfs and quays.

"The shores of the harbour of Otago are, as I have already said, densely wooded. The hills are not so steep as around Port Nicholson; and the soil is, generally speaking, better adapted for husbandry. The distance from the heads of the port to its termination is about fourteen miles. A channel runs throughout its whole length; but it has not yet been precisely ascertained what depth of water there is to the south of the islands, or in the upper harbour, as it may be called. Near the islands there are 15 fathoms, and a small vessel that took some of the surveyors and stores, carried three fathoms all the way up the harbour. When the channel is marked with stakes on the sand-banks, similarly to the upper part of Portsmouth harbour, and with two or three buoys near the entrance, no harbour that I have seen will be more convenient; but

in order to make it the most safe and commodious harbour of New Zealand, it requires a small steam-tug, which, when not engaged in towing vessels in or out, might be advantageously employed in plying between the Port and the Town."

"On the whole I consider Otago as an excellent harbour. It has hitherto been thought to have a bar at its entrance, which is not the case. For picturesque beauty, Otago only yields to Akaroa amongst the harbours of New Zealand."

Dr. Monro:—

"On the 24th of April, the exploring vessel entered the noble harbour of Otago. The entrance is narrow—a little more than a quarter of a mile only; and, as there cannot be short of thirty square miles of tidal water within, the current at the mouth is strong. The harbour is divided into an inner and an outer, by two islands that lie across it. The former is about six miles in length, and the latter about seven. The average width of either is about two miles. The channels leading from the one harbour to the other are narrow and deep. A great portion of the space within both harbours consists of shallows; and every tide discovers several large dry banks. Still, enough of deep water remains to render either an extensive and valuable harbour. Nothing can be more perfect than the shelter it affords; and its fertile shores, wooded to the water's edge, form a picture of no ordinary beauty."—*Monro*, p. 55.

Mr. Tuckett:—

"*Saturday, 27th.*—Landed at the head of the inner or upper harbour, the length of which must be full seven miles, that of the lower about six. On either side the forest continues unbroken; good timber is abundant; the soil, notwithstanding that the surface is often rocky and stony, appears to be fertile, the rock being probably a species of basalt. There is certainly more available and eligible land on the shores of this vast inland sea, than on any portion of Banks's Peninsula; and in respect of the facility of constructing a road, it possesses a corresponding superiority. A space of less than a quarter of a mile intervenes at the head of the harbour between it and the ocean shore; here, for a space of two miles, there is a water frontage to the harbour of unwooded land rising gently inland. Landing, I followed the native track for about two miles towards the Taieri, and then returned to the boat at this point. It offers an ornamental and commodious site for a town, most suitable in every respect, save the distance from the deep water of the lower harbour; the channel throughout is on the west side, and generally narrow, and a fathom and a half of water would be found to within two miles of the extremity of the harbour. Two-thirds of the space covered by the flood is left dry at the ebb. Whilst I was there, the surface of the water was almost unruffled, and no swell

entered from the ocean, where the entrance is narrow. The schooner lay without motion."—*Tuckett*, p. 37.

Colonel Wakefield again:—

"To pursue the narrative of our perambulation of the boundaries. On arriving at the head of the upper harbour, an unexceptionable site for a town presents itself to the view. The character of the country here entirely changes. The land lies in long slopes or downs, upon which grows good grass, mixed with shrubs, indicative of a strong soil. The aspect of the town will be northerly (facing the meridian sun), and fronting the harbour. To the west of it some undulating slopes, covered to the water's edge with beautiful timber and coarse wood, offer space for several hundred ten-acre sections, semicircling a cove, almost dry at low water. To the south the uplands, which separate the large promontory, in which the harbour is found, from the level pastoral country of the main, rise gradually as a protection from the cold winds. To the eastward is an opening in the chain of hills that belts the coast between the eastern head of Otago and Cape Saunders, across which extends a barrier of recent sandy formation, shutting out the sea, which in former times evidently flowed through what is now the harbour of Otago. The site of the town thus fixed at the head of the navigation of the port, and at the commencement of the rural lands of the settlement in their whole length, abounds in wood and fresh water. The waters of the harbour teem with fish of the best sort. The habouka* is taken in great quantities near the shipping town; flat fish and oysters in all the bays."

"We returned to Otago on the 26th of July. The proposed site of the town pleased me more on a closer inspection, and the next day I had my good opinion of it confirmed by Mr. Commissioner Spain, with whom I again visited it, and who pronounced it an admirable position for the purpose. * * * * The only objection that I can name is its distance from the shipping town and port—viz., seven miles; but this is greatly palliated by the excellent water communication of the upper harbour."

Since these accounts were written, the harbour has been regularly surveyed and mapped, and the channel up to Hoputai, or Port Chalmers, properly marked with buoys, by Mr. Charles Kettle, the Chief Surveyor of the New Zealand Company. The following are the *Sailing Directions* for entering the harbour, appended to his map:—

"OTAGO, OR OTAKOU HARBOUR. (*Tairoa's Head. E. side of entrance.*) Lat. 45° 46' 48" S. Long. 170° 43' 12" E. Variation

* See p. 160.

16° 10' E. H. W. at F. and C. 3h. 15m. Springs rise 7 ft.; ordinary tides, $5\frac{1}{2}$ ft.

"Vessels should not attempt to enter against an ebb tide, without a strong commanding breeze, as the ebb from the N. meets that coming out of the harbour near Tairoa's Head, and causes a strong set of current from that point towards Point Heyward (W. side of entrance); should the wind be light, safe anchorage may be had outside in 7 fathoms' water till the flood tide makes.

"The deepest water will be obtained by passing Tairoa's Head at the distance of about a cable's length, steering SSW. $\frac{1}{4}$ W. till Point Howlett is brought abeam, and the soundings deepen to 5 fathoms (low water). From here the first Buoys will be easily distinguished: the Red one being on the starboard, the White one on the port, side of the ship-channel inside: and steering straight for them the water deepens from 5 to 10 fathoms.

"If it be near low water, vessels drawing more than 15 ft. should anchor about midway between Point Harington and the Red Buoy, in 7 fathoms, till the tide rises, as the shallowest part of the channel lies between the first Buoys.

"The channel up to Port Chalmers (Hoputai Bay) is marked by Buoys on each side, placed in three fathoms' water.

"The Red Buoys are all on the starboard hand, and the White, Red-and-white, and Black Buoys are all on the port hand. By attention to these, which are numerous and can be easily seen from the deck, a vessel of any size will have no difficulty in going up, and carrying from 5 to 10 fathoms all the way. After passing the Black Buoy opposite Deborah Bay, steer for about two cables' lengths towards the N. Z. Company's Store in Hoputai Bay, and anchor in $5\frac{1}{2}$ fathoms, soft mud.

CHARLES H. KETTLE."

The Chart has been published by Smith, Elder & Co., Cornhill, for the New Zealand Company. The preliminary expedition of Colonists, who sailed from England in December, 1847, and arrived in March, 1848, will have established regular pilots on their arrival.

As to the rural districts, Colonel Wakefield says:—

"Beyond the first ridge of down, which forms the southern horizon from the harbour, lies an undulating country, covered with grass. This is more or less good, according to position and aspect, and has been much deteriorated in places by extensive and repeated burnings, which impoverish the land. The worst of it, however, affords abundant food for sheep.

"The anise plant, so valuable as pasture for sheep and cattle, abounds over all the land we traversed. It is this plant that renders the plain of the Waimea, near Nelson, so propitious to the fattening of stock. I have never tasted such well-flavoured meat as that

fattened on the natural pastures near Nelson. The plant is also found in abundance near Port Cooper, and in the Wairarapa valley, near Port Nicholson. I have not seen it farther north, or in any district where fern abounds. Its chief property seems to be a warming tonic. As such I believe some preparation of its seed is given in racing stables in England, as a condition ball. It arrives at its full growth during the summer; but in many places during our journey, I found it at this season of the year eighteen inches in length, and scarcely a square foot of ground without a root of it. In the uplands we found snow in some places knee-deep, and the ground frozen to the depth of an inch; but on our return these indications of a severe climate had disappeared before some days as warm as those of summer. The vicinity of snowy eminences is highly estimated by flock-owners, particularly where the downs are round topped and in long slopes, so that the gradual tricklings from the melting snows go to nourish the roots of the grasses. After traversing these downs for five miles from Otago, we overlooked the plain of the Taieri, which contains about 40,000 acres of land, and is intersected by the river of the same name, navigable for large boats twelve miles from the sea, which it reaches at about twenty-five miles from Otago. About two-thirds of the plain are now available. The remainder is subject to inundations, but may be reclaimed and rendered more valuable than the higher parts."

"The land at the head of the Waiora Lake consists of undulating downs, round topped, and covered with herbage, grass of various descriptions, and anise of larger growth than any I had previously seen. Quails are plentiful over all these downs, and in the plains adjoining, and would be more so but for the hawks and kites. Hereafter, it will become the business of the Scotch sportsmen to give rewards for their destruction.

The view from Owiti is very extensive. At its base, to the S.W., lies the plain of the Tokomairiro, containing about 14,000 acres. To the east, hills, to the breadth of seven miles, extend to the coast; to the north lies the portage of six miles between it and the Waiora; and to the west, undulating prairies of boundless extent, available for cattle and sheep three parts of the year. It would be a most advantageous and attractive thing to the settlement, if some Scotch proprietors would send some red deer to be turned out here. In the course of a few years there is no doubt they would increase largely. The sport of hunting them would be highly attractive, and would conduce to the improvement of the breed of horses, and afford a manly amusement to the young Colonists, fitting them for the more serious occupations of stock-keeping and wool-growing. The communication with this country from Otago is extremely easy. Water carriage can be made use of down the Taieri to the head of the Waiora Lake. A good road may be made without much expense

from thence to Rangitoto. A short portage thence to Kaitangata Lake and to the Clutha River and District."

This fine river (the Matou or Molyneux of the maps) is a quarter of a mile broad, six fathoms deep, and retains, it is said, that depth and width for fifty miles inland. By all accounts it appears to wind through extended plains of great beauty and extraordinary fertility. It forms the southern extremity of the block, whilst Otago harbour forms the northern extremity.

Mr. Tuckett says:—

"The Clutha (or Matou) is a river which even an American would not condemn; its course inland is so distant that I cannot pretend to estimate the distance. The hills west of its course are certainly twenty miles from the shore, and no snowy mountains are visible. Mr. ——— informed me subsequently that he had ascended it in a boat for at least fifty miles, and that it was still navigable for a large boat; also, that many navigable creeks unite with it, by one of which a boat may be taken to a lagoon, called Kaitangata, and then by a narrow channel to another lagoon, called Rangitoto, from whence the distance to the Taieri valley does not exceed six miles.

"Mr. Palmer informed me that he once ascended the Clutha (or Matou) in a boat, for a distance, he imagines, equal to fifty miles, in a straight course (not estimated by that of the river); and he was still, he believes, very far from its head. I was much pleased with the Tautuku.* It is not merely rich and picturesque in scenery, but very productive. I have no doubt but that a road might be easily formed up the valley, and over the summit ridge, to the unwooded plains Tutu-rau† and Toi-toi."—pp. 42, 46.

Dr. Monro:—

"A short distance farther, and the rising ground, which had hitherto been close upon our right hand, turned off towards the interior; and we had before us the long beach at the bottom of Molyneux Bay, with a large extent of level country behind it. On mounting to the top of some low sand-hills, we came in view of the Molyneux river—a majestic stream of water about a quarter of a mile broad, deep, with well-defined banks, flowing close to us parallel to the sea, with a steady, gentle current. Looking up it we

* In the course of a journey along the coast southwards from Otago.

† Between the plain of the Clutha and Toi-toi.

could trace its course through a large extent of alluvial land, by the thick fringe of ti-trees upon its banks, and by numerous groves of wood, producing a most picturesque effect. At the distance of about ten miles inland, gentle slopes, apparently grassy, rose to a moderate elevation; behind which no mountains were visible, save in one direction towards the north-west, where the white summits of a very far distant range showed themselves. The landscape was altogether one of great beauty and unusually rich softness."—p. 119.

"The Clutha (Matou or Molyneux) river, is a magnificent stream, of near a quarter of a mile wide, deep, and with a moderate current. It is difficult of entrance from the surf over the bar at the mouth, and from the circumstance of its having an invariable outward current. Beyond the bar it has six fathoms of water; and it is said to preserve its depth and width for sixty miles from its mouth.

"The plain of the Clutha, which is from 10,000 to 20,000 acres in extent, has a fine growth of grass, flax, etc. The land is undoubtedly good, but liable in portions to be overflown. Probably, the most desirable land will be found on the neighbouring hills, which display a series of most beautiful slopes, chiefly clothed with grass. As on the plain itself, there is a fair sprinkling of wood. In every direction there are extensive tracts of this valuable description of country. The two white settlers have grown such crops of corn and potatoes on the fine wooded slopes behind the village, as leave no doubt of their great fertility."—p. 55.

"At Iwikatea the Clutha (Molyneux or Matou) is a splendid river, upwards of 200 yards in width, with a deep steady current and definite banks. Each of the branches into which it divides is a large river, with a depth of several fathoms of water. But unfortunately at its mouth the river is contracted by a reef of rocks. What its navigable capabilities are has not yet been ascertained, but it is certain that its mouth is not easily accessible. By small vessels or steamers, it might, generally speaking, be entered, but not by sailing vessels of any burden, except in particular states of the weather. In a direction inland, it is said to be navigable for whale-boats for fifty miles, by the windings of the river, which, with deductions for exaggeration, may probably amount to about twenty-five."—p. 233.

Southward of the block, a fertile upland country extends along the coast as far as the Bluff, a fine harbour at the eastern extremity of Foveaux's Strait. Immediately west of that harbour, a considerable river, called the New River, flows into the Strait; and about 30 miles further to the westward, a larger river, called Jacob's River. Both these are accessible for shipping of considerable size; though there is a bar at the en-

trance of the New River. The interior of the neighbouring country is not known to have been explored: but all accounts of that part of it which border on the coast, concur in describing it as of a similar character to that between Otago and the Clutha.

Further to the west, the country becomes mountainous, as spurs of the great range reach to the sea-coast. Chalky Bay and Dusky Bay, at the S.W. extremity of the Island, are very fine harbours, resembling the Pelorus and Queen Charlotte Sounds in depth of water, abundance of fine timber, and romantic scenery; and also in scarcity of level or available land for settlement. Dusky Bay was a favourite rendezvous of Captain Cook. Thence northward to the river Arahura, to which Messrs. Heaphy and Brunner extended their exploring expedition from Nelson, in March 1846,* little or nothing is known of the coast, except that the mountains approach close to the sea. Rumours have, indeed, been gathered from the sealers and whalers, to the effect, that a fine harbour, which they call Milford Haven, exists on that part of the coast; but no definite information on the subject has ever yet been obtained.

North of the Otago block, the country is said to resemble that described as within it in general character: but there is no harbour or river large enough to admit shipping, between Otago and Akaroa in Banks's Peninsula, along a coast-line 200 miles in length. As far north as Moerangi, 40 miles from Otago Heads, the country immediately adjoining the sea-shore is of a hilly character.

Both within and without the Otago block, small settlements of white people have been formed for a greater or less period: the inhabitants being employed in the whale fishery and in sealing; in herding cattle and sheep imported from the Australian Colonies; in the growth of wheat, potatoes, &c.; in building small vessels for the coasting-trade; or in trading between the

* See p. 238.

few native inhabitants and the whaling-ships which frequently visit the harbours for rest and refreshment, on account of their proximity to the favourite fishing-grounds.

At Moerangi, there is a whaling-station, which has been supplied from Sydney till within a very recent date. It now depends on Wellington. Two boats and 16 men were employed at this station in 1845. There are also about 15 other Europeans, and 50 head of cattle, besides goats, pigs, and poultry; 40 or 50 natives also reside here.

For 23 miles South of Moerangi, there is a sandy beach, backed by hills; at the end of which is the settlement of Waikouaiti, 17 miles North of Otago Heads. Here Mr. John Jones, a Colonist from Sydney, has an extensive establishment, at which he carries on whaling, farming, and the breeding of horses, sheep, and cattle. In April, 1847, there were at this settlement about 40 or 50 Europeans of both sexes; 100 acres of land under cultivation, of which a large proportion in wheat; 500 head of cattle; 2000 sheep; 50 or 60 horses, chiefly brood mares; and 2 boats fitted out for the shore-fishery. Wheat has been cultivated successfully here for several years.—(See p. 295.)

There is also here a Chapel and Station of the Wesleyan Missionary Society, the present resident Minister being the Rev. I. Creed.

Between Waikouaiti and Otago Heads the coast is steep, so that the path lies over the hills. At a spot called Blueskins, 6 miles from Otago Heads, two or three squatters from Wellington have recently formed an establishment. They have about 50 head of cattle, and 1000 sheep.

On each side of the entrance of Otago harbour, there are cattle-stations, &c. There are here, altogether, a few Europeans, 50 head of cattle, 300 sheep, and 3 horses.

Near the mouth of the harbour, on the E. side, there is a Settlement of 50 to 100 white people.

On the site of Dunedin, at the S. end of the Upper harbour, a Mr. Anderson had, in April 1847, 300 sheep and 50 head of cattle running.

At Tautuku, S. of the Clutha's mouth, there are 2 whaling boats, and a few other white residents, besides their crews.

At the Bluff, or Bloomfield Harbour, there are also 2 boats, and a few white residents; some wild cattle, and 10 or 12 head of tame cattle.

At the mouth of Jacob's River there are about 50 Europeans, and 100 head of cattle. Here a schooner of 190 tons burthen, called the Amazon, was built; which was registered lately at Wellington, and there completely fitted out for the whale-fishery. (See p. 192.) She sailed on her first cruise in the year 1847. Here, also, some wheat is grown. Mr. Tuckett says:—

“Whilst at the Aparima or Jacob's river, at the very southernmost point of the Middle Island, I called on Mr. —, to see the wheat which he has grown. It was in very good condition and heavy, grown on cleared bushland, a nice sandy loam, but too sandy to last long without manure.”—p. 52.

Little is yet known of Stewart's Island. It contains about 1,000,000 acres of land, chiefly undulating, with a high mountain in its centre, and covered with wood. It possesses two fine harbours—Port Somes at its southern extremity; and The Neck, or Paterson's River, on its north-east side, in Foveaux's Strait. Here about 30 or 40 Europeans are settled, who pursue the whale and seal fishery, and possess a few cattle and sheep.

The nature of the Climate and Soil may be gathered from the numerous extracts which have been made. No careful Meteorological Journals have as yet been kept in the Otago district; but inferences may be drawn as to the general climate from the two following very imperfect Weather-Tables.—

No. I. is a Summary of the Observations made by Mr. R. Harrison, Assistant-Surveyor to the New Zealand Company, near the

mouth of the Clutha, about 50 miles South of Otago, between the 28th of June, 1846, and the 31st of March, 1847. Unfortunately, it thus does not record the weather during three winter months.

No. II. is a Summary of the Observations recorded in a very rough Diary kept by Mr. Joseph Thomas, during his sojourn in the following parts of the Otago District:—

From 19th April, 1846, to 4th May, he was at Otago Harbour.

From 4th May, to 11th May, he was at sea, between Otago and the Clutha.

From 11th May, to 29th June, he was in the plain of the Clutha.

From 29th June, to 29th July, he was travelling from the Clutha to Otago and back, and staying at Otago 22 days.

From 29th July, to 4th November, he was in the plain of the Clutha.

From 4th November, to 14th, he was travelling from Clutha to Waikouaiti and back, partly by land and partly by sea.

From 14th November, 1846, to 15th February, 1847, he was in the plain of the Clutha.

Mr. Thomas has made in his Diary no observations whatever respecting 86 days out of the 303. They should probably be shared among the others, in the same proportions.

I.—*Weather-Table kept in the plain of the Clutha, from June 28, 1846, to March 31, 1847, by Mr. R. Harrison.*

Months.	Fine days.	Cloudy, but fine.	Showery.	Rainy.	Snow.	Fro sy.	Gales of Wind.	Fog.
June, 1846.....	1	..	..	..	2			
July	19	1	7	4	..	5	3	
August	13	5	8	5	..	5	..	3
September	18	4	4	4	..	..	4	
October	20	3	4	4	..	..	5	
November	22	..	5	3	..	..	9	
December	22	..	6	3	..	..	12	
January, 1847	25	1	5	0	..	..	4	
February	21	..	5	2	..	1	..	
March	19	1	2	0	..	..	4	2
9 Months and 3 } days, (exclusive of } winter months)...	180	15	46	34	2	11	41	5

II. *Weather Table, kept chiefly in the plain of the Clutha, but partly at Otago and in intervening places, from April 18, 1846, to February 15, 1847, by Mr. J. Thomas.*

Months.	Fine Days.	Cloudy.	Showery.	Rainy.	Snow.	No. Obs.	Frost.	Gales.	Fog.
April, 1846 .....	...	1	...	9	...	2	...	...
May	8	4	1	9	1	8	1	5	1
June	20	...	2	3	...	5	14	...	
July	16	...	...	11	...	4	4	5	1
August	14	...	1	7	...	9	11	4	
September	8	2	1	8	1	10	...	3	1
October	14	...	...	3	1	13	...	2	
November	11	...	...	4	...	15	...	2	
December	20	...	...	3	...	8	...		
January, 1847 ..	16	1	...	2	...	12	...	4	
February	15								
Ten months, including Winter }	142	8	5	59	3	86	30	25	3

The frosts are, with very few exceptions, *night frosts* only.

Thunder or lightning was only observed on two occasions.

The indigenous Vegetable Productions do not differ from those of the districts bordering on Cook's Strait, already described.

Wild hogs are said to abound in all parts of the district: *Quails* are in abundance all over the grassy plains; and *Wild fowl* in the rivers and lagoons. The *Weka*, or *Wood-hen*, (see page 163,) is also common in most parts of this country.

In the MINERAL kingdom, the existence of *Coal* in great profusion is most remarkable. Its appearance on the coast, at Coal Point, about ten miles North of the mouth of the Clutha, is thus described:—

“ The tide having ebbed, we descended to the base of the cliffs, and walked along a natural pavement formed by the horizontal strata. We were not long in perceiving indications of coal in black streaks in the sandstone, and thin beds of richly bituminous shale; and we picked up several rounded pieces of pure coal cast up by the waves. But, on turning a projecting point, we found ourselves in

face of a black wall or cliff, which, upon examination, turned out to be pure coal. In thickness, what we saw of it could not be less than eighteen feet, while, as the pavement on which we stood was coal as well, extending out to meet the waves, it was impossible to say how much deeper it went. Mr. Tuckett was of opinion that in quality it was very superior to the ordinary New Zealand coal; but in this opinion I could not agree with him, as it appeared to me to have the same conchoidal fracture and resinous lustre as the Mas-sacre Bay coal, as well as that which I have seen from other districts in this country. What was rather remarkable, was its nearness to the surface. Above it lay a bed of about twenty feet of a conglomerate of small quartz pebbles, on the top of which the soil commenced. We were not able to estimate the horizontal extent of the bed. What we saw ranged only for a few hundred yards, disappearing in some small gulleys, which at that point intersect the cliffs."—*Monro*, p. 119.

"As we proceeded about the time of low water along shore, I was gratified to observe very abundant large pieces of drift coal of good quality, still no bed was visible in the face of the cliff. Farther on, the beach became again rocky, and quantities of coal were lodged between the rocks, and soon appeared in view a *black cliff*. Approaching this cliff, I found it to be a mass of coal for about one hundred yards in length, in thickness from twelve to twenty feet, as seen in the face of the cliff above the sand, and to what depth it exists beneath the sand I could not ascertain.

"The beach is not accessible on account of the heavy swell and great surf. The coal must, therefore, be worked inland, and the bed will be, no doubt, discovered near the bank of the Clutha [or Matou] River, which, in a direct line inland, is probably not more than four or five miles distant."—*Tuckett*, pp. 41, 42.

Since this was written, another part of the same bed has been discovered, as predicted, four miles inland, nearly due West of Coal Point, and within a quarter of a mile from the left bank of the Clutha, eight miles above its mouth. Indications of coal, less decided than the above, have been remarked at various spots in the district; from which it may be inferred that a great portion of it is pervaded by a vast carboniferous formation.*

The natives procure from a lake, which they describe as lying inland from Otago, considerable quantities of a green jade, or serpentine, much prized by them for

* Specimens may be seen at New Zealand House, and at the Offices of the Association in Scotland. A sample has been submitted to a mining engineer, near Glasgow, who pronounces it to be splint coal, of first-rate quality.

the purpose of making war-clubs and ornaments for hanging in their ears and round their necks. These are valued as heir-looms, and have for many years formed an article of barter or warfare, as the case might be, between the tribes residing in this part of the Islands and those of the North. It is called by them "Ponamu," whence the name once assigned to the Middle Island—" *Te Wahi Ponamu*," or, "The Place of Green Stone." The natives say that they obtain it in a soft state from under the water, and that it hardens by exposure to the air. It is said that small quantities of this article have been taken by traders to China, and disposed of there to great advantage.

The proposed Colony is now in the course of foundation, under the auspices and with the co-operation of the New Zealand Company, by an "Association of Lay Members of the Free Church of Scotland for Promoting the Settlement of Otago." They are as follow:—

The Rt. Hon. Fox Maule, M.P.
 Sir J. Forrest, Bart., of Comiston.
 Sir William C. Seton, Bart., of
 Pitmedden.
 Sir J. C. Fairlie, Bart., of Fairlie.
 A. E. Monteith, Esq., Sheriff of
 Fife.
 J. M. Hogg, Esq., of Newliston.
 J. Hamilton, Esq., of Ninewar.
 G. M'Micken Torrance, Esq., of
 Threave.
 Pat. B. Mure Macredie, Esq., of
 Perceton.
 Adam Rolland, Esq., of Gask.
 W. H. Craufurd, Esq., of Crau-
 furdland.
 G. Smyttan, Esq., M.D., Edin-
 burgh.
 A. Ross, Esq., Edinburgh.
 J. B. M'Combie, Esq., of Gilly-
 brands.
 James Wyld, Esq., of Gilston.
 J. M. Nairne, Esq., of Dunsin-
 nane.

H. Dunlop, Esq., of Craigton
 (Chairman of Glasgow Com-
 mittee.)
 J. Bain, Esq., of Morriston.
 William Campbell, Esq., of Tille-
 chewan.
 William Brown, Esq., Merchant,
 Glasgow.
 William Whitehead, Esq., South
 Bridge, Edinburgh.
 William Johnston, St. Andrew
 Square, Edinburgh.
 J. Blackie, Sen., Esq., Glasgow.
 W. Buchanan, Esq., Glasgow.
 J. Blackie, Jun., Esq., Glasgow.
 Allan Buchanan, Esq., Glasgow.
 Alex. Rankin, Esq., Glasgow.
 George Taylor, Esq., Ayr.
 D. Campbell, Esq., Mounthamil-
 ton, Ayrshire.
 J. M'Iraith, Esq., of Auchen-
 flower.
 William Brown, Esq., Banker,
 Maybole.

A. Burns, Esq., Banker, Perth.
 D. Craigie, Esq., Banker, Perth.
 Thos. Anderson, Esq., Banker,
 Hamilton.
 Robt. Peter, Esq., Banker, Aber-
 feldy.
 W. Macfie, Esq., of Langhouse.
 Chas. Scott, Esq., of Hawkhill.
 R. Roxburgh, Esq. Greenock.
 John Ker, Esq., Greenock.
 A. Munro, Esq., Greenock.

George Blair, Esq., Greenock.
 Neil Jamieson, Esq., Provost of
 Rothsay.
 A. M'Indoe, Esq., Rothsay.
 Charles M'Inlay, Esq., Rothsay.
 Dugald Munn, Esq., Rothsay.
 Robert Cargill, Esq., W.S.
 Edward M'Glashin, Esq., South
 Bridge, Edinburgh.
 Robert Blair, Esq., South Bridge,
 Edinburgh.

Offices of the Association.—In Edinburgh—27, South Hanover-
 street, J. M'Glashin, Secretary. In Glasgow—3, West Nile-street,
 Dr. Aldcorn, Secretary.

The Association and the Company have agreed upon
 the following

TERMS OF PURCHASE OF LAND IN THE SETTLEMENT OF OTAGO.

1. Certain Modifications having been introduced into the Original Terms of Purchase, at the instance of the Otago Association, and in virtue of the power to that effect reserved in the Third Original Clause,—and Ballots having been held, Colonists having sailed in accordance therewith, and the Site of the Settlement having been fixed, as undermentioned,—the following Regulations to be substituted for those dated respectively the 14th of May, and the 24th of November, 1847.

2. The Association of Lay Members of the Free Church of Scotland, as reported by the General Assembly of May, 1845, with the addition of such other Members as have been, or hereafter may be, from time to time appointed by the Association, to be recognised as the party to promote the Settlement now in progress.

3. The Lands to be sold under the following arrangements to persons brought forward or approved by the Association; and the Association (including those persons) to carry out the enterprise on their own principles, and, so far as possible, in their own name, looking only to the Company for such assistance and acts of trusteeship in the matter of Surveys, Emigration, and general process of founding and maintaining the Settlement, as may be requisite.

Amendments which experience may from time to time show to be desirable, to be made by the Company and the Association, concurrently, in those parts of the following arrangements in which they are not already provided for.

4. The Site of the Settlement to be at OTAGO IN THE MIDDLE ISLAND OF NEW ZEALAND, on the land granted to the Company by a Deed under the seal of the Territory, bearing date the 13th day of April, 1846, and already decided on, surveyed, and laid out.

5. The Settlement to comprise one hundred and forty-four thousand six hundred acres of land, divided into two thousand four hundred Properties; and each Property to consist of sixty acres and a quarter, divided into three Allotments; namely, a Town Allotment of a quarter of an acre, a Suburban Allotment of ten acres, and a Rural Allotment of fifty acres, be the measurements more or less.

6. The 2,400 Properties, or 144,600 acres, to be appropriated as follows, namely:—

2,000 Properties, or 120,500 acres, for Sale to private individuals.

100 Properties, or 6,025 acres, for the Estate to be purchased by the Local Municipal Government;

100 Properties, or 6,025 acres, for the Estate to be purchased by the Trustees for Religious and Educational Uses: and

200 Properties, or 12,050 acres, for the Estate to be purchased by the New Zealand Company.

7. The Price of the land to be fixed in the first instance at forty shillings an acre, or 120*l.* 10*s.* a Property; to be charged on the Estates of the Municipal Government, of the Trustees for Religious and Educational Uses, and of the New Zealand Company, in the same manner as on the 2,000 Properties intended for sale to private individuals; and the purchase money, 289,200*l.*, to be appropriated as follows, namely:—

Emigration and Supply of Labour (<i>three-eighths.</i>)	£108,450
Civil Uses, to be administered by the Company, viz.:	
—Surveys, and other expenses of founding the Settlement, Roads, Bridges, and other improvements, including Steam, if hereafter deemed expedient, and if the requisite funds be found available (<i>two-eighths</i>)	72,300
Religious and Educational Uses, to be administered by Trustees (<i>one-eighth</i>)	36,150
The New Zealand Company, on account of its capital and risk (<i>two-eighths</i>)	72,300

It is to be observed that from the sum of 36,150*l.* to be assigned to the Trustees for Religious and Educational Uses, will be defrayed 12,050*l.*, the price of the 6,025 acres to be purchased as the Estate of that Trust.

In like manner, out of the sum of 72,300*l.* to be assigned to the New Zealand Company, will be defrayed 24,100*l.*, the price of the 12,050 acres to be purchased by the Company as its Estate.

But the 6,025 acres, constituting the Estate to be purchased by the Local Municipal Government, must be separately paid for by that Government; and until payment therefore of the price, 12,050*l.*,

together with Colonial interest thereon, the land will be held by the Administrators of the Fund for Civil Uses, with power to dispose of the same, if such payment be not made within one year after the completion of the sales of the remainder of the two thousand four hundred Properties.

8. The Company to reserve to itself the power of increasing the price above mentioned, from time to time, as may be arranged after consultation with the Association.

9. In consideration of the consent given by the Directors to contribute to the Emigration and other Special Funds, in the same proportions as private purchasers, on account of the two hundred Properties to be selected as the Company's Estate, in lieu of those Properties being free of charge or deduction, as was originally intended; and in consideration of the expenses to which the Company is subjected in its general superintendence of the interests of the several Settlements, and which ought to be borne in due proportions by the several Settlements respectively; the Company to be entitled to charge Commission, at the rate of five per cent., on the gross amount of the Funds appropriated to Emigration and to Civil Uses; and such charge to be debited to those Funds respectively.

10. The purchase of the surface, under the present arrangements, to include in every case Coal and all other Minerals whatever, granted to the Company by the Crown, and lying underneath the Allotment purchased; but the Company to have power to exclude lands containing, in considerable quantities, Coal or other Minerals, from the Allotments intended for sale or appropriation, and to reserve them for the purpose of being disposed of in the manner undermentioned.

Lands so reserved and containing *Coal*, to be disposed of, by Lease or otherwise, in such way as may from time to time be agreed on between the Company and the Association, with a view to prevent the Coal-field from falling into the hands of private individuals, so as to form a monopoly injurious to the public interests, and to ensure to the Community a due supply of Fuel at the cheapest possible rate.

Lands reserved as above, and containing *other Minerals*, to be disposed of in such way as the Company, after consultation with the Association, may from time to time consider most expedient.

11. Reservations to be made, so far as may be practicable, of the Sites of Villages and Towns, with Suburban Allotments adjacent, in the several Parishes and Hundreds, which are to be laid out in accordance with the Government Regulations on this head.

12. In laying out the Chief Town of the Settlement,—to be named “DUNEDIN,”—due provision to be made for public Purposes, as Fortifications, Public Buildings, Sites for places of Public Worship and Instruction, Baths, Wharfs, Quays, Cemeteries, Squares, a

Park and other places for health and recreation ; for all which, instructions have already been given to the Company's Principal Agent.

13. Successive Parties of Colonists to be despatched from time to time, as the Directors and Association may deem expedient, whatever the number of Properties sold ; due regard being had always to the wishes and convenience of Purchasers, and to the Proportion between Capital and Labour.

14. Five years from the 23rd of November, 1847, the date of the embarkation of the First Party, to be allowed to the Association for effecting the sale of the 2,000 Properties ; but on their failing to complete such sale within the time stated, the Company to have the option of disposing of the whole of the remaining lands to other parties.

In the event, however, of the whole 2,000 Properties being sold to private individuals within the said period, the Association to have further the refusal, on such terms as shall then be agreed upon, of the entire remainder of the Block of 400,000 acres, or such portion of the same as the Company shall not have returned to the Crown under the terms of Mr. Hope's letter of 7th August, 1845.

15. A deposit of 12*l.* 10*s.* on each Property (accompanied by an authority from the Association for receiving such Deposit) to be paid to the Commercial Bank of Scotland, in Scotland, or to Messrs. Smith, Payne, and Smiths, Bankers, in London, on the New Zealand Company's Account ; and the Bankers' Receipt to be produced and filed, previous to any application being registered at the Company's House. Public notice to be given from time to time, of the day on which the residue of the purchase-money is required. In case of default in payment of such residue by the day appointed, the deposit to become thereupon forfeited to the Company, together with all claim of the applicant to the land applied for.

16. In exchange for each sum of 120*l.* 10*s.* paid as directed, each Purchaser to receive (after the Ballot hereinafter mentioned,) three separate Land-Orders, namely, for the Town quarter-acre, the ten acres of Suburban Land, and the fifty acres of Rural Land, respectively. These lands to be severally selected according to priority of choice, to be determined by Ballot.

17. Three several Ballots for priority of choice of the Town Allotments, the Suburban Allotments, and the Rural Allotments, in manner to be arranged by the Court of Directors, to take place at the Company's House in London, in the presence of the Directors, and of such Purchasers, or their Agents, as may attend, after public notice given.

The priority of choice, with regard to the Estates of the Local Municipal Government, the Trustees for Religious and Educational Uses, and the New Zealand Company, to be determined by Ballot in the same manner and at the same time, as for the Properties sold to private individuals.

18. Every practicable facility to be given in each Ballot, so that any party purchasing two or more properties may, with respect to Rural Allotments only, select them in contiguity; provided that notice in writing of his wish to that effect be given to the Company three clear days previous to the drawing; and that such right of selection shall not extend to land on both sides of any river or main road.

19. The choice of Allotments, according to the right of priority determined as above mentioned, to take place in the Settlement as soon after the arrival of each successive body of Colonists as shall be appointed, and under such regulations as shall be prescribed by the Company's Agent, or other Officer duly authorised in that behalf. Neglect or refusal to comply with such regulations in regard to any Allotment, to occasion a forfeiture of the purchaser's right of choice, and to vest it in the Company's Officer on behalf of such purchaser.

20. Purchasers to be allowed to select out of the whole of the Town and Suburban Allotments, but out of only half the intended number of Rural Allotments, till further Notice.

The Municipality and the Trustees for Religious and Educational Uses to be entitled to *select* their respective Estates in the proportion of One Property for every *Eight* sold to Private Individuals; but to be required to *pay* for them in the proportion only of One Property for every *Twenty* so sold.

The New Zealand Company to be entitled to select in the proportion of One Property for every *Four*, but to be required to pay in the proportion of One Property for every *Ten* sold to Private Individuals.

21. The first Ballot having been held, fifty Properties to be placed at the disposal of the Company's Agent, for sale in the Colony, at the following increased prices, each kind of Allotment being sold separately, if so desired by the purchaser; namely, Town Land, 40*l.* per Allotment of a Quarter-Acre; Suburban Land, 40*l.* per Allotment of ten Acres; and Rural Land, 100*l.* per Allotment of fifty acres.

22. Individuals desirous of proceeding to the Colony, in the intervals between the first and second Ballots, and approved by the Association, to be allowed to become purchasers out of the Fifty Properties mentioned in the preceding Paragraph, and at the prices therein specified.

23. The whole Proceeds of the increased prices mentioned above, and also of Coals and other Minerals disposed of specially under the Provisions of Paragraph 10, and of the Sites of Villages and Towns with Suburban Allotments adjacent as provided for in Paragraph 11, to be in all cases appropriated (*by eighths*) in the same proportions and manner as the Proceeds of the first Ballot.

24. The Association (including the Purchasers and Colonists

whom they have brought forward) having prepared a Deed of Trust and relative Institutes, dated 6th November, 1847, as a Constitution for Church and Schools, the same to be held as part of the Terms of Purchase; to the Trustees appointed thereunder, the Funds for Religious and Educational Uses to be handed over, as collected, on the completion of each party; the provisions of such Deed of Trust and relative Institutes to be duly observed in all respects; and in this and all other matters, the Association to have respect to the full exoneration of the Company from responsibility, at the earliest possible period.

25. The Emigration Fund to be applied as may be decided on from time to time, after consultation with the Association, and the selection of free passengers to be entirely confided to them.

Two-thirds of the amount to be applied in accordance with the Government Regulations; and the remainder, subject to the concurrence of the Company, to the passages of persons who, under those Regulations, are not strictly eligible; such as—the Parents of grown-up Children; Children under seven years of age, in excess of the authorized number;—and, to a limited extent, such Cabin Passengers, and others, as may sail for the Settlement within Twelve Months from the date of the Ballots in which they respectively take part.

26. The expenditure of the Association to be met in the first instance by the Company, to such moderate extent as may be necessary; it being understood that, with the exception of a paid Secretary and Travelling Expenses, together with a small sum for the Expenses of the Committee in London, the Members of the Association are to act gratuitously. The whole of such expenditure, together with that already incurred under the former arrangements, to be charged to the Fund for founding and maintaining the Settlement.

27. Subject to the modifications mentioned in the foregoing Paragraphs, and to the exception of Officers and Funds relating to Religious and Educational Uses,—the appointment of Officers, and the management and expenditure of the several Funds, to be vested altogether in the Company; but all reasonable attention to be paid by the Court of Directors to the recommendations of the Association.

28. In case of any difference arising between the Company and any purchaser, with respect to the construction of these presents, or the execution of any contract founded thereon, such difference to be decided by two Arbitrators, one to be named by each party, or by an Umpire to be named by the Arbitrators.

In the event, also, of any difference or question arising, either between private parties, or between such parties and the Company or other Public Body, or between such Public Bodies only, and relating to Water connected with any Land referred to in these

presents, or to the possession or use of such Water, or to the Erection of Mills or Machinery to be moved thereby, or to any other right or privilege connected therewith, such difference or question to be decided in like manner, either by Arbitrators, or by an Umpire, the whole to be named respectively as above mentioned.

29. The Register of Applications to be now declared open.

30. The Head Office of the Otago Association to be in Edinburgh, with other offices in Glasgow and London, if considered necessary.

By Order of the Court of Directors,

THOMAS CUDBERT HARRINGTON, *Secretary*.

New Zealand House, 9, Broad Street Buildings,
London, 15th April, 1848.

The necessary surveys were completed by the New Zealand Company's officers, in April, 1847: and on the Maps of the towns of Dunedin and Port Chalmers, as well as of the Suburban Districts in the immediate neighbourhood, and of the Rural Districts extending to the mouth of the Clutha, the whole number of sections required by the above Regulations is laid down, as actually marked by stakes on the ground. These Maps may be inspected at the New Zealand House in London, and at the Offices of the Association in Edinburgh and Glasgow. A lithographed map of the whole Otago district, with the sections marked on it, is published by Smith and Elder (Cornhill) for the New Zealand Company.

The First Ballot, mentioned in Article 1, took place at the New Zealand House on the 10th of November, 1847: when, including the properties purchased by the Company, and those for the future Municipality, as required by Article 20, 104 properties were purchased and ballotted for.

The First Party of Colonists consisted of the Passengers in two Ships which sailed for Otago in December, 1847. The John Wickliffe, 662 tons, sailed from Portsmouth on the 14th of December, with 97 passengers, of whom about 10 were bound for Wellington or other Settlements. In this ship went Captain William Cargill, the leader of the colony, with his family. He is a descendant of Donald Cargill, well known to the readers of the "Scottish

Worthies." He has been appointed the New Zealand Company's Agent for Otago, and a Magistrate of the Territory of New Zealand. Among the passengers was also the Reverend John Nicholson, a Minister of the Free Church of Scotland, with his family, whose ultimate destination is Nelson. He intends, however, to sojourn for a short time with the infant settlement. This vessel arrived at Otago, all well, in March 1848, after a fast passage of 93 days.

The *Philip Laing*, of 547 tons, also sailed for Otago, from Greenock, in the end of November, and from Milford Haven early in December, 1847. She carried 246 passengers, all for Otago.

In the *Greenock Advertiser*, of 23rd November, 1847, a detailed description was given of their departure. The following extract is interesting. After describing the excellent arrangements made for the physical comforts, the writer says, that—

"Care has also been taken of the moral and religious interests of the emigrants. The very valuable services of the Rev. Thomas Burns, formerly of Monkton, late of Portobello, have been secured, and we have no doubt he will be found not only an able and wise instructor, but a judicious adviser, and a friend, the energy of whose character and example will render his counsels doubly valuable. The reverend gentleman is a nephew of our national Bard, and son of Gilbert Burns. The fact of the relationship can scarce fail to form a constant and pleasing tie between the new settlement and the land to which one section of its population cannot fail to look back with feelings of affectionate interest. The only other official to whom we may allude is the schoolmaster, and we were glad to hear that the emigrants are to have the useful and important assistance in the work of training the young, and instructing the less informed, of a gentleman in every way qualified for his work. Mr. Blackie takes with him high certificates of his ability and success.

"With all these inducements, provisions, and care, it could scarce be doubted that the passengers themselves would be people of a class very superior to what are generally found in emigrant vessels. And this is the case. About two hundred and fifty proceed in the *Philip Laing*, and they generally, we may say entirely, present a cleanly, comfortable, and well-provided appearance—so much so, indeed, as almost to make one regret that our own country should lose the benefits of the industry and energies of so many of her children ;

but we must console ourselves with the hope, that they are about to lay the foundation on the other side of the globe of a great empire, destined, in the hands of Providence, to assist the mother-country and her other off-shoots in spreading over the whole world the blessings of civilization and Christianity.

"The ship being now nearly ready for sea, a large party assembled on board on Saturday at mid-day, for the purpose of offering up prayers to God for the success of the voyage, their safe arrival at their destination, and for their comfort, prosperity, and happiness, in the land of their adoption, as well as to give them a few advices for their guidance on the voyage and in the settlement. The services were begun by the Rev. Mr. Smith, who read a portion of the 72nd Psalm, verses 8, 9, 16, 17—a passage very appropriate in the circumstances—which being sung, he offered up a touching and impressive prayer. The Rev. Dr. McFarlan addressed the passengers at some length on the duties that would devolve on them, careful attention to which would promote their own happiness as well as that of those around them, and would secure, so far as human means could, the success of the colony. Mr. McGlashan, the Secretary in Edinburgh of the Lay Association of the Free Church of Scotland for Promoting the Otago Settlement, then narrated at considerable length the various arrangements that had been made to secure the comfort and success of the Colonists, and these seem to have been made with considerate and intelligent forethought and liberality. He alluded especially to the care that had been exercised in the appointment of the various officers connected with the undertaking, and to the liberal spirit which had been displayed by many who wished well to the Colony. He mentioned particularly the handsome present to the library of the settlement of a copy of the *Encyclopædia Britannica* by Lord Provost Black of Edinburgh.

"We most cordially join in the wishes expressed for the welfare of the settlers, and for the success of the novel and interesting experiment now being made. If we may judge by the appearance of the emigrants, we should say that it cannot fail from want of energy on the part of those who are the pioneers of the great work, as a more hopeful body of passengers we have never seen on board any vessel. They go out also well provided with the most perfect implements which this country affords for carrying on agricultural and handicraft operations, and altogether ready and prepared to do their part in the arduous work they have undertaken."

The "First Church Congregational Library" taken out by this expedition consists of upwards of 500 volumes, on religious and miscellaneous subjects. A Catalogue of it has been printed at Greenock, by Joseph Blair, of Broad-close.

The *Otago Journal* contains the following account of the intentions of the Association with regard to—

“EDUCATION IN OTAGO.

“One of the most painful feelings that a respectable Emigrant endures, on leaving his native country, arises from the reflection that his children will be deprived of the means of a good education. It is certain that in all Colonies, planted in recent times, the population has, for many years, exhibited a continual retrogression in the path of civilization.”

“In the settlement of Otago vigorous measures have been taken to ensure the formation of a well-constituted, religious, and enlightened community. A Minister and Schoolmaster have been already appointed; and, in order the more effectually to carry out the great principles upon which the Colony is being established, and to afford a complete course of instruction to the children of the higher class of Emigrants, it is proposed, in addition, to institute a Seminary for Boarders and Day Pupils, in which ample provision will be made for teaching every branch of a liberal education. The institution will be under the auspices of the municipal and ecclesiastical authorities of Otago, and will be conducted by a head master of high attainments and respectability. The course of instruction will not only comprehend all that is given in the best institutions of the kind in this country, but will embrace many of the higher branches of Literature and Philosophy which are usually taught at the Universities. A thorough English Education will be made the basis of a sound knowledge of the Classics, Mathematics, and Mental and Physical Science; while the Modern Languages, Drawing, and other accomplishments, will not be neglected.”

“Great efforts will be made to render the instruction solid and substantial, such as befits a Colony which aspires to become the centre of civilization in the Southern Hemisphere.”

The whole Institution will be conducted on Christian principles, and the doctrines and duties of religion will be carefully inculcated.”

“In the house every care will be taken to provide for the health and comfort of the pupils, who will be taught to regard themselves as members of a well-regulated Christian family. The domestic arrangements will be managed by a lady of respectability and piety. Out of doors the pupils will be continually under the superintendence of a master. In pursuance of this scheme, it is proposed that the Head-Master, with two Assistants, should embark for Otago at an early date, and that more Assistants should follow as the pupils increase in number.”

“It is believed that the establishment of the projected Academy will afford the greatest satisfaction to the settlers in Otago, and also to many of high respectability in India, Australia, and Van Diemen's Land; since it will assure them that, though far from their native

land, they can still obtain for their children the blessing of a sound and liberal education."

"A detailed prospectus will shortly be issued."

"(Signed) AND. ALDCORN,
J. M'GLASHAN,

"Secretaries of the Lay Association
for promoting the Settlement."

"Edinburgh, December, 1847."

The following is an account of the land at Otago sold up to the end of July, 1848:—

No. of Properties.	Sold to private individuals.	Church Trust.	Local Municipality.	N. Z. Compy.	Total.
At first Ballot, 10th November, 1847.....	69	9	11	17	104
At subsequent Ballots, up to 22d June, 1848	49	5	5	11	70
Total	118	14	14	28	174

Since the departure of the John Wickliffe and Philip Laing, several more ships have sailed, containing Colonists for Otago. Some few, too, had gone thither by Sydney, or from the other settlements, previous to the sailing of those ships, or have done so since. The following may be taken as a fair account of the population now at Otago, or on its way thither:—

		Souls.
Already in the settlement previously to No-	vember, 1847	140
In <i>John Wickliffe</i> , from London (Dec. 1847)	97, of whom 10 for other settlements.	
„ <i>Philip Laing</i>	„ Greenock (do.)	216
„ <i>Victory</i>	„ London (Mar. 1848)	32
„ <i>Blundell</i>	„ Do. (May, do.)	150
„ <i>Bernicia</i>	„ Do. (July, do.)	158

Total, up to end of July, 1848 823, of whom 112 for other settlements, leaving 711 at or for Otago.

Another large ship, the *Ajax*, 767 tons, sailed for Otago in September, and carried a considerable number of passengers to that settlement.—(See Appendix C.)

CHAPTER X.

Country between Cape Campbell and Otago.—Grassy Plains.—Kaikora.—Banks's Peninsula.—Isthmus, and Plains adjoining.—Ports Cooper and Ashley.—Communication with Plains.—Rivers flowing into Pegasus Bay.—Pigeon Bay.—Akaroa Harbour.—Settlement of Nanto-Bordelaise Company.—Claims to Land.—The Bishop of New Zealand's remarks on these harbours.—Coast and Rivers between Akaroa and Otago.—Sites for Settlements compared.

THERE still remains undescribed a considerable tract of country, between Cape Campbell and the neighbourhood of Otago, on the east coast of the Middle Island, of which comparatively little is yet known. It seems, however, to consist in general of grassy plains, lying between the sea-coast and the foot of the snowy mountains, which lie about ten or twelve miles inland, from Kaikora as far south as the latitude of Banks's Peninsula. These plains are described by persons who have visited them in a few spots, without penetrating far into the interior, as clothed with abundance of good pasture, and well watered with numerous small rivers, but as singularly deficient in timber.

At the Lookers-on, or Kaikora, in about latitude 42° 30' S., there is a point of low land which affords shelter on either side of it to small vessels during certain states of the weather; and here one of the whale-fisheries, already described as dependent on Wellington, has been established, (see page 193.) But there is no harbour, or river known to be capable of admitting large shipping, between Port Underwood, in Cloudy Bay, and Port Cooper, on the north coast of Banks's Peninsula.

This peninsula is about 10 miles long, from N.W. to S.E., and averages 5 in breadth, from N.E. to S.W. It has been estimated to contain about 30,000 acres of land; but it consists almost entirely of steep, rugged hills, forming a bluff, rocky coast, all round the peninsula. They are chiefly clothed with wood, and composed of a clayey rock, the surface of which forms, by decomposition, a poor barren soil. In the circumscribed spaces of level land, formed by streams near their mouths, close to the sea-coast, a little rich alluvial land may be found; but in the whole peninsula there is no great extent of such land. There is also a little fern-covered land and grassy downs, especially at the N.W. extremity of the peninsula, which connects Banks's Peninsula with the main. Here two of the small rivers above mentioned, the Waimakariri and the Putarekamutu, fall into the bight, which is called Pegasus Bay. Little is known as to the capabilities of their entrances for admitting vessels. Inland, they are said to be navigable for boats nearly to the base of the mountains. In the country through which they meander, two brothers, named Deans, have established a cattle-station. They have squatted here since 1841, when they removed from the neighbourhood of Wellington, to which place they had originally emigrated from Ayrshire in one of the Company's ships, which left Scotland in 1839. They now possess a large stock of cattle, horses, and sheep. The land hereabouts affords great facilities for pasturage, if distributed in extensive portions. But it does not appear adapted for tillage in small lots, the wooded portions being few and far between, and the soil of large tracts apparently of but moderate quality.

The main land continues level at the back of the peninsula, which is, indeed, an isolated mass of hills, and has probably been actually an island at no very distant geological period. Captain Cook, who did not

approach near enough to the land to see the isthmus, called the peninsula *Banks's Island* on his charts.

Port Cooper and Port Ashley* are two bays, with a common entrance, two miles in width, which is about six miles east from the mouth of the Putarekamutu, and but a little way east of the spot where the hills of the peninsula join the level land of the isthmus. These harbours have never been accurately surveyed; but they have depth of water and good anchorage for vessels of moderate size. They are not, however, thoroughly sheltered from all weathers, Port Cooper being open to the N.E., and Port Ashley to the N. The following is the account of these harbours given by Captain Smith, in his Report, dated November, 1842, before alluded to (page 292):—

“The easternmost head of Port Ashley is rocky, though not high; the westernmost, which also forms one of the heads of Port Cooper, is high and perpendicular, receding a little from the general line of coast: the entrance to these two harbours cannot easily be mistaken; from this point the high lands of the peninsula begin to fall off towards the great plain. Port Ashley is about a mile wide, and about six miles long; it is straight, its direction slightly inclining to the east of north.

“The harbour of Port Ashley is easy of access with almost all winds; there is no bar; the depth of water at the entrance is nine fathoms, shoaling gradually to three opposite the native settlement, and there is no necessity for vessels to go higher for either wood or water, or for any other purpose. The usual anchorage is off the Bluff, which in shape much resembles a sperm whale's head; the ordinary tides rise about six feet, the springs seven feet. It is high water at the full and change of the moon, about half-past five o'clock. The holding ground is a blue clay, and very firm. It is considered an excellent harbour, and well sheltered from all the prevailing winds. The N. and N.E. winds, which draw up the harbour, are seldom either violent or enduring; from the appearance of the hills, I supposed it subject to flurries in N.W. and S.W. gales; but I am told this is not the case, except in a trifling degree, as the former wind draws up Port Cooper, which is close by, and the latter draws down, thus relieving Port Ashley from their ill effects.

“Port Ashley, though an excellent harbour, is quite unfit for a settlement, and especially for a settlement on a large scale, as there

* Formerly called Port Levy.

is no place fit for a Township. There are five valleys, containing altogether about 400 acres of tolerably level land, and four are well timbered, but there are only two of these which could be connected, and neither these nor any of the others could be made to communicate with country land, without very great difficulty and expense. The native population here amounts to about 150 persons, the white population varies from 20 to 30."

" I proceeded to visit Port Cooper, which is just round the high Bluff, as I have stated before. This harbour is considerably larger than Port Ashley, is equally accessible, except in strong S.W. winds; it has about the same depth of water, and the holding ground is equally good; but on the whole, it is not considered so good a harbour as Port Ashley, because the most prevailing and violent winds draw through it, producing a considerable swell. There is, however, near the entrance on the east side, a small bay in which four or five vessels may ride nearly land-locked, and sheltered from all winds; on the same side there are several small bays, which are excellent harbours for boats and small craft. The shores of Port Cooper, like those of Port Ashley, are bold and rocky, the hills above them are nearly of the same character, but more rugged, especially on the west side. There is only one valley in this harbour in which there is any wood near the shore, that is the valley in which the natives, about thirty in number, are settled, on the west side, about a mile above the reefs. There are some patches of wood on the hills, but they are difficult to approach. Having reached the island, which rises to about 250 feet above the level of the harbour, I landed on the shelly beach, and ascended the hill, in order to correct and complete my sketch. During my walk there, I flushed several quail, and from that circumstance I gave it the name of Quail Island. I now crossed again to the east side, and from thence to the native settlement, sounding as I went: at this part of the harbour the greatest depth I found was $3\frac{1}{2}$ fathoms."

As to the communication between Port Cooper and the level plains on the isthmus and mainland, and the character of those plains where they adjoin closely the Peninsula, we may refer to the following extracts from a report made by Captain Daniell and Mr. George Duppa, two Wellington Colonists, in August, 1841, to Colonel Wakefield, of an Exploring Expedition undertaken by them to Kaikora and Banks's Peninsula.*

* Printed in *New Zealand Journal*, vol. iv., August 19, 1843, No. 95, p. 211.

" The hills on the eastern entrance of the harbour (Port Cooper) present a rounded and down-like appearance, with strata of rock of a highly volcanic nature, showing themselves in parallel horizontal lines through the rich mould, and dense herbaceous vegetation which covers their sides and tops: all the hills on this side of the harbour present this appearance, forming three or four bays, more or less deep, affording shelter for vessels, and each containing several acres of flat land at its head, available for building purposes, and for repairing vessels of easy draught of water.

" At low-water, the head of the harbour presents a large mud-flat of blue clay from five to six hundred acres in extent, with a small stream of fresh-water running through it, the drainage of the several valleys situated at the foot of the hills enclosing the head of the harbour, and containing in all about 800 acres of positively flat land.

" The sides of the hills on the western entrance are precipitous and abrupt for about a mile and a half up the harbour, where there is a break in them: they slope more towards the water's edge, affording not only considerable space for buildings, but likewise rendering it no difficult matter to carry a road over them into a bay containing from 150 to 200 acres of perfectly flat land facing to the N.E. From the N.W. extremity of this bay, the road can be continued over some rocks about a quarter of a mile in extent, to the south banks of a river* which affords a good water-carriage of from fifteen to twenty miles in extent, but which from the circumstance of the river's winding round the foot of the several hills of the peninsula, as they abut upon the isthmus, does not extend, in a direct line, further inland than from eight to ten miles: this river at its mouth, at high-water, covers a space of about 600 or 700 acres; a little distance up, however, its channel is narrowed to about eighty yards, gradually decreasing until at last it becomes a mere stream, too narrow and too shallow for boating; the depth of water in the river at low tide averaged from four to six feet, only one shallow, for about three or four hundred yards, presenting itself in the whole of its course until it becomes of no service whatever as a water-carriage.

" We did not get bottom on the bar at low-water with a twelve-foot oar; and as the tide rises from six to eight feet, large barges could easily be introduced into the river for the purpose of removing the produce of the harbour for shipment, were it necessary. The channel over the bar lies in the direction of N. by E. and S. by W., alongside and to the westward of some rocks which cannot be mistaken, over which a surf is constantly breaking inside the bar; a very curious angular-shaped rock, about thirty yards in height, projects into the stream, around which the channel winds, and then suddenly turns to the south bank of the river, and is then easily traced by the depth or shallowness of the water.

" The isthmus connecting the peninsula with the main land is

* The Putarekamutu.

much more extensive than is represented on the earlier charts; and instead of being a low sandy neck, as is there stated, it consists of the richest soil, covered with vegetation of most luxuriant growth, and being from four to ten, and in many places twenty, feet above the level of the sea; and nowhere does it present the appearance of ever being flooded: and from my own observation as I walked over it as our boat was going up the river, I think I may safely say that there is but a very small portion of land in comparison with the whole district, which the plough would not completely drain, and that, in most instances, even that portion could be laid dry at a very trifling expense; for the few swamps that do exist have, for the most part, an outlet into the river or elsewhere, which prevents their forming lagoons in the wet season of the year, but which during the summer become so choked up with vegetation as to prevent the swamps from completely draining themselves; but under any circumstances, they form so insignificant a portion of this immense district, that they are hardly worth mentioning.

"The soil appears to be of a very recent formation, consisting chiefly of a rich, dark, vegetable mould, with a sufficient admixture of clay to form a good wheat soil; and for barley, oats, potatoes, and, in fact, for all succulent roots, I may safely venture to say that a better description of soil could not be conceived. The substratum, which commences about a spit and a half under the surface, being of a sandy nature, renders the district sufficiently dry, as a sheep pasture, to secure one against foot-rot. This circumstance, too, would lead one to think that Banks's Peninsula was, at no very great distance of time, an island, and that the isthmus has been formed by the surf on either side meeting and depositing a sand bank, in the same manner that the tide meeting the stream of a river forms a bar across its mouth; and that in the course of time, vegetation of an inferior order has commenced upon it, and in its season died down, and thus gradually formed a soil for a superior kind of vegetation, and that in this instance it has been greatly assisted by the alluvial deposit from the hills of the peninsula; in fact, this very process appears to be going on at the present moment, for, as you recede from the sea side, so the vegetation improves, and the barren sand which is washed up by the sea, passes gradually into a rich vegetable mould.

"As I have already stated, the isthmus is not so narrow as represented on the charts, but is certainly quite as broad as the peninsula itself, and it appears to be a part and parcel of the mainland, which forms an extensive plain, extending as far as the eye can reach inland, and as far North as the Lookers-on; being the termination, or rather commencement of a chain of lofty mountains covered with snow, which, abutting on the sea-shore at Kai Kora, recede from the coast as they stretch away at the S.W. until they disappear below the horizon, forming the Western boundary of an immense plain, containing millions of acres of the richest soil, covered with grasses

of most luxuriant growth, and dotted with groves of pine-trees, which become more numerous as you approach the mountains, with here and there a small lake or the bend of a river, presenting on the whole a most inviting and magnificent appearance. From the hills on Banks's Peninsula, water of considerable extent shows itself some distance inland: whether this is a lake or the branch of a river, remains still to be proved; it was with the intention of ascertaining this that we started on an expedition up the river, imagining that as it wound its way through so plain a country, its size would not decrease so rapidly as it proved to do. Under any circumstances, however, the country must drain itself in some direction, and future settlement will discover in which, without stepping far out of the way."

These gentlemen also state that the portion of the Peninsula contiguous to Port Cooper consists of "gently undulating downs, covered with the richest grasses, and peopled with a fine species of quail."

Captain Smith also says:—

"Being anxious to see something of the great Plain to the westward, I ascended to the top of the hills at the back of the settlement (at Port Cooper); from thence I had a magnificent view of that part of the Plain, to the N.W. of the Peninsula; I was prevented from seeing that part which is to the S.W. by the intervention of some of the other hills. I could see the river Putarekamutu, which winds about through the plain; this river empties itself into the sea about six miles from the entrance of Port Cooper. I am told that though this river is narrow, there is water enough for boats to ascend 30 miles, and that the same point may be reached by land in a distance of less than 10. At 9 miles further, there is another river, called the Wai Makariri. This is considerably larger than the Putarekamutu. I am told, at its entrance it is about $\frac{1}{2}$ mile wide, and that it soon spreads into a broad basin. Vessels of 50 tons may go up five miles; the river then dividing into several branches. Beyond this, at the distance of about 13 miles, is another river called the Kai-a-poia; the weather was not clear enough for me to see it. * * * * "The harbour (Port Cooper) above the island divides itself into three bays. The water is shoal in all; the middle bay is for the most part dry at low water. At its head, the low land is swampy, and the hills at the back are low but rugged. A road might easily be cut through them to the great plain, near the banks of the Waiora Lake. I could see this part of the country, and the 90 Mile Beach in the distance, from the hills above the native settlement; and the only place near Port Cooper on which a town could be laid out, appeared to me to be beyond the low rugged range, at about three miles from the shallow part of the harbour."

Another harbour, called Pigeon Bay, also lies on the north side of the peninsula, open to the N., about three miles E. of Port Ashley. Captain Smith thus describes it:—

“Pigeon Bay is a deep inlet on the north side of Banks's Peninsula, about six miles long, nearly straight, and from a mile to a mile and a half wide. It is easily accessible, unless the wind is blowing strong from the S.W. It has no bar; the general depth of water varies from six to nine fathoms, increasing with tolerable regularity; the rise of tide is about six feet, except at the springs, when it rises seven feet. Pigeon Bay is generally considered a good and safe harbour. The prevailing winds, as in all other parts of the peninsula, are from the N.W. to S.W.; these are the most violent. Strong north-westerns seldom blow more than six or seven hours; but if it works round to the S.W., which it sometimes does, it generally lasts three days, seldom more. The holding ground is very good, and there are no dangerous rocks or shoals either inside or outside of the harbour. The country round Pigeon Bay is very hilly; that towards the entrance is well adapted to the depasturing of sheep and cattle; it is almost entirely covered with grass. Further up the harbour it becomes wooded; on the west side, at about three miles and a half from the entrance, there is a valley through which a fine little stream of water runs. This, I think, contains from 600 to 800 acres of good land, which is thickly covered with timber. At the mouth of this valley I found a very good house, which has been lately built by two young Englishmen, who live there and occupy themselves in sawing timber and cultivating the soil, which appears to be very rich. At the head of Pigeon Bay, there is, I think, about 3000 acres of flat land; through this a fine little stream flows; at high water, boats may go nearly half a mile up it, but they may land on the beach at all times of the tide, as the water is, close to the shore, deep.

“I have no doubt but that a road may be made from Akaroa to Pigeon Bay, and this being accomplished, there will be no difficulty in carrying a branch road towards the S.W. angle of the peninsula, and by the north end of the Lake Waioira to all parts of the great plain lying between Banks's Peninsula and the roots of the southern Alps. Cattle have been driven from Oihua (or Go-ashore), which is at the S.W. angle of the peninsula and near the plain, to Akaroa in about eight hours, at a time when there was not a track of any kind; my informant was one of the drovers. The roads must necessarily be hilly; but as there is not a great deal of wooded land to pass through, the surveyor will not, I think, have much difficulty in finding out the best lines. Materials for metalling the roads will be found abundant and good.

“Should Pigeon Bay ever become the site of a settlement, the

best situation for a township will be found close to the water at the head of the harbour: its form may be compact and convenient; the stream running through it would afford an abundant supply of fresh water, and it would stand at the extremity of the line of communication between Akaroa and the interior. The soil is a rich alluvium, producing abundance of fine timber of the best kinds; the substrata are loam and clay, which appeared to me to be fit for making bricks. The house of the Englishmen who live here is plastered with it."

The south-east point of Banks's Peninsula is in S. lat. $43^{\circ} 52' 15''$, E. long. 173° . About a mile west of this point is the entrance of Akaroa harbour. Captain Smith says of it:—

"The heads of Akaroa harbour are remarkable; the north head is much the highest; off it is a rock, in shape and appearance like a long boat; the south head is a perpendicular rock of a dark grey colour; there is a reef at the foot of it, but it is not considered dangerous; the breadth of the entrance is about three quarters of a mile; this is the narrowest part of the harbour. It is not thought prudent to enter with a south-west wind, as baffling and heavy squalls rush down from the high lands; in moderate weather it is considered perfectly safe and easy of access; the depth of water inside the heads is about fourteen fathoms; the only reef inside the harbour is on the north shore off Green's Point; it extends a full quarter of a mile from the point."

The land round this harbour is steep, and but of moderate quality. The distance to the level plains is about 20 miles, over hills only fit for pasture.

There is a small settlement in one of the bays at the head of the harbour, which was originated by the attempt of a French Association, the Nanto-Bordelaise Company, to found a colony under the auspices of the French Government. The emigrants, consisting of 43 males and 20 females, of the agricultural class, arrived at the Bay of Islands early in 1840, in a large vessel, accompanied by a French corvette. The English Government had been compelled, by the proceedings of the New Zealand Company, to send out Capt. Hobson as Lieutenant-Governor, to obtain possession of New Zealand for Her Majesty. In the northern part of the islands, it was considered necessary to acquire the sovereignty from the aboriginal Chiefs, who

had been acknowledged as independent; but as respects the Middle and Stewart's Islands, it was thought sufficient to proclaim British Sovereignty, as derived from Captain Cook's discovery. Captain Hobson had fortunately arrived at the Bay of Islands before the French expedition, and the French commander acceded to the British Governor's request, that he should allow an English brig-of-war to proceed to Akaroa before him, carrying a Magistrate who should hoist the British flag, and establish British authority, before the landing of the French settlers.

Mr. C. B. Robinson was the gentleman appointed to this service. He accordingly proceeded in H. M. B. Britomart, to Akaroa, and carried out his instructions. He remained in the performance of the duties of Resident Police Magistrate at this place until the end of 1845, when he was succeeded by Mr. J. Watson, who now holds the same situation.

The only capitalist among the French Colonists was M. S. de Béligny, the agent of the Nanto-Bordelaise Company, who remained there for one or two years, and then returned to France. The small number of French has since decreased, by the migration of some of its members to other parts of the colony: but several English and Americans have joined the settlement.

The French Company lays claim, by virtue of purchase from the natives and subsequent expenditure in colonization, to the whole Peninsula, supposed to contain 30,000 acres; but their title has not yet been fully allowed by the English Government. 107 acres of land have been allotted to the French Colonists by the Agent of their Company, and they live partly by what they grow on these allotments, and partly from support afforded them by a French Corvette which is almost always lying in the harbour. Besides their cottages, there is the residence of the Police Magistrate, a small jail, and a tavern or two.

The Nanto-Bordelaise Company profess to have

spent, "in bringing out the emigrants, in maintaining them in the Colony, according to the agreement made with them in France, for 17 months, in supplying them with agricultural implements, medicine and other necessaries, for building hospital, stores, dwellings, &c., in making roads, bridges, drains, &c., exclusively for the public service, 15,125*l*."*

Several Englishmen and Americans also claim portions of the Peninsula, on the strength of Deeds signed by natives: but the extent to which these claims will be allowed by the Government has not yet been finally determined.

Some of these claimants have considerable herds of cattle running on the hills.

Some police constables and boatmen are employed at Akaroa by Government. The port is not so much frequented by whaling-ships as might be inferred from its position, because the violent flurries of wind from the high headlands surrounding it render its narrow entrance rather difficult, and even dangerous. A cutter of 50 tons, in which Captain Smith made his exploring voyage, was capsized by a squall and sunk, while attempting to enter this harbour on her return. All Captain Smith's charts and manuscripts, as well as his own and the Company's surveying instruments, were thus lost.

The following remarks are made by the Bishop of New Zealand on the harbours of Banks's Peninsula, which have been described, and the country near them:—

"14 *February*, 1844. * * * Akaroa is a noble harbour, seven miles in length, with rather a narrow entrance, widening into a broad sheet of water, perfectly land-locked; the only drawback is the height of the hills around it, from which furious gusts come sud-

* For the Official Correspondence on this subject, and M. de Bèligny's Evidence before the Land Commissioners, see Appendix to H. of Commons' Report on N. Z., 29th July, 1844, No. 566, pp. 433 to 442.

denly down, endangering small vessels if the sails are not kept in hand." * * * "The wind being now contrary, I stayed two days at Akaroa, and looked over the settlement, where there are about eighty French settlers, and about fifty English, with a few Germans. Some of the French settlers have good gardens." * * * "*February 15.*—The wind being still contrary, I walked over to Pigeon Bay, on the north side of the Peninsula. * * * In this bay I found some Scotch settlers of the right sort, living in great comfort by their own exertions; making everything for themselves, and, above all, keeping up their religious principles and usages, though far from any ministerial assistance." * * * "*February 16, 17, 18.*—* * * Port Cooper is surrounded by precipitous hills, with very little level ground, but an opening can be made without difficulty, to the extensive plains which range along the eastern shore of this Island from Kaikoura (Lookers-on) to Moerangi."—*Annals of the Diocese of New Zealand. London, 1847, pp. 144 to 146.*

West of Akaroa harbour, there are two or three whaling-stations on the coast—Hikurangi, Pirangi, and Oihua (Go-ashore)—(See p. 193), dependent on Wellington. The anchorage near them is bad, and completely exposed to the southerly gales, which often blow with great violence. One or two small vessels, which have anchored there to receive the oil and whalebone from the fisheries, have been consequently driven ashore and totally wrecked.

For 20 miles south of Hikurangi the coast consists of a shingly bank, about half a mile broad, inland of which is the lake called Waihola, or more properly Waiora. This lake is about 18 miles in length from N.E. to S.W., and fills up a large portion of the level space between the sea and the mountains. Nothing is yet known of the level country between the mountains and the lake: but it is probably watered by numerous streams flowing into the lake, as it occasionally breaks a passage in certain spots through the shingly barrier.

South of this, for 60 miles further, the shingly beach continues, backed by grassy plains, which extend to the foot of the mountains, here gradually diverging to the westward. A river, called Te Wai-a-te-Ruati, then flows into the sea.

Fifty-four miles further south, still along shingly

beach, backed by grassy plains, is another river, called Waitangi, of some importance. The Bishop of New Zealand describes it as—

“A deep and rapid torrent, rushing through a labyrinth of gravel banks and small islands, and in summer much swollen by the melting of the snow on the mountains in the interior.”*

Thirty-nine miles S. of the Waitangi's mouth, is Moerangi, already mentioned at pages 295 and 309.

The beach, from Waitangi to Moerangi, is sandy; with level grassy plains at its back.

All along the whole of this coast, from Cape Campbell to Moerangi, there are but very few permanent inhabitants of the aboriginal race; who have insignificant villages on Banks's Peninsula, and at one or two places to the South, where the natives who reside at Otago, the Bluff, on the shores of Foveaux's Strait, or on Stewart's Island, occasionally sojourn for a few days or weeks, in the course of their journeys along the coast in search of seals, or whalebone from the stranded carcasses of wounded whales, which they sell to the few European settlers, or to vessels which chance to anchor in any of the harbours.

Captain Smith thus concludes his Report, already quoted from:—

“I have now, sir, reported upon all the harbours which I have visited, and to the best of my recollection have stated all the most important particulars relating to each; and it appears to me, on mature consideration, that (should it be the intention of the New Zealand Company to establish a settlement in New Munster), Akaroa will be found best suited to the purpose. The harbour is quite as accessible as any other; it is more extensive, has the best site for a town, and is in the neighbourhood of the most extensive tracts of land, adapted to the purposes of grazing and agriculture.

“Akaroa is the resort of the greatest number of the ships employed to the southward of the Bay of Islands in the whale fishery; and as many as fifteen, I have been told, have been seen lying there at a time. The two last reasons for preferring Akaroa to any other port in New Munster, will apply to the other harbours on Banks's

* See also page 295.

Peninsula. Should it not be expedient to establish the settlement on any of these harbours, Otago will be found preferable in every respect to Bloomfield Harbour (the Bluff.) It is more easy of access, has more room for shipping, a better site for a town, and has more land fit for grazing and agricultural purposes in its immediate neighbourhood. On the shores of Foveaux Strait, I think Port Somes (called the Neck, and sometimes Patterson's River), or Port Adventure, will be found best suited to the purpose of a settlement."

CHAPTER XI.

Auckland District.—Official Information.—Gulf of Hauraki.—Valley of the Thames.—Harbour and Town of Auckland.—Adjacent Harbours and Districts.—Climate.—Natural Productions.—Distribution of Land, &c.—Prices and Wages.—Statistics.—Directory.

ALTHOUGH the Settlement of Auckland, which was founded by Governor Hobson, in the Northern part of the North Island, in September, 1840, has ever since been maintained, under the sole management of the Colonial Office, as the Capital and seat of government for the whole Colony, it is very difficult to obtain any full and authentic information about it. As to the southern settlements, the details contained in the foregoing chapters are easily procured at New Zealand House, where maps, drawings, books, documents, and files of the local newspapers, and of the *New Zealand Journal*, are perfectly accessible to any one seeking information. The editor of this compilation applied to Mr. Hawes, the Under Secretary of State for the Colonies, for access to information for that purpose with regard to the government settlement, and received the following reply:—

"Downing-street, 2nd March, 1848.

"SIR,—Having submitted to Earl Grey the request contained in your letter to me of the 25th ultimo, I am directed by his Lordship to state that he is not aware of any information relating to the

Northern or indeed to any portion of New Zealand which has been considered proper for publication, and has not been laid before Parliament, unless it be amongst the very early correspondence with the Governor of New South Wales.

"On this subject, however, Lord Grey would be glad if you will specify more distinctly what is the particular information which you are anxious to procure.

"I have, &c.,

(Signed)

"HERMAN MERIVALE."

On specifying very distinctly the heads of information required, and suggesting that much of that information might probably be contained in the local Newspapers and Government Gazettes, which he presumed to have been filed at the Colonial Office, the editor received the following letter:—

"Downing-street, 14th March, 1848.

"SIR,—I have laid before Earl Grey your letter of the 4th instant, and I am directed to acquaint you in reply, that on applying to the Librarian of this Office, you will have full access to the files of Auckland Newspapers.

"Lord Grey directs me to inform you that the statistical details which are annually required from the Governors of Colonies have not been received from New Zealand, which may be accounted for by its having been impossible for the Local Government in the present unsettled and progressive state of the Colony to supply this information with that accuracy which is required in Official Returns. Lord Grey can therefore only supply you with such information as may be derived from the less authentic sources of the Local Newspapers.

"I have, &c.,

(Signed)

"HERMAN MERIVALE."

The only local Newspapers, however, produced by the librarian of the Colonial Office, on applying accordingly on the 10th of August, consisted of a very imperfect file of the *New Zealander*,* between November, 1845, and the 1st of January, 1848, of which many numbers—in one place, for six consecutive weeks—were missing; of two odd numbers of the *Southern Cross*,* 26th February and 4th March, 1848; and one

* Auckland Newspapers.

odd number of each of the Wellington newspapers, also of March, 1848.

The editor has therefore been compelled to seek elsewhere for more recent and more perfect files of the local newspapers, as well as of the *New Zealand Government Gazettes*. He has also gathered all the information possible from the reports and publications of the Colonial Land and Emigration Commissioners: and he has availed himself, for a description of the country in the northern part of the North Island, of the work published in 1843 by Dr. Dieffenbach, naturalist to the New Zealand Company.* The stock of information will therefore necessarily appear imperfect and meagre, when compared with that afforded as to the Southern, or Company's Settlements; but it is hoped that the above reasons will be considered a sufficient explanation of the contrast.

Dr. Dieffenbach thus describes the district in the immediate neighbourhood of Auckland, and the Town and Harbour themselves:—

“What is commonly called *the Thames* is a very large estuary or gulf on the eastern coast of New Zealand, containing several harbours, and many islands of various dimensions, and receiving the waters of two rivers of considerable size. I give to the whole the name of the Gulf of Hauraki, although the natives apply this name only to the eastern part, which receives the river Waiho, or Thames, and the river Piako. If the denomination of ‘Thames’ is to be retained, instead of the well-sounding native name of Waiho, this part of the gulf would be most appropriately called the ‘Frith of the Thames.’

“The northern headland of the Gulf of Hauraki is formed by Point Rodney; the southern headland is Cape Colville; the distance between them being about forty miles. Cape Colville is the extreme headland of a long promontory, forming the eastern limit of the Frith of the Thames; throughout its length runs a chain of wooded hills, with a sharp crest and steep declivities, which are washed by the sea both on the eastern and western coast; but on the latter the rocky line is interrupted by an inlet, which forms Waihao or Coromandel harbour: at the back of the harbour the hills rise into remarkable pinnaced and pyramidal summits.

* See pages 50, 278.

"To the southward this hilly chain continues along the eastern coast: at the foot of their western slope runs the Waiho, or the river Thames. Here the chain of hills assumes the name of the Aroha (Love) mountains, and borders the valley of the Thames to the eastward, shutting it from the sea. Besides the Waiho, another river, the Piako, flows in this valley, and has its embouchure close to that of the former.

"Waihao or Coromandel Harbour is twenty-five miles from Cape Colville, and thirty-five from the mouth of the Thames. It is surrounded by hills, which on the eastward rise in a series of longitudinal ridges to the height of about 1500 feet. To the eastward and northward a stripe of alluvial land runs at the base of the hills; but otherwise the shores, which consist of a sandstone conglomerate and trap, are so hilly that they render all communication difficult between the natives who live in the different small bays around the shores. The shore is covered with verdure. The soil on the lower hills is fertile, and yields abundant supplies to the natives.

"Kauri timber* is abundant on the hills from Cape Colville to Kati Kati, in the Bay of Plenty, about 37° 30' S. lat. Kati Kati is the southernmost boundary of this tree on the east coast of New Zealand.

"Coromandel Harbour is better adapted for small than for large vessels, as, on account of the shallowness of the water, the latter cannot enter far enough to be effectually protected from the outer swell, although there is good holding-ground.

"The natives who live in Coromandel Harbour are sub-divisions of the Nga-te-paoa. The whole tribe amounts to 5000, who do not all live in Coromandel Harbour, portions of them being established at the entrance into the river Thames, at different parts of the Gulf of Hauraki, and at Mercury Bay. They have greatly diminished in number in consequence of their late wars.

"From Coromandel Harbour to the entrance of the river Thames the coast is rocky, and there is no communication between Coromandel Harbour and the valley of the Thames by land. The hills are mostly basaltic or amygdaloid, and many fine red and white cornelians are found hereabouts.

"Not far from the entrance into the Thames is a station of the Church Missionary Society, occupying a most picturesque position on the slope of the eastern mountains, which are crowned by a forest of lofty trees. An arm of the sea, which is joined by a creek, the Wawakaurunga, bathes the foot of the hills, where the buildings are placed; a fertile alluvial flat spreads along its left shore, on which stands a large native fortification, Kaneranga, often containing nearly 2000 inhabitants.

"There is no harbour, properly speaking, in the Waiho, or Frith

* *Dammara Australis*, (see page 365).

of the Thames, and large vessels cannot approach, as a mudbank stretches out between the Thames and the Piako, which have their embouchure close to each other: there is, however, a channel into the Thames with a minimum depth of one fathom and a half at dead low water; higher up the depth of the water is three fathoms to three fathoms and a half. Small vessels have gone up the river nearly fifty miles, and large boats can ascend about ninety miles. A channel also leads into the Piako, but this river is the smaller of the two, and at low water admits boats only.

"The land on which the kauri pine grows is, even when cleared, of no use for any other purposes, both from the rugged nature of the ground and from the quality of the soil. But at some distance from the entrance into the Thames, the eastern coast hills, which, seen from the valley, look like a steep artificial embankment, are flat on the top, and slope gradually down to the sea-coast in the Bay of Plenty: the kauri is scarce; and the forest is a mixed one, in which rata, rimu, totara, and hinau are the most conspicuous. Such land is available, if cleared of the forest; the kauri being confined to a few steep hills and ravines on the eastern coast.

"The valley of the Thames is about 100 miles long, extending to the neighbourhood of the inland lake of Roturua, and, with the exception of the banks of the rivers, where the kahikatea pine grows to great perfection, the whole valley is occupied by fern, flax, and manuka. This vegetation is interrupted by large raupo (typha) swamps, which increase towards the mouths of the rivers, where the country is low and subject to inundations. To the westward the valley of the Thames is bordered by hills; but these are only defined and separated lower down towards the frith. Higher up, the valley of the Thames may be said to be united with that of the Waikato* and Waipa, with the exception of some distinct hilly groups. From the hilly ridge several narrow valleys open towards the frith, and here are the populous native settlements of Wakatiwai and Waiko-kopu.

"Opposite the island of Waiheke the land becomes comparatively flat and low; the coast consists of soft sandstone, in cliffs of horizontal stratification; and this is the character of the country towards Waitemata, where the town of Auckland is situated. In passing from the outlet of the Thames to the latter place the aspect of the shores is highly picturesque. A luxuriant vegetation covers them to the water's edge, or alternates with the clearings made by the natives. As we approach Auckland several regular volcanic cones rise over the table-land which stretches across the island to the harbour of Manukao. We pass a number of islands, of which that of Waiheke is overtopped with stately kauri pines: from every crevice of the rock on these islands, even where washed by the salt

* See page 42.

water, the glossy green of various shrubs meet our eyes. These islands in the Gulf of Hauraki, luxuriantly wooded, and divided from each other by deep straits, afford a succession of ever-changing scenery.

"The harbour of Waitemata is the most important in the Gulf of Hauraki. It lies at the westernmost extremity of the gulf, and stretches its ramifications towards the harbours of Manukao and Kaipara. The entrance into the harbour is distant from Coromandel Harbour forty miles, from the embouchure of the Thames forty-five miles, from Point Rodney forty miles, and from Cape Colville forty-five miles.

"The latitude of the flag-staff in the military barracks at Auckland is $36^{\circ} 51' 27''$, its longitude $174^{\circ} 45' 20''$ E.

"The northern head of the harbour forms a peninsula at high-water. Two conical hills rise here, of which that forming the north head, Takapuna, is 216 feet high, of an irregular form, and consists of a hard basaltic rock; the other, at a little distance from it, Takarunga, has on its summit a crater, partially broken in. It is 279 ft. high, and consists of black and reddish vesicular lava. There is now a flag-staff erected on it. The navigable entrance into the harbour is only three-quarters of a mile broad, as it is narrowed by a reef, the outermost point of which is marked by a beacon, and is distant three-quarters of a mile from a curious bastion-shaped sandstone rock, which may be regarded as the southern head. Within the heads the channel widens to an average breadth of one mile; it has its greatest depth on the northern shore, and is shallow on the southern, on which the town of Auckland has been laid out, at the distance of two miles and a half from the south head.

"The depth of the harbour is from six to nine fathoms in the mid channel, and three and three and a half at the sides.* The inlet continues about ten miles to the westward, sending an arm to the northward towards the river Kaipara, and another to the southward towards the harbour of Manukao. The northern arm has a deep but very narrow channel near the northern shore; but shoals and rocks obstruct the passage leading towards Manukao, except for large boats, which can go up for several miles in the river-like inlet, and between its upper part and the harbour of Manukao there is a portage of one mile and a half.

"The usual rise and fall of the tides in Auckland is ten feet; but they are influenced by the easterly winds, which sometimes raise them to twelve or even thirteen feet: the time of high water at full and change is about 6h. 45m.

"The variation of the compass is 14° , the dip of the needle $61^{\circ} 7'$.

* At low-water, however, mud-flats stretch out to a considerable distance from the dry land, thus rendering landing inconvenient.—*Ed. Handbook for N. Z.*

"The southern shore, or that on which Auckland stands, consists of cliffs of a soft pepper-coloured sandstone, or sandstone conglomerate, with occasional seams of lignite. The country itself is slightly undulating, and forms small bays, which open towards the harbour, and are partially wooded at the bottom. The rest is covered with high fern and manuka. In the immediate neighbourhood of Auckland there is no wood, but opposite to it a small stripe of kauri and other forest-trees near the sea-shore has escaped the general conflagration by which the greater part of the former woods has evidently been destroyed. From this spot the town is provided with timber and firewood. All this land is bad, as is also that at the head of the harbour; but the soil is much better in the immediate neighbourhood of Auckland, and thence towards Manukao, and to the eastward, where it is fit for all kinds of horticultural and agricultural purposes.

"Auckland is well supplied with fresh water, not only by the small water-runs in the valleys, but also by springs, from which it is readily obtained by digging a few feet below the surface.

"Several volcanic cones rise in the immediate neighbourhood of the town, at the base of which hard scorïæ for buildings and roads can be obtained, and which are easily worked; the sandstone, though soft, hardens by exposure to the air, and is a good building material.

"A mile to the eastward of Auckland there is a small bay called Oraki; it has a narrow entrance, and forms almost a natural dock, and could easily be converted into one by means of sluices. To this place the few natives who form the scanty remnant of the once large tribe of the Nga-te-whatua, the proprietors of Waitemata, have lately returned from Manukao; they cultivate the land, and by supplying firewood and provisions, and by working for wages, have made themselves very useful to the town.

"Still farther to the eastward, another inlet, commonly called the Tamaki, leads towards Manukao; and here is the shortest portage into the latter harbour, it being only a quarter of a mile across. At the entrance into this channel is a bar, with six feet depth at low water, but inside the channel deepens; vessels of 200 tons have gone up for some distance, and large barges can go to the portage. The land on both sides of the Tamaki is excellent; that on the right shore is claimed by the Church Missionary catechist, Fairburn, whose possessions extend from this point as far as to the Wairoa river, being an extent of about ninety square miles. A great deal of lignite is found on the Tamaki, but no wood, with the exception of jungle.

"The town of Auckland, considering the short time it has existed, has made considerable progress. Its population, which amounts to more than 2000, has been drawn together from all parts of the island. A Bank has been formed, fine barracks have been built of scorïæ; and were

it not for a general spirit of over-speculation in land, without any attempt to explore the home resources of the island, there would be every ground for hoping that the place would gradually and steadily rise into importance.* The thing that chiefly recommends the situation of this place for the central town of the northern island is its easy communication with the coast, both to the north and to the southward. An inland communication through Kaipara with the Bay of Islands can be effected in five days, even with the present insufficient means of communication. With the western coast, and with the interior, over Manukao and the river Waikato, nothing interrupts the water-communication but two small portages; and even with Cook's Strait relations can be easily established, either by the river Thames, or the Waikato and Waipa, and the river Wanganui.

"The coast-trade, particularly, is of the greatest importance, as the nature of the country will cause its colonization at many different points at once: and already a great number of small coasting vessels communicate with Auckland.

"The Thames and the Piako form an extensive agricultural valley, and as their natural harbour, Waitemata is preferable to Coromandel Harbour.

"In short, it appears to me that there can be no question but that the place has been very judiciously chosen for the site of a town, as commanding a great extent of cultivable land in its neighbourhood, great facility of communication with the coast and the interior of the northern island, and as being a central point for the most powerful native tribes, the Nga-pui to the northward, the Waikato to the southward, and the Nga-te-hauwa to the eastward, separating them in a military point of view, but uniting them for the purposes of civilization and commerce.

"The Gulf of Hauraki contains a number of islands, of which Aotea, or the Great Barrier, at the entrance into the gulf, and Waiheke opposite to the entrance into Waitemata harbour, are the most important. The former is nearly eighty miles in circumference, contains much kauri-forest, and possesses an excellent harbour at its north-western extremity; it is called the Great Barrier Harbour, and has only lately been discovered.

"From the Great Barrier I obtained specimens of a copper ore in a matrix of a decomposed micaceous slate. Some of the specimens contained nearly twenty-five per cent. of copper, the rest was sulphur, iron, and silica. I could not ascertain the extent and position of the vein in which it occurs; but, from the nature of the surrounding rock, I do not think it improbable that a mine of some importance will be found.

* This is a description of Auckland in 1842. Much progress has been made since that time, in consequence of the large government expenditure.

“Waiheke is about thirty miles in circumference. It has a harbour for small vessels, and there is an anchorage for larger ones in the channel which separates the island from the main. It consists mostly of a yellow argillaceous rock and basalt; it is wooded and hilly, and contains kauri, but has also many sheltered and cultivable valleys.

“Both islands are claimed by Europeans, the latter by nearly half-a-dozen different parties. Barrier Island is the property of a merchant in Sydney, and some Europeans live there. In Waiheke there are some natives, and also a European family.*

“Rangitoto is another remarkable island:—between it and the mainland is the best channel into Waitemata. It is a cone, rising slowly from the sea, and has on its summit three cones. Rangitoto is an immense heap of scoriæ, which, in large hard masses, surround it at its base and the greater part of its height; and it is only on the top that a few bushes have taken root. In the middle cone is a very perfect crater, about 150 feet deep. The highest point of the island rises to 920 feet above the level of the sea.

“There are other harbours between the Gulf of Hauraki and the Bay of Islands, in all of which Europeans are settled, but very few natives. It would be tedious to do more than briefly mention them.

“1. The harbour of Mahurangi is situated at a distance of twenty miles from Waitemata. It is of easy access, the depth of water is sufficient for every description of vessels, and there is secure anchorage. It has a southern and a northern passage, of which the former is the best, and has from seven to fifteen fathoms water. A division of the surveying department was sent there, to lay out a town; but the place, though possessed of some timber, has no particular advantage for a township.

“2. Matakana, a small harbour, a little to the northward of Mahurangi. It has two fathoms water at the entrance, with some kauri-timber on its shores: several Europeans live there.

“3. Wangari, an extensive and sheltered harbour. In this neighbourhood there is much kauri-forest.

“4. Putukaka.

“5. Wangamuna.

“6. Wangaruru. In this harbour H. M. S. Buffalo once took in a large cargo of spars.”

In the course of a journey from Auckland to Lake Taupo, begun in March, 1841, Dr. Dieffenbach proceeds to observe:—

* This island is said to have been once purchased by the agent of the New Zealand Company of 1825. (See p. 53.)

"The country between Waitemata and Manukao is not only highly interesting to the geologist, but also very promising to the agriculturist. A number of cones rise above the even table-land, which is intersected by moderate valleys. All these cones are extinct volcanoes."

He describes some of them as having an elevation of 500 feet. Their bases are—

"strewed over with large masses of black and cellular scoriæ, often forming ridges, or heaped up by the former native inhabitants into mounds, to enable them to cultivate the light black soil between. Near the summits, these scoriæ are more friable and of a reddish colour. * * *

"As the soil between the boulders is very fertile, it may be expected that, at no far distant time, the flanks of these cones will again form sheltered and productive gardens, as a large quantity of scoriæ will be consumed in the construction of roads, for which purpose they are particularly adapted.

"The similarity of these craters with those of the Auvergne, and especially the similarity of their igneous products with those of the extinct volcanoes of that place, is striking.

"The distance across the country from Auckland to the head of Manukao Harbour is about seven miles; the land slopes gently towards the latter, and is covered with grass, flax, or the beautiful *Veronica speciosa*, which at the time of my visit was covered with its lilac flowers, filling the air with their perfume. Where this shrub grows it is a sure indication of the richest soil.

"Between Auckland and Manukao there is no wood, excepting that where the plain is intersected by valleys a few shrubs grow. At the head of Manukao are some native huts, called *Onehunga*, occasionally inhabited by a few people of the Waikato tribe, who have abundant crops on their neighbouring cultivations, especially of maize.

"The harbour of Manukao, an inlet about fifteen miles long and eight broad, sends an arm towards the Tamaki in the Hauraki Gulf.* Between these points, as I have already mentioned, is the shortest portage connecting the eastern and the western sea. The upper part of Manukao harbour is shallow, but there is a navigable channel for small craft nearly to its head. Part of the shore at the head is strewed over with hard basaltic lava and cellular scoriæ, and it is not difficult to point out, in a cone on the southern shore, the source of this volcanic produce. The northern shore is clifty, and consists of stratified greyish sandstone, or sandstone conglomerate. The stratifications of the latter are sometimes curvilinear. The cliffs are wooded with various trees. But this vegetation is merely

* See p. 345,

confined to the coast, as the land which extends from the north shore of Manukao is not covered with anything of higher growth than fern, rushes, *Leptospermum*, *Dracena*, and a few *Orchidaceæ*. This land consists of low hills, the upper soil of which is a stiff clay; the whole has formerly been covered with kauri-forest, as is proved by the gum or resin, of which pieces are everywhere found. This tree grows now only near the heads of Manukao Harbour, and on the hills which extend along the sea-shore from Kaipara to Manukao. Here the kauri, as in other places, is associated with other pines. Several creeks, capable of turning mills, flow into the harbour.

“The north head of Manukao is formed by three rugged conical hills; inside the outer head the coast presents a bold rocky precipice, alternating with small secluded bays; but a vigorous vegetation covers them to the water's edge, and kauri-trees have grown in places where the precipice is inaccessible on account of its rapid declivity. About three miles from the outer headland, the coast sweeps at a right angle round a cliffy inner headland, thus forming a neck of land about three miles long and as many broad. Round this inner headland, close in-shore, is the best anchorage in the harbour, perfectly sheltered from the N.W. and S.W. winds. A swell, which would be liable to set in from the harbour itself, is broken by a long sandbank occupying the centre of the basin. This place is called Karanga-hawe, and is part of the land claimed by the Manukao New Zealand Company.

“The southern shore of the harbour consists of undulating and fertile land, which extends from Onehunga towards the Waikato. There is a second channel on that side of the harbour; and a channel for boats extends towards an arm of the Waikato river—the Awaroa—with a very easy portage of two miles and a half.

“The south head is a remarkable steep hill of white movable sand, heaped up by north-westerly gales; the northern head, however, is a black conglomerate of a rugged shape.

“Although the harbour of Manukao has a bar at the entrance, there is a deep and free channel three-quarters of a mile broad close to the northern head. Once between the heads, the channel is deep and free from danger.

“The tide is full two hours and three-quarters later in Manukao than at Waitemata, and rises to ten feet and a half.

“Manukao is a place of some importance, from its near neighbourhood to Auckland, and the facility of communication with that town and the river Waikato. The best anchorage, and all the timber, and, moreover, a very good situation for a town, are to be found on the northern shore; but all the good land is on the southern. To connect the two sides by a road will be difficult and expensive.

The great prevalence of westerly winds on this coast causes Manukao to be, in one respect, not nearly so important as it would seem. It is impossible to beat out of the harbour against a strong westerly wind, on account of the heavy sea raised on the banks at and outside the entrance. Consequently all egress for vessels is frequently closed for several weeks without interruption.

There are two or three considerable native villages on the shores of Manukao harbour.

"The distance from Manukao to the Waikato," continues Dr. Dieffenbach, "is thirty miles, and the coast, which consists of a broad and hard sandy beach, with soft sandstone cliffs of a moderate height, runs nearly north and south. There is only one spot which is impassable at high water. The whole district between the sea-coast and the Awaroa (great river), which branches off from the Waikato to the north, eight miles from its mouth, is called Tauroa. The soil is very light, and in some places sandy, but the kumera, of which there are many plantations, thrives very well in it. About ten miles from the north head of the river Waikato sand has been carried by the winds a long distance inland, and is mixed with a great quantity of pumicestone, which is often so firmly imbedded in it as to form a pavement. This pumicestone, and occasionally pieces of black obsidian, are brought down the Waikato river from the volcanic group of the Tongariro, which is situated in the centre of the island, and from which the Waikato takes its rise.

"The left shore of the Waikato consists, for about eight miles from the sea, of shifting sand; the right shore is hilly, and at the foot of the hills, near the embouchure of the river, is the station of the Church Missionary Society, Maraenui, established two years ago.

"The outlet of the Waikato does not form a bay, but is a narrow channel, where, at low water, only vessels of about thirty tons can enter. But inside the headlands the Waikato is a stately stream, and when the tide has increased its depth it is navigable even for larger vessels for about a hundred miles, where it is joined by the river Waipa, which is navigable for boats sixty miles farther.

"Near the mission-station are several native pas, numerously inhabited, but only during certain seasons, as the natives generally live in their plantations higher up, on the banks of the river. About 2500 were present at a meeting which took place the day after my arrival."

Southward of the Waikato's mouth, and between the left bank of that river and the coast, the hills—

"are steep on both sides, and run parallel to the coast: which consists partly of cliffs and partly of steep slopes; and the formation is a solid white sandstone, composed of comminuted shells and grains of quartz, and often rising to a height of 120 feet."

Further on, the coast-hills consist of yellow argillaceous slate; and in many places laminar basalt, and also compact basaltic rock, may be observed. Buttresses of the main chain of hills run off towards the sea-coast, forming narrow valleys. Further still, sandstone cliffs draw close to the sea. Then the hilly coast-land assumes the character of plateaux and basins, owing their origin to trap formation, and covered with vegetation. The sandy downs of the coast shelter these places; the soil is a light fertile mould. The appearance of the land continues unchanged until you reach the harbour of Waingaroa.

"The northern shore of Waingaroa Harbour consists of very picturesque limestone cliffs, from sixty to seventy feet high, corroded by the action of the water, and half concealed by the overhanging verdure. The limestone is more or less crystalline, and coarse grained, and contains fossils. At the head of the harbour there is a large district consisting of a bluish clay, without, however, any organic remains. The southern shore is formed mostly of a soft ferruginous sandstone. At an arm of the harbour, which here extends for some distance inland, basaltic rock is seen, containing small grains of olivin. Woody Head, or Karaoe, which forms the southern headland of Waingaroa Harbour, appears to consist entirely of this formation. It rises about 900 feet above the level of the sea.

"In Waingaroa there are about 1200 natives, belonging to the Waikato tribe. They are mostly Christians, and on the southern shore is a missionary establishment belonging to the Wesleyan Society.

"The harbour of Waingaroa is a long inlet, with a bar at the entrance; it has, however, a channel of twelve feet at low water, and admits smaller craft, which find shelter in several bays on the northern shore. Off the southern and northern head of the harbour are spits of sand, and the navigable channel is equidistant from both heads. The tide rises ten feet, and at full and change it is high water at ten o'clock.

"Two rivers empty themselves into the harbour, of which the smaller one comes from the northward, and is called Waingaroa. The larger one comes from the eastward, and is called Wai-te-Tuna:

it has a channel for boats; and from the point at which, on account of falls, it becomes impassable for boats or canoes, an easy walk of four hours leads to the banks of the river Waipa.

"The coast-hills between Waikato and Waingaroa, already described, separate the waters of the Waipa and those which rise in the hills and run to the west coast. These hills have an easy slope, both towards the plains of the Waipa and towards the sea-coast. They are lowest at the Wai-te-Tuna, where the common native road is, and here a communication with the interior is most easily established. Thus the harbour of Waingaroa offers many advantages for a settlement, especially as the land in its immediate vicinity is most excellent, both forest and agricultural. Nevertheless the purchases of the Europeans have not been so extensive here as in other parts of the island.

"The missionaries have a bridle-road, cut by the natives, for about six miles towards the harbour of Aotea, leading along the wooded crest of the hills.

"Aotea is a long and shallow estuary, with a bar at its mouth, but has several times been entered by a schooner of sixteen tons burden. In Aotea the limestone again appears on the sides of the hills which bound the harbour. On the northern shore is a Wesleyan mission-station, and the native population amounts to 1200.

"On the southern shore may be traced some thick beds of lignite under cliffs of a soft ferruginous sandstone.

"From Aotea it is a two hours' walk to Kawia. Another good road leads round by the beach, which is here bounded by hills of drift-sand. At a little distance behind them the land is flat and good, and there are many flourishing native plantations stocked with the common vegetables.

"The harbour of Kawia is one of the most important on the western coast of the northern island. It has a clear entrance about a mile and a quarter broad, and with two fathoms at dead low-water spring-tides. The tide rises twelve feet, and at full and change it is high water at eight o'clock. The best anchorage is along the northern shore, where the depth varies from five to eight fathoms. The harbour forms an irregular basin, and is joined by two rivers, which descend from the coast range, and admit boats; the one to the north is the Awaroa, which receives a tributary, the Kauri river, so named from a few kauri-trees which grow here, and are strictly "tapu:" from the right bank of the river the road leads over the hills into the plains of the Waipa; the river to the south is the Wai Arekeke, and here another road leads into the Waipa district, more circuitous, but less hilly.

"The principal geological feature of the estuary of Kawia is an extensive calcareous formation, which can be examined on the left

shore of the Awaroa and on the south side of the harbour. The limestone is of the same description as that in Waingarua, and contains the same fossils, with the addition of great numbers of a large *Ostrea*, often a foot in length.

"The principal settlement of the Waikato tribes, who are now in possession of this part of the island, is near the Wesleyan mission-station on the south shore. They are about 1500 in number, and of late most of them have become Christians. There are about forty Europeans settled on the northern shore, who have lived here for several years past.

"From this being almost the best harbour on the western coast, and the only one of consequence between Maukaro and Port Nicholson, from the quality of the surrounding country, as well as from the immediate neighbourhood of the extensive and fertile Waipa plains, a town might be established here with every prospect of immediate success. The greater part of the land in the vicinity of Kawia is claimed by Europeans.

"On the 20th we went in a canoe to Oparau, a small river a little to the northward of the Awaroa. Its banks are of moderate height: the soil is a good loamy earth, and covered with a luxuriant vegetation of fern and flax.

"The next day our road led us up the hills, which ascend gently from the sea. We kept along the ridges, and had to pass several ravines and narrow valleys. The formation of the hills is volcanic: they consisted of a solid basaltic matrix, with numerous pentagonal columns of augite. Many parts of these hills are covered only with fern; others, especially in the ravines, are still clothed with forest, which seems to have formerly covered the whole.

"On the 23rd we continued to ascend the hilly and wooded ridge which separates the Waipa from the sea-coast. From an open spot I had a view of Kawia and Aotea. Albatross Point bore S. 55° W.; the south head of Kawia S. 50° W.; Maunga-Tautari, a volcanic ridge in the interior, N. 65° E. Higher up the hills become very rocky and steep: the formation of basaltic and augitic rock continues. In some places the hills are only covered with scanty and stunted trees. When we reached the top an extensive view opened before us: the broad and open valley of the Waipa stretched out towards the north-east, and was bounded to the east by distant hills. To the south-west the eye reached to the hilly chain of Rangitoto, near Mokau, on the western coast, which bore S. 20° W. In the valley of the Waipa rose an isolated conical hill, Maunga-Kaua, whilst here and there a small part of the Waipa river itself was visible. I had a good view of the country inland of Waingarua and Aotea Harbours; and I observed that everywhere the coast-hills descended gradually towards the interior, and that all these hills were covered with forest. Only some small spots of the valley of

the Waipa were wooded. Pirongia, as the hill on which we stood is called, seems to be the highest point of the coast-chain: it rises to the height of 2428 feet, measured thermometrically.

"In the evening we arrived at the banks of the Waipa, and were welcomed in the house of an Englishman, a trader and old settler. The river was swollen by the late rains, and had risen about eight feet above its usual level. The banks being elevated, this made no difference in its breadth, which was here about fifty yards. Its average depth was now from one and a half to two fathoms; but even in dry seasons a boat can go up ten or twelve miles higher than this place. The valley itself has little slope, and the average velocity of the river cannot be sufficient to hinder boats from going against the stream: its velocity per second I found to be nearly two feet and a half. The banks consisted of a stiff loamy earth, with layers of sand, but without any fragments of rocks. All the surrounding country is flat, and of the most promising description for the growth of grain. Our English host had a quantity of tobacco hung up to dry, which he had grown here: it was of an excellent quality, and the rich soil and humid climate seem to be well adapted for the cultivation of this plant.

"On the 24th we crossed the Waipa in a canoe, and reached the Church missionary station of Otawao. Here, for the first time, we had a view of the snowy head of the Ruapehu, which is about 150 miles distant.

"The mission-station of Otawao was established about a year ago, and has already been very useful. It is situated on the banks of a small tributary of the Waipa: opposite to it, on an eminence, the Christian natives have constructed their pa, as at the first introduction of Christianity a sort of separation always takes place between the Christian converts and the Heathens, without, however, materially affecting the general harmony of the tribe.

"In this neighbourhood there are several well-peopled pas.

"Not far distant rises a hilly range, Maunga-Tautari, separating the valley of the Waipa from another valley more to the eastward, in which three rivers flow, the Waikato, the Piako, and the Waiho, or the river Thames.* The Waikato winds around the northern slope of this range, and is joined, about 100 miles above its embouchure, by the Waipa. The valley of the Waipa, which is therefore formed by Maunga-Tautari and a range of hills near the western coast, must be regarded as partly original volcanic table-land, and partly alluvial soil; the surface of the latter is enriched by the forest which in ancient times covered it. The groves, which are still standing in many places, especially where swamps are found in the depressions of the land, consist mostly of kahikatea.

"About ten Europeans are settled in the neighbourhood of

* See page 343.

Otawao; and in numerous dispersed and fortified villages live several distinct tribes, all belonging to the Waikato nation."

From Otawao, the direction of the journey was easterly,

"leaving the Waipa river, whose source lay to the west, among the mountains of Rangitoto. This range of hills forms a continuation of the western coast-hills, and connects them with the group of the Ruapehu. On the western slope of these mountains is the source of the Mokau river, which falls into the sea about sixty miles to the northward of Cape Egmont.* The general level of the valley of the Waipa is interrupted by a few isolated pyramidal hills of a volcanic origin, of which arms, consisting of tufa and pumicestone, run off in all directions, often presenting cliffy escarpments on the sides."

Rounding the southern extremity of the Maunga Tautari range, the travellers now entered the upper part of the great Waikato plain. This country is described by Dr. Dieffenbach as "singularly broken," and "in the highest degree curious to the geologist;" but he also considers it as unfit for present colonization. In one place he says:—

"On the whole, the pumicestone has not undergone sufficient decay to allow the growth of anything except scanty grass."

The following extract refers to the climate of this region, on the 3rd of May (answering to the 3rd of November in England):—

"The temperature of the air showed the difference between the climate of the coast and the interior. Although rising at noon to about 70°, it fell in the evening to 45°, and in the morning we found ice about half an inch thick covering the ponds and swamps, and a hoar-frost whitened the plains. To the northward a thick mist indicated the bed of the Waikato, and again, at a farther distance, that of the river Thames. The wind during these days was from the south-east; towards evening it subsided into a perfect calm, and the landscape assumed that clear autumnal aspect which is so pleasing in Europe."

For a minute description of the country between this and Lake Taupo, and around the lake itself, and

* See page 280.

the mountain group of Tongariro and Ruapehu, the reader must turn to Dr. Dieffenbach's book.* It would be beyond the limits of this work to describe at length a district of country which, however attractive to the tourist and naturalist, on account of its hot springs and other volcanic features, is too distant from the coast, and too deficient in soil of the most fertile nature, to be available for some time for settlement. We may, however, with that author—

“cast a retrospective glance over the country traversed, from the mouth of the Waikato to the borders of the Taupo lake. Of this the valley of the Waipa forms the most important part. This valley is bounded to the westward by a range of coast-hills, to the eastward by the range of Maunga-Tautari. It has an average breadth of about thirty miles, is even and flat in its lower part, especially up to the point at which the river Waipa joins the Waikato: higher up the country is broken and undulating, covered with a vegetation of fern and coarse grass, alternating with groves of the kahikatea-pine. The lower part rivals in fertility the best districts in the island, the valley being a volcanic table-land with much alluvium. It has the advantage of being sheltered from the gales which are so prevalent on the coasts of New Zealand, and would, therefore, be particularly adapted for grain, tobacco, safflower, and hops. It must, in fact, be regarded as the most sheltered region in the whole country; and if the vine and mulberry will grow anywhere in New Zealand, it must be here. Higher up the valley, and between the Rangitoto mountains and Taupo, the country will be available, when the increasing population creates a demand for land. Even where the country is pumiceous, it is covered with a coarse grass, which I feel convinced would be eaten by cattle, and better sorts of grasses would soon, by a little exertion, be spread over the surface. The soil near the watercourses, and in the little valleys, is excellent, and would produce everything needed for home consumption.

“The peculiar recommendation of the Waipa valley is its easy communication with the sea, as the river is navigable for sixty miles above its junction with the Waikato. Of the harbours on the west coast Waingaroa is perhaps the easiest of access from this valley, as there the coast-hills are lowest; but Kawia has a finer harbour, and nature has pointed out that place as a most advantageous site for a township. It must, moreover, not be forgotten that the valley

* Vol. 1, chapters xxiii. to xxvi. See, also, Bidwell's *Rambles in New Zealand*. London, 1842; and Wakefield's *Adventure in New Zealand*, Vol. 2.

of the Waipa has an almost uninterrupted water-communication with Waitemata, or Auckland.

"The natives who inhabit the Waipa belong to the tribe of the Waikato, and live in small but well-peopled villages.

"A great part of this country is not yet sold, but the chiefs have made numerous applications to Her Majesty's government on the subject.

"The Waikato river, although a considerable and deep stream after it issues from Lake Taupo, and towards its outlet after its junction with the Waipa, is of less consequence than the Waipa, as in the middle part of its course the navigation with canoes or boats, if not actually interrupted, is yet rendered difficult by rapids, and the country through which it flows is bad above Maunga-Tautari, being composed of a pumiceous or tufaceous gravel."

Dr. Dieffenbach also gives an excellent description of the chain of lakes already referred to at page 42, of the volcanic phenomena of the country in their neighbourhood, and of the numerous native inhabitants on their banks, as he made the circuit of Lake Taupo, and travelled from its N.E. corner to the Bay of Plenty. It is, however, necessary to remark, that he was mistaken in supposing the Manawatu and Rangitikei rivers to have their sources in the Tongariro group. The Manawatu rises on the E. side of the Ruahine range; and the Rangitikei on the W. side of the same range, or of a northern branch of it, called Kai Manawa.

We may again, however, advantageously quote our author, where he emerges from—

"the forest covering the hills which run along the east coast, and which separate the interior and comparatively open table-land from the sea." * * * "Towards noon, we emerged into open land." * * * "A splendid and most extensive prospect here burst upon our view: the range of hills which we had passed sloped gradually towards the east coast, spreading out into flat land near the sea-shore. Before us was the Bay of Plenty: to judge from its present appearance, it may well be said to have been prophetically so called by Captain Cook. To the northward the whole coast-line towards Witianga, or Mercury Bay, presented itself, at which place the coast-hills resumed bolder forms; the Mercury Islands also were visible: to the eastward was the island of Tuhua, or Mayor's Island, and several smaller rocky islets. More to the southward was Puhia i-Wakari, or White Island, emitting from time to time volumes of

white smoke; and to the southward our eyes followed part of the coast, which retained its smooth outlines.

"Before we arrived at the perfectly even land nearest the coast, we passed several swampy valleys of small extent, formed by the ramifications of the hills; and at last we followed the narrow crest of one of these ramifications down to the plain. The vegetation everywhere indicated the richest soil, and the most prominent plants were fern, flax, and veronica. Towards sunset, after a very fatiguing journey, we approached the homely-looking buildings of the Church Mission-station, surrounded with gardens, and a planted shrubbery of acacias, ricinus, and peaches, which was almost the only vegetation in the shape of trees which we saw, as for miles around the station there is no wood.

"The hills which I passed from Roto-rua* to Tauranga are tufaceous; they are of moderate height and undulating, and, although their surface is wooded, the depth of the vegetable soil and the tufaceous substratum leaves no doubt in my mind that the whole coast district, down to and even beyond Hawke's Bay, will in future times form a very rich country; and that the natural outlet of its produce, from its easy communication with the valley of the Waibo, or Thames, will be the Gulf of Hauraki.

"Tauranga has only been visited by small vessels of about two hundred tons. Although over the bar there are four fathoms water, the channel is very narrow, not being more than one hundred yards in breadth; and from its bending at a sharp angle, large craft would have great difficulty in entering it. Its southern headland is formed by a solitary conical hill, Maunga-nui, of about five hundred feet in height, which is connected by low land with the main. It consists of basaltic lava, large blocks of which lie on the sides and are strewn around its base. The northern head of Tauranga spreads out into low and level land; and some islands of considerable dimensions, and of the same structure and configuration as the mainland, are separated from it by broad channels of the sea. Although at present the principal anchorage for vessels is in the inner harbour, not far from the mission-station, I am inclined to think that the islands just mentioned might offer safe places for anchoring, even for larger vessels.

"The coast at Tauranga and on those islands is from forty to eighty feet above the level of the sea, and in the cliffs thus formed the geological formation is a yellow loam, surmounted in many places by beds of peat, containing a great quantity of undecayed wood, and averaging between four and six feet in breadth: the upper layer is a yellowish earth, or decayed pumiceous matter. The lignite, occurring in large quantities, must be of great importance to Tauranga, as there is no other fuel for several miles around.

* The largest and most important of the lakes, next after Taupo.

Dr. Dieffenbach says that Puhia-i-Wakari, or White Island,

"is a low island, still in volcanic activity, and produces a great quantity of sulphur. Already several cargoes of this mineral have been brought to Europe, where it has been sold for 8*l.* per ton. The sulphur is very pure, containing 90 per cent."

The natives inhabiting the shores of the Bay of Plenty are very numerous, and consist of two tribes, which are constantly at war with one another, or with the natives inhabiting the country of the lakes. There are Church of England mission-stations at Rotorua, Tauranga, and one or two other places in the Bay of Plenty, Hicks's Bay, at the East Cape, Poverty Bay, and Hawke's Bay. The native population is very great all along that coast, as far as the mouth of the Hauriri, (see page 89.) There are several roadsteads, and harbours for small craft, along the same coast; but there is no harbour available for large vessels in all weathers, between Mercury Bay and Wellington.

"Little of the land at Tauranga has been sold, with the exception of one piece to the Church missionaries, which is called Te Papa (the flat). The natives are not inclined to sell any land, and their number is sufficiently large to enable them to occupy and cultivate their beautiful district themselves, if a durable peace were established among the different tribes."

The range of coast-hills already described, at page 342, separates the valley of the Waiho, or Thames, from the east coast. Dr. Dieffenbach says he found the ascent very gradual. He continues:—

"I found that these coast-hills were comparatively flat on the top, while on their western slope, where they bound the valley of the Waiho, they terminated abruptly, like an artificial embankment of the table-land of the Thames. Before we descended into the valley we followed for awhile a rivulet about thirty yards in breadth, which takes its rise in the coast-hills, and then falls over their almost perpendicular western slope from a height of at least eight hundred feet, forming a magnificent cascade.

"The Maunga-Tautari bore S. 35° W. from this point.

"We soon reached the banks of the Waiho, which flows at a distance of about two miles from the hills in a S.E. to N.W. course; and crossed it to its left shore, its depth being about six feet in the

middle channel, and its current moderately rapid. Appearances indicated that the water was at its average height, and we had not had much rain during the last few days. Its width was about that of the Thames at Richmond, and on its banks strata of gravel were exposed more or less decayed, and either pumiceous or tufaceous. The point at which we crossed was about fifty miles from that at which the river falls into the Gulf of Hauraki. The vegetation consisted of fern, *Dracaena australis*, *Leptospermum*, with some rushes; here and there also a little grass. Although the soil was not alluvial, nor apparently very fertile, yet it seemed to be capable of considerable improvement by judicious cultivation. We halted here for the night, although fire-wood was rather scarce; the manuka shrubs, however, served us for fuel."

There are two large native villages near this spot, Matamata and Tapiri, containing a total population of 1500, part of whom are heathens, part Roman-catholic converts, and part Protestant.

"There was formerly a mission-station at Matamata, and the house, although half in ruins, is still standing; in the garden European fruit-trees, roses, asparagus, and other vegetables, have run wild, and the strawberry is spreading over the country. The station was deserted by the missionary in consequence of a misunderstanding between him and the natives.

* * * * *

"At Matamata the soil is very fertile, in consequence of the woods not having yet been destroyed. The plain is here well adapted for the cultivation of grain.

"The Piako river flows through the same valley, or, to speak more correctly, through the same low table-land, as the Waiho, or Thames. This table-land is between twenty and thirty miles broad, and is bounded to the eastward by the basaltic coast-hills already mentioned, which are called the Aroha (Love) Mountains, and do not exceed 1500 feet in height, and to the northward extend in an uninterrupted chain to Cape Colville. To the southward the valley continues to the neighbourhood of Rotorua, and the coast-hills are there connected with the Horo-Horo Mountains, in which the river Thames has its source. Throughout their extent these mountains are abruptly separated from the plain, and, in fact, bound it like an artificial wall. To the westward the valley of the Thames, or rather that part of the interior table-land which we call by that name, is connected with the table-land or valley of the Waipa and Waikato, and is bounded by the basaltic coast-range near the western coast. There is, however, a separation caused by the Maunga-Tautari Hills. The lower part of the valley of the Thames is separated from the Waikato by hills which run towards the Gulf of Hauraki.

Near the eastern slope of these hills flows the river Piako; at the western slope of the eastern coast-hills flows the Waiho: both are in the same valley, and discharge themselves into the gulf (of Hauraki) close together. The length of this table-land is nearly one hundred miles.

"The Waiho about forty miles from its embouchure is still a considerable stream, which would admit small steamers; the Piako is navigable for boats.

"The mountains which bound this valley are generally wooded, especially those to the eastward, from which the Waiho receives several tributaries of sufficient size to be useful for floating timber down from the hills. The valley itself is free of wood, except near the banks of rivers, where the forest principally consists of the kahikatea-pine. We passed several large raupo (*typha*) swamps, and crossed a tributary of the Piako, which was swollen by the late rains.

"The next day, in travelling down the valley, we passed many swamps, but a perfect drainage of them might be easily effected. The soil was better, and here and there it was covered with grass. Towards evening we reached the Piako river, which is about forty yards broad, and is deep and rapid.

"On the 28th we followed the right bank of the Piako, and came towards noon to two houses which had been built by the natives for a European who had purchased a large district of land from them. The Piako here closely approached the western hills. A little lower down was a small settlement, from which the natives soon brought a canoe, and conveyed us rapidly down the river, the banks of which were very beautiful. The river, being much swollen, reached at some points nearly to the foot of the banks, but in most places they appeared to be above the highest floods. They were slightly wooded, and patches of forest alternated with open spaces covered with a soft grass.

"To the westward the Piako was here closely bounded by the hills, which consist mostly of an amygdaloidal basalt, having on their surface a white exhausted clay. Wood is only found in some small valleys and ravines. Amongst the trees are kauri-trees, but these are rather scarce. From the top of these hills an extensive view opens towards the western coast, the lower part of the river Waikato, and the Gulf of Hauraki, the different islands in which are easily discerned.

"The Piako is a river of inconsiderable length, and comes from a hill in the neighbourhood of Maunga-Tautari, called Maunga-Kana.

"The shores of the Piako were grown over with brushwood, and the lower we descended the more we found the land on both sides overflowed, so that we actually sailed over what is in summer a swamp of raupo and flax. The tops of both plants reached above

the surface of the water. As the weather again became squally, our natives did not venture to leave the river, and we pitched our tents on some elevated ground, but were surrounded on all sides by the low swampy delta, intersected by deep arms of the river, in which the water was black. We started, however, early the next morning, with the ebb-tide, and in the afternoon reached in safety the mission-station at Puriri, on the right shore of the Waiho, and near its mouth."

On the east coast, between Tauranga and Cape Colville, and nearly due east of Coromandel Harbour, is a fine harbour called Mercury Bay, which was much frequented by Captain Cook, and has been since visited by store-ships of the navy, to procure cargoes of spars. H.M.S. Buffalo, however, dragged from her anchors, and was totally wrecked on the shores of this bay: the only anchorage with deep water enough for ships of large burthen being somewhat exposed to the violent easterly gales which occasionally take place. A creek of this harbour was called Oyster Cove by Cook, on account of the abundance of that fish found there. The land is steep, too, as the shores of the bay are formed by the eastern spurs of the same ridge whose western spurs abut on Coromandel Harbour.

With respect to the Climate of Auckland, Dr. Dieffenbach supplies a Meteorological Table (given on the opposite page) kept at Auckland, from 16th September, 1840, to 16th September, 1841; and he makes upon it the following remarks:—

"In Auckland easterly gales generally occur at the full and change of the moon, and continue for two and sometimes three days. In the winter months they sweep with great violence over the exposed situation of Auckland. From the east the wind veers to the westward, and soon moderates. The most settled weather is with southerly winds.

"Rains are very frequent, especially in the winter season. I have not the necessary data for comparing the quantity of rain with that in Cook's Strait, but from the scanty observations at my command I am induced to believe that rains are more frequent here than on other parts of the coast, which may perhaps result from the little distance between the western and eastern coasts. Frosts are rare in Auckland; in fact the thermometer never stood lower than 36° Fah-

*Meteorological Table, kept at Auckland, from 16th September, 1840,
to 16th September, 1841.*

Months.	Prevailing Winds.	Average Height of Fahren. Thermom.			REMARKS.
		Morn.	Noon.	Even.	
1840 : Sept. latter part	S.-Westerly.	Deg. 56	Deg. 59	Deg. 55	Five days squally and showery weather. Two days stormy, with heavy rain from the eastward. Eight days fine weather.
Oct.	S.-Westerly.	56 57	53 60	54 56	Nineteen days fine weather. Three days stormy, with rain from the eastward. Nine days gale; squalls and heavy rain from the westward.
Nov.	S.-Westerly.	57 61	61 66	h3 53	Eighteen days fine weather. Two days stormy, with rain from the eastward. Ten days fresh gales, squalls, and showery weather from the westward.
Dec.	Easterly.	62 60	69 72	58 60	Two days strong breezes and rain. The rest of the month very fine weather, with regular land and sea breezes; the sea-breeze setting in from the north-east in the forenoon, and veering to the southward in the evening.
1841 : Jan.	First part N.-Easterly. latter part Southerly.	70 70	75 76	64 61	Ten days fresh breezes, squalls, and showers. The rest of the month light winds, sea and land breezes, and very fine weather.
Feb.	Southerly and S.-Westerly.	66 69	73 74	63 59	Eight days stormy, with rain; the rest of the month light winds and fine weather.
Mar.	Easterly.	67 65	70 69	59 51	Ten days stormy, with rain; the rest of the month brisk breezes and fine weather.
April	First part Easterly, latter part W.S.W.	59 54	68 63	56 54	Two days heavy gale from the eastward, and much rain. Seven days squally and showery. The rest of the month fine weather.
May	S.-Westerly.	55 60	63 61	56 52	Three days easterly gale, and heavy rain. The remainder of the month brisk westerly breezes and frequent showers.
June	S.-Westerly.	48 60	56 58	50 51	One day easterly gale and heavy rain. Nine days fine weather. The remainder of the month strong breezes, squalls, and heavy showers from the westward.
July	S.-Westerly.	46 47	55 56	46 46	Seven days fine weather. Five days stormy and rainy from the eastward and south-east. The rest of the month strong breezes, squalls, and rain from the westward.
Aug.	First part N.-Easterly. latter part S.-Westerly.	49 50	59 58	55 55	Three days stormy and rainy from the north-east. Seven days westerly gales, squalls, and showers. The rest of the month brisk breezes and fine weather. On the night of the 20th, the heaviest thunder-storm that had been experienced since the formation of the Settlement.
Sept. first part.	N.-Easterly, Westerly.	51	58	50	First five days light showers and fine weather; three days heavy gale, and much rain. Six days light winds, and fine, with occasional showers. Two days strong north-easterly breeze, ending with much rain.

renheit. The surface of the land being comparatively level, no impediment is given to the easterly and westerly breezes; the summer heat is therefore very moderate, and the thermometer only once rose as high as 84°. Many of the valleys in the neighbourhood of the town, which are sheltered from the gales, enjoy a mild and agreeable climate.

“Earthquakes, which are sometimes felt in other parts of the island, have not been experienced in the Hauraki Gulf by the European settlers, nor could I learn from the natives whom I questioned on the subject that there existed any tradition of their having occurred in this region.”

The following is an extract on this subject from the *New Zealander* of September 8, 1847:—

“We give below a tabular view of the temperature of the air, &c., during the three winter months, from observations made at the office of the Surveyor-General, and by a gentleman resident in the town:—

Winter months.	Mean Temp.	Mean Highest.	Mean Lowest.	Highest.	Lowest.	Rainy Days.	Showery.	Dry and bright.	Fall of Rain.
June	50°	59°	42°	63°	39°	5	10	15	6.23
July.....	49°	55°	42°	60°	36°	7	17	7	7.54
August ...	51°	60°	43°	64°	39°	3	11	17	2.68
3 Winter Ms	50°	58°	42.3°	64°	36°	15	38	39	16.45

“The month of July has been unusually wet and boisterous: there were six heavy gales of wind, and much otherwise tempestuous weather, in its course. The winds, however, followed, during the rest of the winter, their usual cycle from E. to S., except during the month of August, when there was an unusual prevalence of E. and S.E. winds.

“Notwithstanding, such is the genial nature of our climate that vegetation has been scarce checked: almond trees flowered in the latter end of July,* and set their fruit in August; and the fruit of the loquat, or Japan medlar, is ripening in a garden in the town.

* This was also the case at Nelson in the same winter.

Strawberries are also ripe; and vines shot in August, and showed their flower-buds in warm situations."*

The soil of the districts round Auckland has been amply described by Dr. Dieffenbach, in the passages above extracted. This author is confirmed by all persons who have travelled in that part of the country, in his frequent statements, that the country on which the Kauri pine has once grown is quite unfit for cultivation. It appears to be generally a cold whitish clay, on which nothing will grow but manuka and stunted fern.

The following are the points in which the Natural Productions of this district differ from those enumerated in former chapters:—

I.—VEGETABLE PRODUCTIONS.

Indigenous.

Kauri. (*Dammara Australis*.) This magnificent tree, which grows to a very great size, and furnishes most valuable spars even to the British navy, only grows in that part of the North Island which lies north of $37^{\circ} 36'$ S. latitude. Indeed, on the western coast its southern boundary is the north shore of Manukao harbour, there being only a dozen or so of stunted individuals at Kawia. Dr. Dieffenbach says:—

“It generally grows in the neighbourhood of the sea-coast, but not in parts exposed to the spray, and on the sides of ravines; it is, in fact, entirely confined to hilly situations. Large districts within the above-mentioned boundaries have formerly been covered with kauri-forest, but are now bare; and its destruction, through waste and negligence, is now going on in other districts. There is no proof that the kauri ever grew to the southward of its present boundaries, although conflagrations of forest have taken place throughout the island.

“The kauri is the only cone-bearing pine in New Zealand; all the others bear berries, and are therefore to be classed amongst the very numerous family of the Podocarpi, or Taxideæ.

* See also *N. Z. Journal* of Nov. 7, 1846, No. 180, p. 283, for a brief account of the weather at Auckland from January, 1841, to March, 1846.

"The resin which the tree exudates is very hard, and forms large solid masses at the base of the tree. It is generally of a whitish colour, but, through age, and as it would seem by exposure to the sea-water, it assumes the gold-yellow colour of amber, becomes transparent, and very closely resembles that substance."

For some time, it was supposed that this resin, or gum, of which plenty is found in the ground even long after the forest has disappeared, would furnish a valuable article of export: but it has not hitherto repaid in England even the cost of its collection in the Colony. The Americans, however, appear to find some use for it, with which we are not acquainted; for sometimes traders of that nation buy considerable quantities at remunerating prices.

The trees sometimes grow to the height of 90 feet before any branches shoot out. Besides its value for spars, the timber is useful for the same purposes as that of the pines Nos. 1, 2, and 3 of the list at page 140.

Young specimens of this tree may be seen growing at Messrs. Knight and Perry's Exotic Nursery, King's Road West, Chelsea.

Puriri. (*Vitex littoralis*.) This tree is also peculiar to the Northern districts, or at least very scarce further South. It is thus described in the Appendix to *Annals of the Diocese of New Zealand*:—"This tree, from its hardness and durability, has been denominated the New Zealand Oak. The wood is of a dark brown colour, close in the grain, and takes a good polish: it splits freely, and works well, and does not injure from exposure to damp, twenty years' experience having proved that in that time it will not rot, though in a wet soil under the ground. For ship-building, it is (like the Teak, which belongs to the same Order,) a most valuable wood; for the injury which it has received from being perforated in various places by a large grub, peculiar to the tree, does not essentially diminish its worth for the timbers of ships, or for the knees of boats. It grows from 15 to 30 feet without a branch, and varies from 12 to 20 feet in circumference."

Pohutukaua. (*Metrosideros tomentosa*.) This is another variety of the Rata (No. 10, p. 142). Again quoting from the same source:—"An ordinary-sized tree, inhabiting usually the immediate sea shore, where it is readily distinguished among other plants by the brilliancy and abundance of its crimson flowers, with which are often mingled those of the *Loranthus tetrapetalus*, a parasitical plant, which attaches itself to the tree. The wood of this tree is exceedingly hard, close-grained, and heavy, and is equally valuable for ship-building, and in the manufacture of implements of husbandry. It usually enlivens the shores of the northern island with its blossoms in December."

Dye-woods. The same work mentions the following, only the two first of which are known to possess the quality, but all of which are abundant, in the Southern districts:—

"Tanekaha.*	}	Yields a black or brown dye from the wood and bark.
<i>Phyllocladus trichomanoides</i> ...		
Hinau†	}	Yields a black dye from wood and bark.
<i>Elcocarpus Hinau</i>		
Tupakihi.‡	}	Ditto. ditto.
<i>Coriaria samentosa</i>		
Tuhuhi.	}	A blue black dye from wood and bark.
<i>Gualtheria antipoda</i>		
Mako.	}	Ditto. ditto.
<i>Friesia racemosa</i>		
Whakou.	}	A blue dye from wood and bark."
<i>Entelea arborescens</i>		

II.—MINERAL PRODUCTIONS.

Copper is found and worked on the Great Barrier Island, by a Company formed in Sydney. The ore is said to be very rich, and procured at comparatively little expense. No authentic accounts, however, of this mine have yet been published.

At Hicks's Bay, near the East Coast, veins of this mineral are also said to have been discovered.

Tin. Governor Fitzroy wrote officially, in 1844, that this mineral had been found "in the immediate neighbourhood of Auckland, close to the sea" (see p. 33): but since that time, no further accounts of such a discovery have been published.

Sulphur. Already mentioned as abundant on White Island in the Bay of Plenty (page 359). It might be collected, also, in great quantities at many spots in the neighbourhood of the hot lakes and springs in the interior.

Manganese is mentioned in many letters and publications as an article of export; but without specifying the locality in which it exists.

Land has been alienated to private individuals in the Auckland district by Crown Grants founded on three kinds of claims: 1. Lands claimed to have been purchased from the natives previous to the establishment of a British Government in New Zealand. 2. Lands claimed to have been purchased from the natives during the time when Governor Fitzroy waived the right of pre-emption secured to the Crown by the Treaty of Waitangi, on which that establishment of the

* See p. 143.

† See p. 142.

‡ Called *Tutu* in the South; see p. 148.

British Government was founded, and in infringement of Acts of Parliament, allowed the Crown Lands to be alienated for sums far below the required minimum price of £1 per acre. 3. Lands purchased by auction according to Act of Parliament. Such alienation in all three cases furnished some revenue to the Government. Under the first head, fees were collected, by the Commissioners appointed to investigate these claims, on the examination and decision of each claim; and the sums thus accruing were carried to the general revenue of the Local Government. Under the second head, fees were payable to the Crown, at rates, for one portion of the land of 10s., for another of 1d., per acre. Under the third head, the land was sold by public auction,* the minimum upset price being in no case less than £1 per acre. In both these cases the proceeds were applied, in certain proportions, to Surveys, Public Works, and Immigration.

It is difficult to gather any complete account of the whole quantity of land thus alienated, and of the whole revenue thus obtained; but the following extracts from the Reports of the Colonial Land and Emigration Commissioners during the last few years, serve to furnish some information on the subject.

“With regard to New Zealand, the most important subject connected with the settlement of its lands, and indeed with its future prosperity, is the adjudication of the claims of parties professing to have acquired land in the islands before they became a Colony of this country. A Commissioner for the adjustment of these claims was sent from this country in the month of May, 1841, but as yet a report of his proceedings has not been received. The principles on which these claims should be adjusted were first settled by an Act of the Governor and Council of New South Wales, passed in August, 1840, which was afterwards replaced by an Act passed in New Zealand itself, embodying almost all the same provisions. The Governor has since reported his intention to

* Some exceptions were made in favour of Government Officers, who were allowed to purchase previously-selected allotments to a certain amount each, at the average price afterwards paid for the surrounding land at the public sale.—See *Par. Papers, Colonial Land and Emigration Commission*, 24th August, 1843, 621, p. 20.

introduce a new Bill on the subject, but it has not yet reached this country. In the meantime, two towns have been occupied and laid out by the Governor, one called Russell, on the Bay of Islands, and the other Auckland, situated in a more central position in the Northern Island, and which is to be the Capital of the Colony. Returns have been received of the first land sale at Auckland, from which it appears, that no less a sum was realised than 24,275*l.* for 49 allotments, containing only 44 acres, being at the average of 552*l.* per acre."—*Par. Papers, Colonial Land and Emigration, 12th August, 1842, 567, pp. 9, 10.*

"No further sales of Government lands to individuals have yet been reported since those returned in 1841; viz.:—

	Acres.	Purchase-money.	Average per Acre.
April, 1841 . 44 0 38½ (chiefly Town Lots.)		£24,275 17 9 .	£548 14 4
		Exclusive of a balance of 4985 <i>l.</i> 8 <i>s.</i> 1 <i>d.</i> , to be paid in Sydney, and a remission of 200 <i>l.</i> to a naval officer.	
September, 1841 . 560 2 2 (chiefly Suburban Lots.)		£4501 14 10 .	£8 0 7

"There is reason, however, to believe that additional sales to the extent of 10,000*l.* took place during 1842.

"No object can be more important to the satisfactory progress of this colony than an early disposal of the claims of the original settlers to land. We are glad therefore to see that, after an interval during which no progress had been made, 104 claims were reported in October, 1842, to be determined, and that active measures have since been adopted for continuing the settlement of claims. Those first mentioned comprised 42,382 acres, awarded at rates varying chiefly from 5*s.* to 20*s.* an acre, and at the general average for the whole of 6*s.* 3*d.* per acre."—*Ibid., 24th August, 1843, 621, p. 19.*

"Three vessels were sent out under our direct superintendence in 1842, taking 779 passengers. The reports received up to the present time notify the arrival of two of these vessels. There were 37 deaths on the voyage, chiefly, it would appear, of young children, amounting to a rate of 6½ per cent. on the whole number of passengers. This rate was much higher than in the Van Diemen's Land ships; and we should ascribe the difference in great measure to the circumstance that the people were drawn from parts of Scotland where distress had been prevalent, and in some degree also to the lesser experience at the outports, and the difficulty of an equally effective superintendence at so great a distance from London.

* Calculated on the payment made to the natives, as proved before the Commissioners of Land Claims.

"Ninety-two boys selected from the establishment at Parkhurst have been sent to New Zealand. We made arrangements for their passage, and they sailed from Cowes on the 3rd June, 1842, in the ship 'St. George.' In a despatch of the 2nd November, 1842, the acting Governor has reported their arrival; he states that he has taken steps with a view of distributing them as apprentices among settlers, whose character entitles them to the confidence of the Government, and that a guardian will be appointed to visit the boys from time to time, and watch over their interests."*—*Ibid.*, p. 22.

"At the date of our last Report no complete accounts had been received of the amounts realised by sales of the public lands in each year. We are now enabled, by later returns from the colony to supply fuller information on this head. In 1841 the receipts were shown in our former Report to amount to 28,777*l.* The subsequent sales have been as follows:—

Nature of Lot.	1842.			First Quarter of 1843.		
	Extent.	Amount.	Average per Acre.	Extent.	Amount.	Average per Acre.
	A. R. P.	£ s. d.	£ s. d.	A. R. P.	£ s. d.	£ s. d.
Town lots. . . .	14 2 6	3209 1 1	213 8 8	2 2 24	309 0 0	116 12 1
Suburban lots	601 1 4	3138 19 11	11 16 7	157 2 29	379 3 6	2 10 1
Country lots .	3628 0 22	3660 19 9	1 3 2	159 2 15	180 9 10	1 2 8
Total . . .	4243 3 32	10,009 0 9	—	319 3 28	868 13 4	—

* This experiment failed signally. The following extract describes its result:—"Ninety-one juvenile delinquents from the seminary at Parkhurst, in the Isle of Wight, sent out by the Government, had arrived at the capital. Some of these were to be liberated at once; others were to be bound to a certain term of apprenticeship. It was not long before these ingenuous youths showed their skill as instructors of the natives. I have heard it more than once described, by visitors from Auckland, that there were known places of rendezvous outside the town, where the boys used to meet the natives coming into town to trade at the stores, and teach them how to pilfer with secrecy and comfort. A meeting was held at night, as the natives returned to their settlements, for the division of booty; and the *Maori*, unable to keep the secret any longer, bitterly complained that the young thieves invariably managed to cheat or rob them of all that they had stolen on joint account. The natives have probably become weary of getting so small a share of their own plunder; as some of the Parkhurst seedlings have lately been caught breaking into the houses of the settlers, independently of their native allies."—*Wakefield's 'Adventure in New Zealand,'* vol. ii., p. 315.

"The extent of land occupied under license at the close of 1842 was nine acres. During the year one lease only, of a small part of an acre, was granted.

"The number of acres surveyed in the year was 17,104. The surveyor-general was unable to state the exact average cost per acre.

* * * * *

"On the important subject of completing the settlement of the land claims, we are glad to see that the Commissioners of Claims looked to being able to reach an early termination. By a Report from them, forwarded by the Governor in June last, it appeared that, of 1037 claims referred to the Commissioners, 554 had been reported on up to the 31st of May, 1843; 304 were in course of investigation, and expected to be decided by the end of November, and the remaining 179 the Commissioners expected would be easily examined and reported on by the ensuing summer.

* * * * *

"In our last Report we had occasion to notice the arrival of two out of three ships despatched by us with emigrants in 1842, being those which sailed from Scotland. We are now able to state that the third of them also, the 'Westminster,' which sailed from England, has been reported; and we are happy to find that of 218 persons on board, only one adult and two children died, and that the emigrants were described by the immigration agent as extremely well suited to the wants of the colony."—*Ibid.*, 2nd April, 1844, 178, pp. 6, 7.

"The total amount realised from sales of lands between the 22nd November, 1842, and 30th September, 1843, was 3928*l.* 16*s.* 10½*d.* We regret to state that the land returns from this colony are unavoidably incomplete, and supply very little information, owing to a fire that destroyed the public offices in which the necessary documents to make up these returns were consumed."—*Ibid.*, 20th March, 1845, [617] p. 6.

"The land sales in 1842 were given in the General Report of 1844. The following statement shows their amount in 1843, the last year for which returns have been received:—

Nature of Lot.	Extent.			Average Price per Acre.	Amount realised, calculated from preceding Columns.		
	A.	B.	P.	£ s. d.	£ s. d.		
Town lots.....	2	3	24	116 0 8	336	13	11
Suburban lots.	291	0	0	2 2 3½	615	6	10½
Country lots...	2094	0	0	1 0 3	2120	3	6
Total	2387	3	24	...	3072	4	3½

"Three licences to cut and saw timber were granted in 1843, the rent received being 15/. The number of acres surveyed in 1843 was 67,221, the average cost being about 11d. per acre. The estimated amount of waste land belonging to the Crown, available for settlement, as stated by the Surveyor-General, at the close of 1843, was 182,054 acres.

"It may be convenient to supply a brief summary of the information relating to the practical working of the Land Regulations issued by the late Governor, to which we referred in the last General Report.

"On the 6th December, 1844, there were 34 deeds of grant, comprising in all 17,352 acres, lying at Auckland ready for delivery to the respective grantees, and 5 deeds, comprising 1593 $\frac{3}{4}$ acres, had already been issued.

"The following lands had been disposed of in exchange for other land in remote parts of the colony, the claims to which had been confirmed:—In the town of Auckland, 13 exchanges, the quantity given being about 8 $\frac{3}{4}$ acres; in the suburbs, seven exchanges, quantity given 172 $\frac{1}{2}$ acres; in the parish of Karaka, two exchanges, quantity 570 acres; and in the parish of Titirangi, seven exchanges, quantity 523 $\frac{1}{2}$ acres, showing that in all 29 exchanges had been made, and that the quantity of land thus obtained by the parties was about 1274 $\frac{3}{4}$ acres."—*Ibid.*, 30th April, 1846, [706] p. 11.

"No returns of land sales have been received from this colony for the years 1844 and 1845. In 1846 a few lots were sold for 340l., the moiety of which would be applicable to emigration. This sum has not been deemed sufficient to render it expedient, at present, to renew emigration."—*Ibid.*, 30th April, 1847, [809] p. 15.

"From 1842 to 1846 the disposal of land in New Zealand was regulated by the Australian Land Sales Act, 5 and 6 Vict. c. 36. In 1846 this Act was repealed, so far as relates to New Zealand, by the Act 9 and 10 Vict., c. 104, sect. 11. The object of the repeal was to remove the restriction which the Land Sales Act opposed to the settlement by exchange or other similar arrangement of the various and complicated land claims which had grown up in New Zealand. The general principle, however, of the Land Sales Act was maintained and re-established by the Royal Instructions, an extract of which will be found in the Appendix. The operation, however, of those Instructions have since been suspended in the southern province, in consequence of the arrangement with the New Zealand Company to which we have above referred.

"In our Report of 1845, we alluded to a measure which had been adopted by the then Governor of New Zealand, to facilitate the acquisition of land by individuals, by waiving the Crown's right of pre-emption of native lands, on the payment into the public treasury of sums amounting to 10s. an acre. This arrangement was promulgated on the 26th March, 1844, and received from Lord

Stanley a qualified approval. But a further relaxation, established by a proclamation, dated 14th October, 1844, by which the whole payment into the public treasury, on the waiver of the Crown's right of pre-emption, was reduced from 10s. to 1d. per acre, was disapproved by Lord Stanley; and the present Governor was subsequently instructed by your Lordship immediately to revoke both proclamations, and to bring all claims under them to a close at an early period, subjecting them to the strictest scrutiny consistent with good faith. The proclamations in question were accordingly revoked, and a list of the claims preferred under them has been recently received from Governor Grey. The number of those claims is 148, of which 47 arose under the proclamation of 26th March, 1844, and 101 under the proclamation of 14th October; and the whole extent of land claimed is something less than 100,000 acres. It seems doubtful, however, whether the conditions of the proclamations were complied with in the majority of these cases, and it is, therefore, probable that the extent of land eventually alienated under these proclamations will be less.

"The amount of land sold in New Zealand during the year 1846 was as follows:—

Nature of Lot.	Extent.			Average Price per Acre.			Total Amount of Purchase-money.		
	A.	R.	P.	£	s.	d.	£	s.	d.
Town Lots . .	2	3	1	213	6	6½	589	7	2
Suburban Lots	27	2	37	5	14	4½	158	11	4
Country Lots .	..	..		..	..		..	..
Total . . .	30	1	38	24	11	10¾	747	18	6

Ibid., 30th April, 1848. p. 13.

In a recent Parliamentary Paper, (*Emigration*, 19th May, 1848, 345, pp. 12, 13,) there is a Return in which some of the matters described in the above extracts are summed up in a tabular form. It moreover appears from it that the total cost per head of the Emigration to Auckland was a little less than £15 per head. It also contains the following account of the "amounts expended from the land revenue on other objects than Emigration:"—

	1840.	1841.	1842.	1843.	1844.	Totals.
	£	£	£	£	£	£
Survey Department	902	5336	8501	2800	3270	20807
Payments for Land	368	1446	2231	130	1021	5196
Aborigines	219	902	1550	1560	2073	6304
Roads and Bridges .	..	78	529	546	718	1871
Totals	1489	7762	12811	5036	7082	34178

The *price and rent of land* of course varies, as at Wellington, with its quality and situation. In the *New Zealander* of November 13th, 1847, there is an account of two farms, of about 80 acres each, on the north shore of Waitemata Harbour, opposite the town of Auckland, having been put up to public auction, and knocked down at 11s. 3d. and 11s. per acre. In the same paper of the 17th November, 1847, the following lands are advertised to be sold for 250l.:—

- 10 Town lots, containing 3 acres, 1 rood, 11 perches.
- 2 Suburban " 111 acres.
- 3 Country farms " 358 acres.

In both these cases, the word *farms* probably does not mean that anything had been done towards reclaiming the land; nor is it known whether the land so sold and offered for sale was land of average quality in the respective classes.

The *cost of clearing* is estimated as follows in the "*Colonization Circular of 29th July, 1848, No. 8, Fifth Edition*," which is issued by Her Majesty's Colonial Land and Emigration Commissioners. Those parts of the publication which relate to New Zealand are of course applicable chiefly to the Auckland district, to which the Commissioners' colonizing operations are confined:—

"Fern-land, 10s. to 1l. 10s.; wood-land, 3l. to 10l. per acre, according to the size of the timber. This does not include the breaking up of the soil."

In the same publication, the following is given as a *List of Prices* in August, 1847:—

CLOTHING.—Men. Coloured shirts, 2s. each; flannel do., 5s. to 6s. do.; baize do., 10s. to 16s. do.; flush trousers, 7s. to 10s. φ pair; common do., 4s.; moleskin do., 8s. to 10s.; do. jacket, 8s. to 10s. each; straw hats, 2s. to 4s. each; boots, 8s. to 10s. φ pair; shoes, 6s. to 10s. φ pair; worsted stockings, 2s. φ pair; duck frocks, 4s. each; vests, 3s. 6d. do.; handkerchiefs, 9d. to 1s. each.

CLOTHING.—Women. Shifts, 2s. each; Petticoats, flannel, 5s. to 6s. do.; calico, 6d. φ yard; gown, print, 6s. each; bonnet, 4s. to 6s. do.; shawls, 2s. to 10s. do.; caps, 1s. to 4s. do.; shoes, 6s. φ pair; stays, 4s. do.; merino dress, 15s. each; flannel, 1s. 9d. φ yard; blankets, 16s. to 25s. φ pair; sheets, 6s. do.; sheets, cotton, 6d. φ yard; rugs, 4s. to 6s. each; mattresses, 8s. to 12s. do.

PROVISIONS, ETC.—Wheat, 5s. to 7s. per bushel; bread, 1st quality, 5d. 2-lb loaf; flour, 15s. to 20s. φ 100 lb; rice, 3d. φ lb; oatmeal, 5d. φ lb; tea, 2s. to 3s. do.; sugar, 4d. do.; coffee, 1s. to 1s. 2d. do.; meat, fresh, beef, 8d. φ lb; pork, 7d.; butter, fresh, 1s. 6d. φ lb; ditto, salt, 1s. 5d. to 1s. 7d. do.; cheese, English, 9d. to 1s. 6d. do.; ditto, Colonial, 1s. 3d. do.; salt, 2d. to 6d. do.; potatoes, 2s. to 3s. φ cwt.; brandy, 18s. to 24s. φ gallon; beer, 2s. do.; candles, 1s. φ lb; lamp oil, 2s. 6d. per gal.; soap, 4d. φ lb; starch, 6d. do.; blue, 6d. do.; tobacco, 1s. 6d. to 2s. 6d. do.

Wages at the same date:—

MALES.—Agricultural labourers, 20*l.* to 30*l.* φ annum;* butchers, 4s. φ day;+ bakers, 4s. to 6s. do.;+ brick-makers, 4s. to 6s. do.;+ bricklayers, 5s. to 7s. do.;+ blacksmiths, 3s. to 5s. do.;+ carpenters, 7s. to 10s. do.;+ cabinet-makers, 6s. to 7s. do.;+ cooks, 15*l.* to 20*l.* φ annum;* coopers, 4s. to 5s. φ day;+ domestic servants, 15*l.* to 30*l.* φ annum;* glaziers, 4s. to 5s. φ day;+ gardeners, 5s. do.;+ house-servants, 12*l.* to 16*l.* φ annum;* labourers, common, 2s. 6d. to 3s. 6d. φ day;+ masons, 5s. to 7s. do.;+ Maori labourers, 2s. do.;+ painters and glaziers, 4s. to 5s. do.;+ printers, 4s. to 5s. do.;+ plasterers, 4s. do.;+ reapers, good, 3s. do.;+ sawyers, 6s. φ 100 feet;+ shoe makers, 4s. to 6s. φ day;+ shipwrights, 5s. to 6s. do.;+ bullock-drivers, 20*l.* to 30*l.* φ annum;* tailors, 5s. to 7s. φ day.+

FEMALES.—Cooks (plain), 15*l.* to 25*l.* φ annum;* dairy maids, 12*l.* to 20*l.* do.;* house-servants, 12*l.* to 20*l.* do.*

The following are some Statistical Details relating to Auckland.

In the *New Zealand Government Gazette* of the

* With board and lodging.

+ Without board and lodging.

23rd June, 1847, the following Official Return is given of the Population of Auckland:—

YEARS.	1843.	1844.	1846.
Males .	1621	2296	2836
Females .	1183	1671	1819
Total .	2804	3970	4655

It is not stated whether this return includes the military garrison, which consists at present of the 58th regiment of foot. During the year 1847, too, about 500 veteran out-pensioners, constituted into a regiment of *New Zealand Fencibles*, have been sent to Auckland at the public expense, with their wives and families; but no accurate account of their total number is yet published.* Many of these emigrants being from Ireland, and most of the men infirm and aged, much sickness and mortality took place on their passage out. In one ship, the "Clifton," *forty-six* deaths occurred out of about *three hundred* passengers, the principal diseases being small-pox and typhus fever. The local papers complained that sufficient precautions had not been taken against the spread of these diseases in the colony. The *New Zealand Fencibles* have been quartered in two military cantonments in the environs of Auckland, one of which is named Howick, in honour of Earl Grey, the originator of the plan.

The native population of Auckland is stated in the same return as only 234 in the end of 1846. But a very large proportion of the whole native population of New Zealand, which is said to amount to upwards of 100,000 souls, inhabit the districts lying north and

* For an account of the plan under which this Pensioner Colonization has taken place, see *Par. Papers presented in 1847*.

south of the isthmus on which Auckland stands. They have, on several occasions of festival, assembled to the number of 6000 or 7000 within two or three miles of Auckland. No regular census has ever yet been made of them. The coasting vessels belonging to them were returned, on the 1st September, 1847, as numbering 45, measuring in the aggregate 600 tons; 20 vessels belonging to the Bay of Plenty, 12 to Auckland and the Thames, 2 to the Bay of Islands, and 6 to Coromandel Harbour and the neighbourhood.

St. Paul's Church at Auckland has been built at a cost of between 3000*l.* and 4000*l.* The present resident clergyman is the Rev. J. F. Churton.* The Bishop of New Zealand resides chiefly at Auckland. Soon after his arrival in New Zealand, he commenced a Collegiate Institution at the Waimate (near the Bay of Islands) for the training of candidates for holy orders, catechists, and schoolmasters, comprising also elementary schools for the children of natives and British settlers. After the college had been in operation for two years at the Waimate, the Bishop, in 1844, removed it to a site about four miles from Auckland, near the Tamaki river. The following extract gives an account of it:—

“ In a letter, dated September, 1846, the Bishop thus describes the College :—

“ ‘ The buildings at present completed are the school dormitories, in which we are all now living—the kitchen (now used both for kitchen and hall). By the side of this, the hospital, with stone foundations and wooden superstructure, has risen to the height of the eaves. Further on, materials are lying ready for the native schools. Three little wooden cottages, on the other side of the road, are the dwellings of the college servants. In the valley is the college barn, now used for the native schools, but shortly to be applied to the purposes for which it was designed.’

“ A number of little thatched buildings of native reeds are occupied by some of the students—the rest being with the Bishop on the hill.

* Salary, 325*l.* per annum.

" 'Our walls of volcanic stone, two feet thick, defy the winds, which whistle round us in our lofty situation. Though the hill on which we are situated is of volcanic origin, yet the fire seems to have died away, as is evident by thirteen or fourteen extinct craters which may be counted from the college grounds. In front, through my latticed casement window, I have a noble sea view over the bays and islands, among which the *Flying Fish* cruises on her missionary errands. On the right, eight acres of wheat are just now beginning to be green, when your English harvest is safely stacked. This is the work of our native schools, and has occupied forty spades, great and small—the adults and boys all working—the older digging, the younger breaking up and pulverizing the soil. On the left is the English valley, where the English schools have subdued from the waste two acres of garden ground, in which vegetables of many kinds and several flowers are just beginning to show their spring shoots. Our little army of seventy spades, working regularly two or three hours a day, soon changes the appearance of the land, with the aid of the college team of six bullocks, to break up the stubborn surface, and make it more tractable for hand labour. Next year we hope to eat no bread that is not the fruit of our own land.' "

"The college has recently been visited by Nene, or Thomas Walker, the native chief, who fought on the English side in the north, and who appears to have considered the building in the light of a fortress. 'It was amusing,' the Bishop writes, 'to see him when he came to visit us, viewing the buildings, and pointing out where the loop-holes ought to be broken out in the walls, and then he said, '*Ekore horo*,' 'it will not be stormed.' You may be sure that I shall not desire to make the experiment, but shall do my best to maintain peace with all men.'"—*Annals of the Diocese of New Zealand*. 1847. p. 223.

In the Appendix to the same publication, at p. 228, there is the following account of the

"DIOCESE OF NEW ZEALAND.

"METROPOLITAN—His Grace the Archbishop of Canterbury. *Bishop of the Diocese*—George Augustus Selwyn, D.D.; consecrated October 17, 1841; landed in New Zealand, May 30, 1842. *Examining Chaplain*—The Ven. Archdeacon Wm. Williams, B.A.^a *Domestic Chaplain*—Rev. W. C. Cotton, M.A.* *Inspector of Native Schools*—Rev. S. Williams.^a

* Returned to England in 1848.

^a The gentlemen so marked are in the employment of the Church Missionary Society.

"ARCHDEACONRY OF WAITEMATA.—*Archdeacon*, (vacant.) St. Paul's Church—Rev. J. F. Churton. 1. Rural Deanery of Hauraki: Orere—Rev. W. C. Dudley, B.A. 2. Rural Deanery of Waikato: *Rural Dean*—Rev. R. Maunsell, B.A., Waikato Heads.^a

"ARCHDEACONRY OF THE WAIMATE.*—*Archdeacon*—The Ven. Henry Williams, Paihia.[†] The Waimate—Rev. R. Burrows.^a Kaikohe—Rev. R. Davis.^a Kaitaia—Rev. J. Matthews.^a

"ARCHDEACONRY OF TAURANGA.†—*Archdeacon*—The Ven. Alfred Nesbit Brown, Tauranga.[‡] Tauranga—Rev. C. P. Davies.^a Rotorua—Rev. T. Chapman.^a

"ARCHDEACONRY OF WAIAPU.§—*Archdeacon*—The Ven. Wm. Williams, Turanga.^a Rangitukia—Rev. C. L. Reay, M.A. The Wairoa—Rev. J. Hamlin.^a Ahuriri—Rev. W. Colenso.^a

"ARCHDEACONRY OF KAPITI.—*Archdeacon*, (not appointed.) *Rural Dean*—Rev. Octavius Hadfield.^a Wellington—Rev. R. Cole, M.A. Waikanae— ——— Wanganni—Rev. R. Taylor, M.A.^a Taranaki—Rev. W. Bolland, B.C.L. Nelson—Rev. H. Govett,[¶] Rev. H. Butt.

For further information relating to the College of St. John's, Bishops Auckland, the reader is referred to *Annals of the Diocese of New Zealand*, 1847, Appendix, p. 229, and to the *New Zealand Church Almanac*, printed at the press of that college, and of which copies may probably be procured at the shops of such booksellers as sell especially religious and missionary publications.

There is no account of other schools at Auckland.

As to the Cultivation of Land, the most recent return that can be found is one given in the *New Zealand Journal*, of May 9, 1846, No. 166, p. 100. This states 1996 acres to be in cultivation in the *northern settlements*, including probably the Bay of Islands, Hokianga, &c., in the year 1844. At the same date the Live Stock in the *northern settlements* is stated to have been 227 horses, 1768 horned cattle, and 1936 sheep. It is believed that these numbers have not been very greatly increased during recent years.

* Head-quarters of the Church Missionary Society. See p. 304.

† Chairman of the Church Mission in New Zealand.

‡ Bay of Plenty.

|| Since dead.

§ At the East Cape.

¶ Now at Taranaki.

In the *Government Gazette*, already mentioned, the following statements for Auckland are given for the year 1846:—

		£
Value—Imports		81523
„ Exports		46312
Customs' Revenue		11155
Shipping—Inwards	Ships. 72 Tons. 14397	} not including coasters.
„ Outwards	83 16905	

The following is an Abstract of Revenue and Expenditure of Auckland during the Quarter ending 31st December, 1847:—

REVENUE.			
Ordinary.			£ s. d.
Customs			5191 15 2
Fees and Fines:—			
Supreme Court	£16	1 1	
Local Court	27	12 0	
Resident Magistrate's Court.....	7	1 6	
Police Court	80	17 10	
			<hr/> 131 12 5
Fees for Registry of Deeds			55 6 9
Post Office Collections			250 1 4
Miscellaneous Receipts			4 19 0
			<hr/>
Total Ordinary			5633 14 8
<i>Crown Lands.</i>			
Fees on Land, Claims and Crown Grants	56	12 4	
Waivers of Pre-emption	409	16 3	
Occupation Licenses	0	18 0	
Proceeds of Sale of Crown Lands	—		
			<hr/>
Total Crown Lands.....			482 6 7
<i>In Aid.</i>			
Parliamentary Grant	4082	10 0	
Land Claimants' Debenture	164	14 6	
			<hr/>
Total in Aid			4247 4 6
			<hr/>
Total Receipts.....	£10,363	5 9	

EXPENDITURE.		£	s.	d.
Establishment of H. E., the Governor	191	18	0	
Colonial Secretary's Department	421	12	10	
" Treasurer's " 	212	11	6	
Audit Department	112	10	0	
Survey " 	261	0	2	
Public Works	251	4	0	
Roads	1716	6	11	
Land Commission	377	3	1	
Customs' Department.....	272	19	6	
Post Office " 	120	15	8	
Medical " 	92	4	8	
Harbour " 	124	8	7	
Government Brig, Victoria.....	595	14	11	
" Schooner, Albert.....	64	1	2	
Armed Police Force	827	9	6	
Aborigines	164	1	2	
Supreme Court	340	0	0	
Attorney-General	114	3	4	
Local Court	56	5	0	
Resident Magistrate's Court	95	10	0	
Coroner	18	11	0	
Sheriff and Gaol.....	162	5	8	
<hr/>				
Ecclesiastical	200	0	0	
Schools	85	0	0	
<hr/>				
Stationery and Printing.....	66	4	8	
Charitable Aid	20	4	7	
Postages	42	7	0	
Late Military operations	26	5	6	
Militia	18	14	0	
Interest	628	6	5	
Miscellaneous.....	77	0	0	
		£7756	19	7
Disbursements on account of Wellington	22	6	8	
" " New Plymouth	8	11	5	
" " Akaroa	6	0	0	
" " Russell	56	10	9	
" " Hokianga	72	0	0	
Total Expenditure		£7922	17	5

For further information relating to the Revenue and Expenditure, &c. of Auckland, see Appendix B.

There is a Savings Bank at Auckland, which has been established one or two years: and the Union Bank of Australia established a Branch there in the year 1848; the Manager is Mr. Alexander Kennedy.†

Two newspapers are published, each twice a week, at Auckland;—the *New Zealander* and the *Southern Cross*.

Owing to the impossibility of consulting a complete file of the recent *New Zealand Government Gazette*, it is difficult to furnish, more completely than follows, a Directory for Auckland:—

Governor in Chief of New Zealand.. Sir George Grey, K.C.B.
Secretary to General Government.... The Hon. C. A. Dillon.
Chief Justice W. Martin, Esq.
Commander of the Forces Major-Gen. G. D. Pitt, K.H.

PROVINCE OF NEW ULSTER.

Lieut. Governor (during absence } ..*+Major-Gen. G.D. Pitt, K.H.
of Governor-in-Chief) }
Colonial Secretary.....*+ Andrew Sinclair, Esq.
Native : "+ J. J. Symonds, Esq.
Colonial Treasurer and Receiver- }
General } ..Alex. Shepherd, Esq.
Attorney General*+ W. Swainson, Esq.
Registrar of Supreme Court, and }
Registrar-General of Births, } ..+ T. Outhwaite, Esq.
Deaths, and Marriages }
Surveyor-General+ C. Wybrow Ligar, Esq.
Collector of Customs+ Henry D'Arch, Esq.
Sheriff.....+ Percival Berrey, Esq.
Auditor-General+ Charles Knight, Esq.
Colonial Surgeon+ J. Johnson, Esq.
Inspector of Police.....+ T. R. Atkyns, Esq.
Sub-Inspector ditto.....+ W. B. White, Esq.
Resident Magistrate+ T. Beckham, Esq.
Justices of the Peace (besides those marked above)—Lieutenant-Colonel R. H. Wynyard, C.B., commanding 58th regt.; Major H. Matson, 58th regt.; Major J. Gray, Commanding Royal N. Z. Fencibles; Captain J. H. Laye, 58th regt.; Captains W. H. Kenny, C. H. M. Smith, and A. Macdonald, Royal N. Z. Fencibles; H. W. Mahon, M.D.; J. Coates, W. Brown, F. W. Merriman, W. Donnelly, A. Kennedy, J. Scott, H. C. Lawlor, L. M'Lachlan, W. E. Cormack, W. S. Grahame, and E. Mayne, Esqrs.

* Members of the Executive Council.

† Justices of the Peace.

CHAPTER XII.

Country North of Auckland.—Dr. Dieffenbach the best authority. —The Land's End.—Mount Carmel.—Awaroa River and Valley.—Kaitiaia.—Large Native Population.—Land alienated.—Hilly Range.—Mangonui Harbour.—Putekaka River.—Wangaroa Harbour.—Marble.—False Hokianga.—Hokianga.—Wet Climate.—Lake Maupere.—Thermal Springs.—Waimate.—Church Mission.—Bay of Islands.—Harbour.—Town-sites.—Statistics.—Wairoa River.—Kaipara Harbour.—Tributary Rivers.—Kaipara proper.—Portage to Auckland.—Climate of the Northern Extremity of New Zealand.

WITH respect to the district of country lying to the north of the isthmus between Auckland and Manukau harbours, the reader anxious for full information with regard to it should consult Dr. Dieffenbach's work, already so often referred to. Chapters XII. to XIX. inclusive, of the 1st volume, consist of an account of that part of the islands. A few extracts are as much as the space will allow in this publication.

Beginning from the north:—

"This estuary (Parenga-renga) is not laid down in any chart, although it is an extensive one; it must be placed at what is called Sandy Bay in the general charts, in latitude $35^{\circ} 35'$ S., and in $172^{\circ} 57'$ E. longitude. The entrance to it is narrow, but is two fathoms deep at low water. The tide rises ten feet. I must, however, observe that, in standing out of the harbour in our schooner during the ebb-tide, I observed some rocks in the entrance, about six feet under water, and vessels must therefore ascertain the exact channel previously to entering.

"The harbour, or the estuary, as it should more properly be called is from six to eight square miles in extent, and sends several branches in different directions for some distance inland, all of which are navigable for boats at high water. Good land is situated at the head of these channels; one of these is only a little distance from Ka-powairua on the northern coast. The best anchorage in the harbour is within the inner northern head, where there is five fathoms water.
* * * * Wild pigs have overrun the northern extremity of the island, where they feed upon fern-root and sea-weeds. A great quantity of fish is taken in the harbour, especially skates, herrings,

mackarel and snappers; and the natives were preserving them in great quantities by simply drying them in the sun.

"The whole extremity of the island, from Parenga-renga to the northward, is called by the natives Muri-wenua (the land's end), and from my description it will be seen that there is not much to entice European settlers. There is, however, land fit for some small farms, with excellent soil, sufficient wood, and great facilities of water-carriage. But it is to be expected that the remainder of the original tribe will return to their native place, and at the same time it is probable that some one of the private purchasers will occupy his land, and give the natives a stimulus for improving their condition. A considerable number of sheep would find easy sustenance on the hills, more so indeed than in most other parts of New Zealand, as the herbage here is low, and therefore better adapted for sheep than a high and vigorous one."—Chap. xii. p. 207.

"At the narrowest part of the island, from Parenga-renga to about eight miles to the South of Mount Carmel, the land consists either of low hills or swamps, and is almost useless on the east coast, where it is lined by a long sandy beach, here and there interrupted by bluffs of basaltic rock, which are verdant with groups of the hardy pohutukaua tree (*Metrosideros tomentosa*). The vegetation of the hills is brown and low, almost wholly consisting of fern and manuka. On the western coast the land wears a better aspect, where no sand hills intervene. * * * Everywhere springs of most excellent water prove the moisture of the climate, even in the height of summer. In consequence of this abundant moisture, the natives have many plantations, which are in a thriving state.

"Towards Waro, a high dome-like promontory, the land becomes excellent. This mountain is the commencement of a continued chain of similar hills, which run along the western coast to the southward, their formation being different varieties of trap.

"Mount Carmel itself is not connected with any chain of mountains, but forms an isolated hill, and rises to the height of about 500 feet above the sea. This mountain protects a deep inlet, which, at the head, branches off into several shallow channels, and forms a perfectly sheltered harbour for vessels of the largest burden, with anchorage close to the eastern shore: the entrance to this harbour is not more than forty or fifty yards broad. The mountain is similar in its structure to the main range of hills, and its appearance is such as to indicate clearly its formation below the level of the sea. The base is basalt and clinkstone; the summit forms a narrow ridge, from which steep buttresses run out towards the sea on one side, and towards the harbour on the other. On the top, and to seaward, this hilly group is barren, although, from the resin found here, we have unequivocal proofs that it was once covered with kauri. Towards the harbour the natives have cultivated portions of

the steep ridges; these plantations alternate with pleasant bushes and groves to the water's edge.

"Although the surrounding country is not a favourable district for colonists, this harbour may afford shelter to vessels which draw too much water to lie with safety in the Bay of Rangaunu.

"Some miles to the southward of Mount Carmel the land at once assumes a very different aspect. The raupo-swamps, and the low barren elevations of the soil between them, give way to an extensive alluvial district, which stretches from the eastern to the western coast, and follows the serpentine course of the Awaroa, a river which empties itself into the estuary of Rangaunu, a shallow and extensive arm of the sea, with an open though an intricate channel for moderate-sized vessels. I entered the harbour at low-water, in the schooner, which drew eight feet, and, not knowing the channel, we grounded several times, although there is but little danger in fine weather, as the bottom is soft and muddy. We anchored about three miles from the north head, sheltered by a spit of sand, and then went twenty miles farther up the river in a boat, to the farming establishment of a Mr. Southee. On a second visit we took the schooner up to the same place, and anchored close to the house of Mr. Southee, where the river was not much broader than the length of our little craft. But the tide presses the fresh water back eight feet above its usual level, and it is then of considerable depth. It is one of those rivers the banks of which consist only of their own alluvium, the channel winding in a serpentine course; it has little fall, but the tide renders it always navigable. The banks are perpendicular, and rise two or three feet above the level of the spring-tides; towards its outlet, however, the land is low and swampy, and is overflowed when winds from the sea raise the water to a higher level, or when floods, occasioned by long-continued rain, come down from the interior.

"At first we passed swamps covered with mangroves, sometimes only showing their heads above water, and affording shelter to flights of ducks and other aquatic birds. When the banks become higher, the land is perfectly level; the soil, as is seen by the section of the river banks, is in some places a stiff black loam, in others a lighter earth, to all appearance admirably adapted for grain. The country is perfectly open in many places, and only covered with tupakihi (*Coriaria sarmentosa*), fern, high flax, and here and there some spots of grass. In other parts the ti (*Dracæna australis*), the stem of which seldom exceeds half a foot in thickness, forms a jungle.
* * * The higher we went, the more agreeable was the scene. On the shores were native settlements, with long seines hanging out to dry, and many natives at work mending canoes and their fishing apparatus, for the season is approaching when the shark is caught in great numbers. Here and there fields of potatoes, kume-

ras, melons, and pumpkins, neatly fenced in, and kept extremely clean, show all the vigour of vegetation for which New Zealand is so remarkable. Their owners welcomed us as we went along, but did not evince any pressing curiosity. * * * Early in the evening we arrived at Southee's farm; it is situated on both banks of the river, which here forms by its serpentine course several natural paddocks. The maize, growing ten or twelve feet high, and the fields of yellow wheat, bowing under the weight of the grain, showed what the land is capable of producing. Cattle were grazing about, and the well-stocked farm-yard bore testimony to an industry such as is very rarely met with amongst the numerous settlers of all classes who for several years have had almost the whole of the land partitioned amongst themselves, as the generality of them have bought the land for the purpose of speculation, instead of cultivation.

"Mr. Southee has about 300 natives around him in his immediate neighbourhood, who cultivate bits of land interspersed with his own, and who, for cheap wages, work for him in various branches of husbandry, and thus procure for themselves those European commodities for which they have acquired a taste. He gives them articles to the value of 2*l.* for every acre they clear. The mode which he adopts in clearing the land is to cut down all brush-wood and vegetation in summer, and to burn it when it has become dry. Immediately after this he sows the ground with turnips, and, when these have been gathered, with potatoes, which require only a little hoeing. The roots and stumps are then sufficiently rotten, and the ground can be easily tilled and prepared for grain.

"From Mr. Southee's house the river turns, with many windings, towards the western coast. Higher up its course it acquires greater fall, and in many places is obstructed by snags. Its banks are of the same good description, and are here and there clothed with groves of kahikatea, rimu, and totara pines, or of tarairi (*Laurus tarairi*) and puriri, until it arrives at Kaitaia. A mission-station and native settlement is situated about eight miles from the western coast, on a hilly eminence, an offset of the chain of hills which run from near this point through the interior. Between this chain and the range of western coast hills which I have above mentioned, flows the Awaroa, having its source near that of the Mango-muka—a branch of the Hokianga river, from which it is separated by the Maunga Taniwa, a remarkable pyramidal peak which towers above the chain of hills, being nearly 1500 feet high.

"Throughout its course the valley of the Awaroa is capable of being made very productive, as the soil is extremely fertile: from Kaitaia it narrows to the breadth of one mile. Several miles below Kaitaia the river is joined by another, coming from the eastern hills in the neighbourhood of Mangonui in Lauriston Bay, and at the point of junction scarcely inferior in size to the Awaroa. Above

Kaitaia the Awaroa is only passable by canoes, in which the natives carry down food from their plantations to their principal settlement at Kaitaia. They prefer the upper part of the valley for cultivation, as indeed they usually do; and their fields are very extensive, and kept in good order. From Kaitaia to the western coast the land is equally good. In some places there is excellent grass. A wooden bridge over the river has been built by the natives, under the guidance of the missionaries; and if we cross it, and pass to Waro on the western coast, several valleys are seen stretching from the western hills into the plain, in most of which natives reside. To the northward of Waro low ridges run parallel to the sea-coast, small creeks flowing between them, and the light soil there is eagerly sought after for the cultivation of kumeras. At one of these creeks, the Wai-mimi, there is an extensive bed of lignite. About two miles to the northward of Kaitaia is a small fresh-water lake, containing large eels and two kinds of small fishes; crawfish is also found there.

"The natives form the tribe of the Rarewa, and their whole number is about 8000, including all those who inhabit the valley of the Awaroa. Of all the natives who are under the influence of the missionaries, this tribe is the most advanced in the arts of civilization. * * *

"They are a quiet, hard-working people, and they have, for a very small payment, cut a road thirty-two miles long through the primitive forest, between Kaitaia and Waimate, in the neighbourhood of the Bay of Islands; they have also cut roads in the neighbourhood of their own village. During my stay I saw them reap wheat and plough several acres of land, and the missionaries encourage them to exchange their former unwholesome food of decayed maize and potatoes for bread. Several of the natives have one or two head of cattle and horses; and I have every reason to believe that here at least the missionaries will encourage their acquiring them, in order to dispose of the increase of their own stock.

"The village has quite an English appearance; a large Church, with a steeple of kauri boards, has been constructed almost entirely by the natives; gardens, with roses, are before the houses, and at the foot of the hill wheat alternates with vines, with hops, which thrive extremely well, and with various fruit-trees and vegetables: there are also several patches planted with tobacco. * * *

"The hills which stretch from Kaitaia, through the interior of the country, are wooded, and only a few miles from Kaitaia they are covered with kauri-forest. Near the entrance to Rangaunu Bay are very fine groves of this valuable tree, mixed with tanekaha, rata, tawai, and other excellent timber-trees. An arm of the sea, which is joined here by a fresh-water creek, the Mangake, and which flows through a considerable extent of forest, affords facilities for floating the timber down, or for establishing saw-mills.

"The alluvial land, as already observed, is for the most part fit for immediate cultivation: the herds of cattle and horses belonging to the missionaries are in excellent condition, and show that there is a sufficiency of pasturage.

"In the neighbourhood of the mission-station there is found a white, hard, and very closely-grained sand-stone, which would prove an excellent building-stone.

"The hills near the western coast, on the left bank of the Awaroa, consist of basaltic masses, of rounded forms and of moderate height. They are covered with a mixed forest; no kauri is found there; and all the land to the westward of the Awaroa must be considered as excellent, notwithstanding its hilly character. The hills on the right bank, which extend through the interior of the island, are composed of a soft argillaceous slate, reposing upon a base of hard volcanic rock, phonolithe, or clinkstone. Where the claystone and the phonolithe are in contact, a transition from the hard condition of the latter to the soft state of the former is observable to the eye of the geologist, and displays an instructive phenomenon. Very near Kaitaia, about 150 feet above the level of the valley, a slaty marl crops out in perpendicular slabs in the depressions of the hills, and is an excellent material for improving the soil of certain kinds of fields, and is, in fact, extensively used in agriculture.

"A bridle-road leads from Kaitaia for thirty-four miles through the forest: it was cut by fifty natives for as many blankets, and was completed in six weeks. * * * The days of such cheap work are now gone by in New Zealand. At a distance of seventeen miles and a half on this road is situated Maunga Taniwa.

"The whole valley of the Awaroa cannot contain less than 120,000 acres of arable land. In respect to the quality of the soil, the facility of cultivation, as well as of water communication, the abundance of excellent wood and of other building materials, the district is one of the most favoured in New Zealand. A great portion of the land has been purchased by a few private individuals; but if the intentions of Government, of not allowing more than 2500 acres to any one individual, is strictly carried into effect, a great part of these purchases will come back to the natives, and, without injuring the interests of the latter, government will have no difficulty in acquiring a fine agricultural district. Kaitaia itself, which is eight miles from the western coast, and six from Southee's station, is a desirable place for a provincial town, as it is in the centre of the district, and in a healthy situation; it stands on an eminence commanding a view of the whole district, and is especially adapted to serve as a central point and market-place for the surrounding native population."

"To the southward of Kaitaia the interior of the island is occupied by a range of hills, which sends its branches both eastward and westward, forming narrow valleys that serve as river-courses. The

sea enters into several inlets on both coasts, where it is joined by the various rivers, if the mountain-streams deserve that name, and forms several harbours. The general height of these hills is less than 1500 feet above the level of the sea; this height, however, they attain in the Maunga Taniwa. The top of this pyramid, which runs almost to a point, offers an excellent view of the surrounding land. An old *Metrosideros* stands on the summit, overshadowing the heavy growth all around: the natives have cut steps into its stem to afford an easy ascent. From this place we overlook the whole northern extremity of the island as far as the Bay of Islands, and it will afford an excellent trigonometrical station. We can here perceive that the different ramifications of the chain do not form valleys, but ravines, which only widen towards the estuaries of the sea. The whole is clothed with a thick forest, the dark verdure of which is uninterrupted, except by the bright green of a raupo-swamp in the bottom of the ravines, or by the brown hue of the fern, which covers some districts, especially towards the coast. The forest is a mixed one; that is to say, there is no prevailing kind of trees, and only towards Mango-nui, Wangaroa, and Hokianga are groves of kauri. * * *

“ The formation of which this hilly ridge is composed, so far as the luxuriant vegetation permits of its being observed, is a yellowish argillaceous rock, mixed in fragments with the vegetable mould. It is of various degrees of hardness, and in most cases may be observed in conjunction with compact basaltic rock, which appears sometimes protruding on the surface, sometimes laid bare in the river courses. The pebbles in the rivers are whinstone, of different colours, and varying in point of hardness, and this rock seems to be everywhere the lowermost, and to compose the greater bulk of the mountain, having in its formation variously acted upon and changed the covering argillaceous rock. Both on the eastern and western coast other kinds of rocks may be seen,—marly limestone, marble, in junction with slates, conglomerates, sandstones, and lignite, of which I shall have occasion to speak more fully when describing the places in which they occur. The flat alluvial land extending on the right shore of the Awaroa to Rangaunu Bay is separated from Lauriston Bay by an offset from this hilly ridge, which juts out into the sea, and forms Kari Kari, or Knuckle Point. These hills are low, covered in some places with a little wood, in others with fern. The first place which claims our attention in Lauriston Bay is Oruru, where a river, which takes its rise on the eastern slope of Maunga Taniwa, and which can be entered by a boat, empties itself into the sea. On both sides of this river is excellent level and clear land, which rises slowly towards Maunga Taniwa. Oruru is separated by low hills covered with a stiff white clay and a scanty vegetation from a similar valley, eight miles to the northward, and out of which

another river runs into the sea. The road from Oruru into the harbour of Mango-nui leads over a succession of steep hills and narrow fertile ravines. The distance is about ten miles. * * *

"The greater part of the land (at Oruru) has been sold, chiefly to Mr. Ford, who was formerly the surgeon attached to the missions.

"The harbour of Mango-nui is not laid down in any chart; vessels rounding Point Surville should keep close to the southern shore of Lauriston Bay, and will then have no difficulty in avoiding the reef of rocks which runs off Oruru in a north-easterly direction, and which is the only obstacle to a safe and easy entrance into the harbour. The channel is not above 100 yards wide, but is very deep. Several whalers have at different times resorted to this harbour for provisions and repair. In the narrow part of the channel a vessel can keep close to the southern shore; and, entering the basin, haul close round the southern head, and anchor in five fathoms water about a quarter of a mile off that head, where a small number of vessels are perfectly sheltered. The rest of the estuary is a large basin, spreading out into mud flats at low water, with a channel sufficiently deep for large boats, near the northern shore, up to its head, which is here entered by a river that takes its rise in the hills separating the harbour of Wangaroa from Mango-nui. An arm of the latter stretches towards Oruru, and unites with this river behind an island of moderate size which forms the head of the harbour. This island conceals mangrove flats, which lie on both sides of the channel.

"The river Pu-te-kaka is entered by the tide for about eight miles, and thus far a boat can go up it. It flows through an undulating open country, the elevations alternating with large swamps, which might be easily drained, and would then form good agricultural land. Higher up, the view is shut in by the hills towards Wangaroa, which are about fifteen miles distant, and are covered with kauri-forest, as are also the hills to the west and north. The land up to the base of those hills is devoid of trees. At this point the Pu-te-kaka is only a small creek, but several times during the year it swells sufficiently to float large logs of kauri into the harbour. * * *

"About six miles from its outlet into the harbour the Pu-te-kaka is joined by another river, which flows through a fine cultivated valley. The north side of the harbour is hilly, and consists of a red ferruginous loam, interrupted in some places by basalt and Lydian stone. The southern head of the harbour is a narrow peninsula, with table-land on the top; towards Point Surville the coast is hilly, with occasional narrow valleys, most of which are wooded towards the sea-coast.

"There are about thirty Europeans living in this harbour, chiefly sawyers and storekeepers, and a few natives. The latter have their fixed habitations at Oruru, and only come here for the purposes of trade and work. * * * They have sold the whole of the harbour

and surrounding country to different people; but the chiefs at Kaitai deny that they had any right to do so, and have asserted their own claim to the territory by selling the harbour to government.

"Mango-nui is well situated for a small town, as it commands a sufficient extent of agricultural and timber land to ensure success. There is an easy communication with the different native settlements in Lauriston Bay; and a good path leads to Kaitaia, which might easily be converted into a road.

"The harbour of Wangaroa has already obtained some celebrity by the catastrophe which happened to the *Boyd*, and the murder of her crew and passengers by the natives, in the year 1809. It is situated about twenty-five miles to the northward of the Bay of Islands. From Point Surville to the entrance of this harbour the coast is clifty and steep, consisting of fragments of volcanic rock very firmly cemented together into a conglomerate. The entrance to the harbour is formed by towering perpendicular rocks of the same description, and is only about 150 yards broad. Pohutukaua-trees and others overhang these black walls, and form a very picturesque contrast with them. The entrance looks as if the solid rocks had been rent asunder by an earthquake, and the steep opposite sides had undergone a continued friction before they parted. Deep fissures penetrate the coast, and high cubical masses are piled one above another in-shore to the height of several hundred feet. The most remarkable is Waihi, or St. Peter, a cluster of these solid rocks on the northern head. The water in the entrance is of great depth close to the rocks, and there is no sunken rock or other hidden danger below the surface. This volcanic conglomerate overlies a formation of volcanic ashes, which contains carbonized remains of fern and wood. Nearly opposite Waihi a dome-like elevation crowns a pyramidal wooded hill, called Hakiri. * * * To the northward are the hills which separate Wangaroa from Mango-nui, and which are called Tara Tara. The south side of the harbour is likewise rocky, and consists of much-fissured wakke and basalt. The harbour itself is very spacious and deep, possesses anchorage for the largest fleet, and is sheltered from all winds. As a harbour it ranks with the best in New Zealand, and the beauty of its scenery is nowhere surpassed. There is, however, but little available land in its immediate neighbourhood: to the northward the sea forms some inlets with flats, which are overgrown with trees; and kauri-timber is found on the neighbouring hills, but at some distance from the coast, all that grew nearer the sea having already been cut down or destroyed. Several vessels have here been laden with timber, and craft of small burden have been built here. About 2000 natives live in the immediate neighbourhood of this place, part of whom have become Protestant, part Roman-catholic converts. Mission-stations for both confessions are established here, and the natives seem to be in a fair state of advancement.

* * * * *

"Besides the missionaries, about a dozen other Europeans, mostly sawyers, live in different parts of this district; but, with the exception of Mr. Shepherd, the Church missionary, no one has made any attempt to cultivate the soil.

"About two miles from the south head of Wangaroa harbour a beautiful red and variegated marble is found on the coast, of a close, fine grain, and in sufficient quantity to become of importance for domestic architecture at some future time. This marble occurs in connexion with chloritic and argillaceous slates, and seems to belong to the transition or secondary series, if we may judge from its mineral character, for it does not contain any fossils.

"The entrance to the harbour can be easily found, being opposite to the northernmost of the Cavalles, a chain of islands chiefly of basaltic formation, and extending along the coast towards the Bay of Islands.

"We now return to the western coast. If we travel from Kaitaia towards the source of the Awaroa, we see its valley separated from the coast by undulating hills of basaltic structure, and covered with forest. Where the basaltic rock is found, the soil is generally good; and I have no doubt that in the course of time these hills will all be cultivated, and thus increase the area which I have assigned to the district of Kaitaia. I do not include in this the hills in the middle of the island, to which Maunga Taniwa belongs: they are too steep ever to be anything but forest-land. The coast from Waro to Wangape, or False Hokianga, fifteen miles to the northward of Hokianga, is bold and rocky. Wangape has never been surveyed. Its entrance is about 200 yards wide; it then expands into a fine basin, surrounded by low wooded hills, but appears to afford no shelter for shipping.* The natives have extensive plantations, and belong to the tribe which lives at Hokianga.

"Passing from Kaitaia to Hokianga, the bridle-road ascends nearly to the summit of Maunga Taniwa, and then proceeds in a different direction. We leave it here by turning to the westward, and, descending rapidly, soon arrive in a valley, through which a mountain-stream flows, which in its upper part has formed alluvial land about five or six miles broad and eight miles long. This river is the Mangamuka; its length, from Maunga Taniwa to the point where it joins the estuary called the Hokianga, is about twenty miles. At the upper part of the valley there is flat and fertile alluvial land, bounded on all sides by wooded hills; the river, running in a bed

* The entrance to this harbour is dangerous, from its similarity to that of Hokianga in outward appearance, while the water is so shallow as to be accessible only to very small vessels. The New Zealand Company's ship *Tory* was nearly lost here in 1839, and in 1846, H. M. brig *Osprey* was totally lost; both having mistaken the entrance for that of Hokianga.

of whinstone pebbles, at some places deepens, at others shoals, and its banks bear signs of frequent floods. Lower down its depth becomes more equal, and for about ten miles from its embouchure into the Hokianga harbour it admits vessels of moderate burden. This lower part is bounded on both sides by steep hills covered with kauri-trees, but the best of them have been cut down near the water's edge. So much has been said about Hokianga, that in speaking of it I may confine myself to a few words. The estuary is almost wholly bounded by steep hills, which, after the kauri has been cut down, will not repay the trouble of cultivation. But the largest timber-trees, those fit for the Royal Navy, are nearly all gone: those that remain are good for logs, but not for spars; and therefore the timber-trade alone is not sufficient to repay the settlers. The estuary is joined by several fresh-water tributaries, which have a little cultivable land on their banks; this is especially the case at the principal stream, and at the Waima near the entrance into the harbour; but the alluvial land bears a very small proportion to that which is clayey and useless. The good land is in the hands of the natives. They have cultivated small patches, and that portion of the land which they do not make use of might advantageously be occupied by a small number of European peasantry. But the nature of the country forbids any other kind of settlement. The harbour, however, although a bar harbour, can be entered by large vessels, and as there is a pilot on the heads there is no danger. There are already 200 Europeans settled on the Hokianga, traders and sawyers, who found ample employment as long as fine spars and cheap labour were to be obtained. But all this is now greatly changed.*

"The first Wesleyan mission-station was established at the Hokianga, and has been so effective that nearly all the natives are Christians. There is a printing-press at Mangungu, from which a few prayer-books have been issued. A Roman-catholic Missionary also resides here during a period of the year. The hills in the neighbourhood of Hokianga consist of argillaceous slate, covered with a white stiff clay, characteristic of the kauri-land. In several places basaltic rock is found underlying the slate.

"Hokianga is noted for its wet climate, and the thick fogs which envelop it long after the sun has risen above the horizon, whilst in other parts of the island they are scarcely ever met with.

"After emerging from the hills which surround Hokianga on all sides, and which are still covered with a primitive forest of pines, we descend into a comparatively level country; and about fifteen miles from the head of the harbour, we leave the bush, and the country is open to the Bay of Islands. We may regard the whole country to the westward and northward of the Bay of Islands as a volcanic table-land. If we enter this table-land from Hokianga,

* Many have migrated to Auckland, since Heki's rebellion,

we have to our right the Lake Maupere. In its immediate neighbourhood is an ancient crater, which forms a regular cone, with the exception that the western margin has fallen in. Large angular pieces of a very scoriaceous and vesicular lava of different colours, and amygdaloidal basalt, cover its sides and base. With much labour, the natives have collected these rocks into mounds, and have cultivated the black soil between them. The lavas and the crater closely resemble those in the Auvergne. Lake Maupere is about one square mile and a half in extent, and apparently of great depth. In some places its borders are steep, and consist of basaltic lavas. Several conical craters, similar to that above mentioned, only with more perfect funnels in their centres, lie to the eastward of Waimate. The interiors are covered with vegetation, and all appear to have long been in a state of repose.

"A few miles to the southward of Waimate are some curious thermal springs.

"The surrounding country, especially to the southward, has to a singular degree the barren and desolate aspect so often observed in places celebrated for their salubrious mineral waters. Scarcely any verdure is seen on the hills of the neighbourhood: it is only in the ravines that the uniform brown tint of stunted fern is interrupted by the green of some sheltered groves.

"Waimate, which is situated about fifteen miles to the westward of the Bay of Islands, has a very European aspect. A Church has been built, and in its neighbourhood are the houses of the missionaries, surrounded by rose-trees, and other plants of foreign extraction. There is a great want of flowering plants in New Zealand, and every introduction of such improves the landscape. In the neighbourhood are the poor and slovenly huts of the natives, forming rather a painful contrast. However, when I saw the natives in church on the Sunday, most of them were cleanly dressed in the European style; and the work of *Europeanizing* them seemed to be gradually progressing.

"Waimate was chosen many years ago as the agricultural settlement of the Church Missionary Society, and has been ever since the residence of an ordained clergyman. Although convenient as a mission-settlement in many other respects, being in the common road from the Bay of Islands to Hokianga, and from the southern to the northern districts of the island, its immediate neighbourhood has no great pretensions in an agricultural point of view; and the produce of the missionary farm has always been at a very low ebb. In fact, a great deal of the land has been relinquished, for the very sufficient reason that it yielded nothing at all. The soil is a very light dusty volcanic earth. This is the reason why the natives have no plantations here, but prefer the ravines intersecting the plain, or go nearer to the groves, or to the base of the hills which bound the table-land, where the soil is more substantial. Some

parts of the table-land towards the Keri-keri have a very superficial stratum of vegetable earth, and are strewed over with lapilli of ferruginous clay; where these are found the soil is almost useless. Good and bad land, indeed, alternate, the latter rather prevailing. On the banks of the Keri-keri and Waitangi rivers, which discharge themselves into the Bay of Islands, the land is of the best description; but even there masses of scoriae have to be cleared away, which will require a great expenditure.

"The Waitangi forms a picturesque cascade near its outlet into the Bay of Islands. Below the fall, the basaltic rock in the banks of the river shows somewhat of a columnar structure.

"The neck of land which separates the Waitangi from the Keri-keri is claimed by Mr. Busby, the former consul of New Zealand, and contains some very good land and pasturage.

"A few miles to the northward of Waimate is the Keri-keri river, where there is a mission-station. The intervening land is very inferior, and especially around the station; but higher up the Keri-keri it is decidedly good. The Keri-keri is a small stream, forming a fall about two miles above the station, opposite to which there is a rapid, presenting a barrier to the further ascent of the tide. Small vessels can come up as high as this point. The estuary of the Keri-keri has the appearance of a broad river, and presents some fine sites for farming establishments on its borders.

"The waterfall of the river Keri-keri has a very picturesque effect. The river is only about twenty yards broad, but the fall is over a basaltic escarpment, ninety-five feet in height. This basalt overhangs a soft formation of a grey volcanic sand, which has been washed away from under it for about thirty feet, so that one can walk behind the falling cascade. The spray of the waters gives rise to a vigorous vegetation all around, and this place was a favourite spot of that excellent botanist, Mr. Cunningham. There is indeed, a greater assemblage of the flora of New Zealand in this neighbourhood than in any other place so near a shipping-place.

"There are now no natives whatever living on the Keri-keri; and it seems, therefore, useless to keep up the station. Most of the land on the banks of the river is the property either of the mission or the missionaries.

"Below the station the basis of the soil is basaltic. It seems as if an immense crust of this rock had been elevated to near the surface. To the northward of the Keri-keri, as far as Wangaroa, the land is mostly hilly, covered, as I have already observed, in the middle of the island, with primitive forest. Near the coast almost the whole forest is gone: herds of cattle and horses feed well upon the young fern and shrubs, although there is no grass-pasturage. Sheep looked in a rather bad condition; but the principal objection to sheep farming in New Zealand is on account of the seeds of the

Acoena sanguisorba,* a herb spreading all over the country: these attach themselves so firmly to the soil, that they cannot be separated in the washing. About half-way between Wangaroa and the Keri-keri, on the outskirts of the forest, we pass an agricultural settlement of a European. Some natives live in the fertile ravines which run off from the hills towards the sea-shore: off the latter are many rocky islets. The shore forms several small bays, of which Mataute is one of the finest. On the slope of the hills, which surround this bay like an amphitheatre, an excellent hard, greyish marble crops out. The bay is about two square miles in extent. On its shore is a native settlement.

"Between Mataute and Wangaroa there are two other bays of similar description—Waio and Tauranga. In the latter, a marly limestone in horizontal strata appears on the side of the hills; it breaks into slabs about an inch thick.

"On the Bay of Tauranga there is some land cultivated by a European.

"Along the coast from the Bay of Islands to Wangaroa is found in many places an excellent reddish and variegated marble, alternating with whinstone and slates.

"From Tauranga a path leads to Wangaroa, through a beautiful and fertile valley, sheltered by the hills of the coast from the winds; in it flows a small river, which discharges itself into the harbour of Wangaroa already described."

The Bay of Islands is one of the finest harbours in New Zealand: and, previous to the regular colonization of the country, was more resorted to than any other harbour by whaling and other ships, in order to obtain fresh provisions by barter with the tribes of natives who inhabit the neighbouring country in great numbers. Dr. Dieffenbach says of it:—

"The country which surrounds the harbour consists almost entirely of hills, which are steep, although not of any great height, and alternating with ravines, which continue far inland. These hills are formed of a yellow argillaceous stone, and a basaltic rock, and it is only in the narrow ravines that there is a little fertile soil. Even where the coast-hills were formerly covered with forest, it has now disappeared, and is only met with some miles inland. Towards the harbour these hills form diminutive bays, inaccessible from the land. The different parts of the harbour are separated by arms of the sea, so that the construction of roads to connect them with each other, and with the interior, is impossible. There is, besides,

* See Note at p. 123,

scarcely sufficient room in any of the bays even for a moderate-sized town, unless placed on the side of a steep hill. The only exception to the mountainous character of the place is the table-land extending from the Waitangi towards the Hokianga and the Keri-keri. But this district, as already observed, cannot be ranked amongst the best portions of New Zealand, and has, moreover, the disadvantage of having no water carriage. Besides this flat district, there is a valley with a considerable extent of excellent land up the Kaua-kaua, an arm of the bay, stretching to the south, into which runs a small fresh-water stream. This valley is in the hands of a large native tribe, who cultivate it very extensively.

"The number of whaling and other vessels in the Bay of Islands has much decreased during the last twelve months. This is chiefly owing to the increase of Europeans, who consumed the scanty produce of the region. * * *

"There exists already a little town at Kororarika,* a small cove in the bay, which offers great facilities for shipping, but is difficult of access from the mainland. The same is the case with Russell, the proposed government town, at the mouth of the Kaua-kaua; whilst Victoria, the embryo capital of Mr. Busby, possessing the finest and most level site for a town, and commanding the Waimate table-land, and therefore the best communication with the interior and Hokianga, as well as with the districts lying to the northward, has no place for the anchorage of vessels, and is, moreover, open to the whole force of the north easterly winds.

"The Kaua-kaua has the aspect of a broad river, bounded by steep and wooded hills. In small nooks on the shore Europeans have erected humble-looking houses. Inns are not wanting, and abundance of fowls, geese, and ducks render the scene very homely and English-looking."†—Chap. xviii. pp. 225 to 259.

The *Government Gazette*, already quoted at page 376, gave the European population of Russell in 1846 as 317 males and 217 females: total, 534. Since that year there are no returns, probably from the migration of the whole population to Auckland during the wars with the natives.

Of the native population, no census has been published: but there is no doubt that, next to the country

* Since totally burnt and plundered by the natives, during John Heke's rebellion, in the year 1845.

† The European population of this district has almost entirely abandoned it for Auckland, since the devastation caused by Heke's rebellion.

already described near Auckland, the districts depending on the Bay of Islands, and the Kaipara and Hokianga harbours, including Kaitaia, are those which contain the most dense aboriginal population.

The same *Gazette* gives, for the year 1846, the value of Imports at Russell 3430*l.*; Exports, 1981*l.*; Customs' Revenue, 447*l.* 7*s.* 9*d.*; Shipping, exclusive of coasters—Inward, 26 vessels, 6770 tons; Outward, 18 vessels, 5534 tons.

A detachment of the 58th regiment is quartered at Russell, and Major C. Bridge, of that regiment, is *Resident Magistrate* and *Deputy Registrar of Births, Deaths, and Marriages*, for the district.

"Proceeding from the head of the Kaua-kaua to the Wairoa, the principal stream which flows into the harbour of Kaipara on the western coast, we follow the windings of a fresh-water stream, which joins the inlet of the sea, and on the banks of which the neat and well-tended plantations of the natives indicate a growing industry. After crossing over some hills we are again led into the valley of the river; and here the eye is attracted by picturesque groups of limestone, which in various shapes crop out at the slope of the neighbouring hills, often resembling ruined castles or towers, sometimes half-concealed amongst beautiful tree-ferns and other trees. The valley forms a basin of alluvial and very fertile soil, as is indicated by the coriaria, dracæna, and phormium, which only grow in the best situations. The name of the valley, as well as of the river, is Waiomio. From this point to the part where the Wairoa first begins to be navigable for large boats is a good day's journey. The country consists mostly of low but steep hills, on which here and there are the remains of the former kauri-forest, half burnt and rotten; but now nearly the whole surface of the region is covered with fern and manuka. The hills alternate with valleys, which, from the stagnation of the waters, are swampy, and contain here and there forests of the kahikatea pine (*Dacrydium excelsum*). A swampy plain stretches to the eastward as far as the rugged hills of Wangari Bay: it offers some fine situations for farms, and would afford excellent opportunities for forming pasturage by the cultivation of artificial grasses, as the land is rich, and the swampy parts might easily be drained. No natives live here.

* * * * *

"Kaipara Harbour, into which the Wairoa and other rivers fall, seems to me—on account of the quantity of timber trees on the shores of the rivers, the length of their navigable course, the extent

of the available alluvial land on their banks, and the immediate neighbourhood of the seat of government, Waitemata—to be deserving of an early attention as a place where capital and labour may be very profitably employed.”—*Dieffenbach*, vol. ii. chap. xix.

Many shipwrecks, some of them attended with loss of life, and total loss of vessel and cargo, have, however, confirmed the opinion held of the insecurity of Kaipara harbour for large ships.

Dr. Dieffenbach continues:—

“ Kaipara is not a bar-harbour, but a channel-harbour; it is a large basin, into which a tide, rising ten feet at full and change, rushes with great velocity, which, joined with the narrowness of the channel and our imperfect knowledge of the soundings, certainly occasions great danger. Westerly winds, which blow without intermission during some portions of the year, and increase the current setting into the harbour, are another inconvenience, as they prevent ships from leaving the harbour at all times. This, indeed, is the case with all the harbours on the western coast of New Zealand. Whether the shoals and sand-banks in the offing are shifting is not yet ascertained, but it is not improbable that such is the case.

“ The harbour consists of several arms, which receive streams of fresh water; the westernmost of these is the Wairoa. At the point where you first fall in with this stream in coming from the Bay of Islands, and 130 miles from the heads of the harbour, its breadth and depth are those of the Thames at Richmond. It is navigable for canoes about eight miles above this place, where their farther progress is prevented by rapids. The Wairoa rises in the hills, on the northern slope of which the Waima, an arm of the Hokianga, has its source. The Wairoa is soon joined by the Otumatea, a river coming from the hills in the neighbourhood of Wangari harbour, and this receives in its turn the Oropaoa from the northward, and the Kaiwaka and Wakaki from the eastward. Not far from the junction of the Otumatea with the Wairoa, the latter is joined by the Oruawaro, another stream of considerable size, although, as is evident from the breadth of the island at this part from coast to coast, not of any great length. Lower down, the Tapara from the south, and the Kaipara proper, flow into arms of the estuary. The Kaipara proper follows a very serpentine course in a moderate-sized valley, formed by the hills which bound the sea-coast between Kaipara and Manukao harbours, and separated from an inlet of the harbour of Waitemata, in the gulf of Hauraki, by a piece of land about three miles in breadth, and consisting of low hills, over which the natives frequently dragged their canoes in times of war. Not far from the highest point to which the tide reaches in the Kaipara pro-

per, another river joins it, which runs likewise within a very short distance of Waitemata.

"The banks of all these rivers are bounded by hills of no very great height, which do not generally reach to the banks, and are often more than a mile distant from them; the banks are level, and consist of a somewhat clayey and fertile soil. The Wairoa continually carries down a quantity of this soil from the higher to the lower parts of the river, in consequence of which its waters have a yellow appearance. In the upper part of its course a beautiful and fertile valley joins it, which begins in the neighbourhood of Hokianga. Here the chief Parore lives with his tribe, and cultivates the land. The banks of the Wairoa, with the exception of those parts which are of very recent formation, and of the portions which have been cleared by the natives, are covered with a thick forest of timber-trees of all descriptions, but especially the kauri-pine, which is always in the greatest profusion in hilly situations. I am not acquainted with any place in New Zealand where these trees are more plentiful, of greater height and diameter, and of easier access. The natives are constantly employed in felling and squaring them. The consequence is, that they are well supplied with all our commodities. One careful chief had collected quite a property from the fruits of his own labour and that of his tribe. As they also cultivate a considerable quantity of ground for their own use, and have a surplus quantity for sale, it may easily be foreseen that, if justly treated by their new government, they will prove in time a valuable and wealthy part of the population of the colony.

"Small vessels can go up the Wairoa as far as the settlement of a Mr. Stephenson, eighty-five miles from the heads of the harbour, where there is a depth of twelve feet; but only fifteen miles lower down, at the farm of Mr. Forsyth,* the river has water and a clear channel for vessels of any burden, and also anchorage close in-shore.

"Timber is likewise found on the banks of all the other tributaries, especially of the Otumatea; and everywhere there is sufficient land to enable the colonist to combine agricultural pursuits with the timber trade.

"The inlet, which is joined by the Kaipara proper, is navigable for large boats as far as the tide runs up. On the hills between Kaipara and Manukao there is much kauri, and the river affords great facilities for conveying the timber down to the sea. It is very serpentine in its course, and forms a number of paddocks of alluvial land; these are at present swampy, but a little drainage would effectually lay them dry. This low land is here and there covered with

* Missionary catechist, and sub-protector of Aborigines under Governors Shortland and Fitzroy.

groves of the kahikatea-pine and the puriri (*Vitex littoralis*), but in general only fern and flax grow on it.

"About forty Europeans live on the Kaipara estuary and its tributaries, and about 700 natives. The Europeans claim a great part of the land, and much difficulty will arise in settling their various claims, as the land was sold to them by the Nga-pui, the natives in the Bay of Islands, who formerly conquered and drove away the original proprietors of the soil. But a short time since these latter again returned, and their numbers have increased; whereas the contrary has been the case with the Nga-pui, who have silently given up all claims to the land.

"There is a Wesleyan missionary-station up the Wairoa, but in an unfavourable place, there being scarcely any natives within a great distance of the station. In consequence of this there has not been here that success which in other parts of the island has attended the efforts of the missionaries.

"The general aspect of the Kaipara and its tributaries is far more open, and the quantity of excellent agricultural land more extensive than at the Hokianga; and, from the abundance of its timber, Kaipara is a place admirably adapted for ship-building establishments; its advantages, therefore, as a settlement, would seem to outweigh the inconvenience resulting from the harbour being situated on a lee-shore and of somewhat difficult access.

"There are many convenient places for a township and for dock-yard establishments on the banks of the Wairoa.

"The hills in the upper part of that river consist of the stiff whitish clay which characterizes kauri-land, here and there with a basis of a hard argillaceous slaty rock: lower down, on the left bank, are steep hillocks of basalt; on the right shore, and towards the sea-coast, is a soft ferruginous sandstone; inside and round the northern head the cliffs expose layers of lignite, generally four feet in thickness and superimposed to the height of about twenty feet by a white slightly consolidated sand, which softens by exposure to the water, and on a near examination is found to consist of decomposed pumicestone, of which large globular boulders are still compact. The lignite consists of half-carbonized wood, besides kauri and pohutukaua, remains of tree-ferns, indistinct impressions of smaller ferns, and a kind of typha—all which plants are still found in the island. Extensive beds, four feet thick, of the same lignite, and overlaid by sandstone, are likewise found round the south head of Hokianga; they are then lost beneath the surface, but appear again near the north head of the Kaipara. The intermediate space, near the sea-shore, consists of sand-hills, which are covered with a running carex, and farther inland with a scanty vegetation of fern. In some places hereabouts I met with small cornelians, magnetic ironsand, and boulders of brown iron-ore.

"In order to reach the harbour of Waitemata (Auckland) from Kaipara, we leave the Kaipara proper where it narrows and ceases to be affected by the tide. The road leads over hills of an unpromising aspect, but a most magnificent prospect over the surrounding country opens from them to our view. To the north we overlook the large estuary of the Kaipara; to the west the valley of the Kaipara proper, its meandering stream, and the hills of Manukao, which are mostly wooded; to the east grotesque-shaped hills on the coast; and by advancing a little farther we overlook the basin of the Manukao and Waitemata harbour. The entrance into the Gulf of Hauraki is pointed out by Cape Colville, the southern headland, which is about sixty miles distant, and by the Great Barrier Island, which appears dimly on the horizon."—Chap. xix. pp. 264 to 270.

The Climate of the Bay of Islands having been carefully observed by Sir James Clark Ross, during three months that his ships were at anchor in the river Kawakawa, it will not be amiss to quote here the principal results of those observations :—

"The following tables* are founded on observations of the temperature of the air and surface of the sea, the height of the barometer, the direction and force of the wind, and the state of the weather recorded every hour during the whole period, and are divided into equal intervals of about thirty days each, for the convenience of reference as well as of comparison with similar observations made in England; by which our Emigrants will more readily perceive the change of climate they will have to make allowance for in all their pastoral and agricultural proceedings in their newly-adopted country,

"The first table comprises the result of each day's observation between the 19th of August and the 17th of September: the mean of which corresponds more nearly with the 2nd of September, which may be considered equal to March of the northern hemisphere; and, therefore, according to the most natural division of the seasons, is the first month of spring. The mean temperature of the atmosphere is $53^{\circ} 9$, and the range of temperature during the period was 66° to 39° . In England, the mean temperature due to the middle of the month of March is $43^{\circ} 9$, and the average range is from 66° to 24° . The first month of spring in New Zealand has, therefore, a higher temperature by ten degrees than that of England; and although the maximum temperature in both is the same, yet the climate of New Zealand is free from those severe frosts which frequently do so much mischief to advanced vegetation in England.

* Only the results of the tables are here given, as the tables themselves would occupy too much space.

"The mean temperature of the dew point, as derived from observations made four times each day—viz. at 3 h. and 9 h. A.M., and 3 h. and 9 h. P.M., by Mr. Lyall, assistant-surgeon of the *Terror*—was found to be $49^{\circ}6$; the amount of dryness is, therefore, $4^{\circ}3$; the degree of moisture of the air is $\cdot862$; and the elasticity of vapour is equal to $0\cdot395$ inches. The quantity of rain which fell, $11\cdot76$ in.; and the greatest fall occurred between 2 A.M. on the 8th, and 2 A.M. on the 9th of September, amounting to $5\cdot5$ inches; the barometer during the time being below its mean height, and the wind fresh from the northward; so far, therefore, as regards the moisture of the atmosphere, there is very little difference between the first spring month of England and of New Zealand; the degree of dryness in England being $4^{\circ}9$, the moisture of the air $\cdot831$, the elasticity of vapour $\cdot272$, but the quantity of rain amounts to only $1\cdot44$ inch.

"The mean height of the barometer is $30\cdot034$, and its range $1\cdot14$ inch. The diurnal variations of pressure, commonly called the atmospheric tides, occur at 9 A.M. and 10 P.M., when it is greatest, and 4 A.M. and 3 P.M., when it is least; and the difference amounts to $\cdot041$ inch.

"The mean temperature of the surface of the sea is 56° .

"In like manner for the next month, the mean temperature of the air derived from the second table, which comprises an abstract of all the observations made between the 18th September and 18th October, an interval of thirty-one days, and corresponds to the 3rd October, is $57^{\circ}9$, an increase of four degrees in the mean temperature of the month as the season advances, whilst that of England increases about six degrees. The range of temperature at New Zealand is from 73° to 39° ; in England, in April, it is 74° to 29° .

"The mean temperature of the dew point is 53° , making the amount of dryness $4^{\circ}9$; the degree of moisture has consequently varied very little, being $\cdot847$, the elasticity of vapour, $\cdot414$, the quantity of rain, $4\cdot1$ inches. The greatest fall of rain during the period occurred between five P.M. and midnight, of the 17th of October, amounting to $2\cdot84$ inches, the barometer, being rather below its mean height for the season, and the wind strong from the northward.

"The mean height of the barometer is $30\cdot118$, and its range $\cdot738$ inch. The greatest pressure occurs at nine A.M. and ten P.M., and the least pressure at four A.M. and four P.M.: the difference amounts to $\cdot044$ inch.

"The mean temperature of the surface of the sea is $58^{\circ}1$.

"The third table is also derived from all the observations made between the 19th of October and 17th of November, an interval of thirty days; the mean temperature corresponding to the 3rd of November, has advanced two and a half degrees, to $60^{\circ}5$, and its range is from 74° to 47° . In England, the mean temperature of May is 54° , and its range from 70° to 33° .

"The mean temperature of the dew point is only 52° , showing that the atmosphere has attained a greater degree of dryness, being $8^{\circ}5$; the moisture of the air is therefore reduced to 0.735. In England, we also find, that in May the temperature of the air still outstrips the advance of vapour, and the atmosphere attains very nearly its state of greatest dryness; the mean temperature of the dew point being $46^{\circ}1$; the degree of dryness is $7^{\circ}9$, and the state of saturation .769. The elasticity of vapour in New Zealand is 0.428, in England, 0.354 inch.

"The quantity of rain in New Zealand, is 9.5 inches, and the greatest fall occurred on the 8th November, between four A.M. and six P.M., 2.1 inches, the barometer being about its mean height, and the wind from the north. In England the quantity of rain in May is only 1.85 inch.

"The mean height of the barometer is 29.904, and its range 1.80 inch. In the diurnal tides the times of greatest pressure are nine A.M. and eleven P.M., and of least pressure four A.M. and four P.M.: the difference is 0.032 inch.

"The next table contains a summary of the condition of the atmosphere during the three months of the spring season; and that which follows, derived from Mr. Daniell's Essay upon the Climate of London, is inserted here for the sake of comparison.

NEW ZEALAND.

	Temperature of the Air.			Mean Dew Point.	Drying.	Saturation.	Rain. Inches.	Elasticity. Vapour.	Mean Barometer.
	Max.	Min.	Mean						
1 month .	66	39	53.9	49.6	4.3	.862	11.76	.395	30.034
2 months .	73	39	57.9	53	4.9	.847	4.10	.444	30.118
3 months .	74	47	60.5	52	8.5	.753	9.50	.428	29.904
	74	39	57.4	51.5	5.9	.817	25.36	.422	30.019

ENGLAND.

	Temperature of the Air.			Mean Dew Point.	Drying.	Saturation.	Rain. Inches.	Elasticity. Vapour.	Mean Barometer.
	Max.	Min.	Mean						
1 month .	66	24	43·9	39	4·9	·831	1·44	·272	29·843
2 months .	74	29	49·9	43·5	6·4	·783	1·79	·322	·881
3 months .	70	33	54	46·1	7·0	·769	1·85	·354	·898
	47	24	49·3	42·9	6·4	·804	5·08	·316	29·874

“ The mean temperature for the year in England is $49^{\circ} 2$, which differs very slightly from the mean temperature of the three months of spring. It is not at all improbable that the mean temperature for the year at New Zealand may, likewise, not differ greatly from that of the spring, and would be rather more than the mean of the above three months, as their respective means refer to the second or third, instead of the middle day of each month. It will, therefore, probably prove to be about 59° , or ten degrees above that of England.

“ But we have another mode of arriving at the mean temperature, without apprehension of any considerable amount of error.

“ In accordance with my instructions, and with the view to collect facts relative to the distribution of temperature on land, five pairs of self-registering thermometers, after having been carefully compared with the standard, and their corrections accurately determined, were packed in vessels, and, after being well covered with non-conducting substances, were buried in the earth at the depths of one, three, six, nine, and twelve feet on the 18th of October, and were allowed to remain there until the 12th of November following, so as to insure their acquiring the precise temperature of the soil; and the mean reading of the two thermometers, when corrected at each of the several depths, was as follows:—

At one foot below the surface was	. . . .	61·5
Three feet do.	do. . . .	60·0
Six do.	do. . . .	60·65
Nine do.	do. . . .	59·76
Twelve do.	do. . . .	59·42

“ The temperature of water in a well at Waimate, thirty-five deep,

but with only six feet four inches of water in it, was $58^{\circ} 8$. From these facts we may be led to conclude the mean temperature of the year will be found to be very nearly 59° .

"This is, however, a point of considerable importance to have determined accurately, and the observations should be continued throughout several years before this can be accomplished. In looking over the hourly observations that were made by the officers of the *Erebus* and *Terror*, during the ninety-one days from which the above results have been obtained, I perceive that the mean temperature for the whole period would have been arrived at with very great accuracy by a single daily observation, either at 8.30 A.M. or 7 P.M.; and I doubt not the mean temperature for the year could be ascertained to within very small limits of error, by a regular register of the temperature at either or both of those hours, as might best suit the convenience of observers.

"Besides the great difference of ten degrees of temperature, the quantity of rain which fell during the above interval, exactly five times the amount which falls in the spring, and three inches more than falls during the whole year in England, is very remarkable and well deserving the attention of the agriculturist.

"It is true this quantity differs materially from that given by Dr. Dieffenbach, being more than double the amount of that which fell at Port Nicholson; and he further states, that the whole quantity which fell there between April, 1841, and February, 1842, was only 34.49 inches; from which he draws the conclusion that New Zealand has a rainy climate, and may be ranked in this respect with several places in England.

"It certainly proves, as might have been anticipated, that a much greater quantity of rain falls at the northern than at the southern parts of the island; for the heaviest falls of rain occur during the northerly winds, which come from the equatorial regions fully charged with moisture, of which a large proportion is precipitated as it passes over the first land it meets.

"Dr. Dieffenbach states the mean temperature of the whole year at Wellington to be 58.2 , and the mean temperature of the three months of spring 57.7 , a remarkable accordance with the results and inferences obtained from our observations at the Bay of Islands; and I can, therefore, with the more confidence quote from him the following table, showing the mean temperature of each month, which, although derived from only one year's observations, will probably be not far from the truth, in a climate which seems to possess an unusual degree of uniformity.*

It will be perceived that the mean of the winter and summer quarter, or that of the autumn and spring quarter, does not differ half a degree from the mean temperature of the year. The coldest

* See p. 135 for the Table mentioned.

month is July, the hottest January,—the difference of their mean is only $17^{\circ}7$; whilst in England that of the correspondent month amounts to 25° .

“At Auckland, which is not more than a hundred miles to the south of the Bay of Islands, the mean temperature of the year is 59° , that of the three summer months $67^{\circ}2$, and of the three winter months 52° , their difference being only $15^{\circ}2$, and their mean six-tenths of a degree above that of the mean annual temperature.”

CHAPTER XIII.

Officers of the New Zealand Company.—Its Objects and Powers.—Summary of Operations up to 1845.—Capital and Dividends.—Latest Accounts Audited.—Agreement of April, 1847.—Crown Grants held.—Regulations for Sale of Land, and Passage.—Memorandum for Passengers.—Colonists' Room at New Zealand House.

GOVERNOR.

(Vacant.)

DEPUTY-GOVERNOR.

Hon. Francis Baring, M.P.

DIRECTORS.

Henry Aglionby Aglionby, Esq.,
M.P.

John Ellerker Boulcott, Esq.

Lord Courtenay, M.P.

Alexander Currie, Esq.

The Baron de Goldsmid and da
Palmeira.

James Robert Gowen, Esq.

Archibald Hastie, Esq., M.P.

Sir Ralph Howard, Bart., M.P.

William Hutt, Esq., M.P.

Viscount Ingestre, M.P.

George Lyall, Junior, Esq.

Ross Donnelly Mangles, Esq.,
M.P.

Alexander Nairne, Esq.

The Lord Petre.

Jeremiah Pilcher, Esq.

Sir John Pirie, Bart., Alderman.

John Abel Smith, Esq., M.P.

William Thompson, Esq., Al-
derman, M.P.

Edward Gibbon Wakefield, Esq.

George Frederick Young, Esq.

HER MAJESTY'S COMMISSIONER.

John Welsford Cowell, Esq.

AUDITORS.

Richard Edward Arden, Esq., Russell Ellice, Esq.,

Joseph Dowson, Esq.

BANKERS.

Messrs. Smith, Payne, and Smiths.

OBJECTS, POWERS, ETC.,

SECRETARY.

Thomas Cudbert Harington, Esq.

CLERK OF THE COLONISTS' ROOM.

Mr. William Bowler.

AGENTS IN NEW ZEALAND.

Principal Agent at Wellington—Colonel William Wakefield.

Resident Agent at Nelson—Francis Dillon Bell, Esq.

Resident Agent at New Plymouth—(Vacant).

Resident Agent at Dunedin—William Cargill, Esq.

Office—New Zealand House, 9, Broad Street Buildings, London.

The circumstances under which the New Zealand Company was originated have been sufficiently explained in Chapter IV.

This Company was incorporated by Royal Charter, bearing date the 12th of February, 1841. The Corporation was declared to be

“Established for the purpose of purchasing and acquiring, settling, improving, cultivating, letting, selling, granting, alienating, mortgaging, charging or otherwise dealing with and making a profit of lands, tenements and hereditaments in our said colony (New Zealand) and its dependencies, and of laying out settlements and towns, and of working therein all mines, pits and quarries, and all minerals and metals, and for the further purpose of conveying or contracting for the conveyance of emigrants to any their place of destination in our said colony and its dependencies, subject however to such regulations respecting the conveyance of the said emigrants as it shall from time to time seem fit to us, our heirs and successors, to make and promulgate in that behalf, and of furnishing to emigrants all things that may be deemed requisite and suitable for their immediate settlement in our said colony, and of exporting the produce of the said colony and its seas, and of importing such articles as may be required for the furtherance of any of the purposes aforesaid, and for the further purpose of lending and advancing money on the security of land and other property situate in our said colony and its dependencies; Provided always that it shall not be lawful for the said company to carry on the business of banking by keeping cash of or for any person payable on demand, or by borrowing, owing, or taking up money on their bills or notes payable on demand or at any less time than twelve months from the borrowing thereof, or for a less sum than one hundred pounds, or in anywise to engage in any commercial operations in the United Kingdom or in our colonial possessions for the purpose of making a profit other than as aforesaid: And for the further

purpose of executing, erecting, contracting for and subscribing towards such public works and buildings, and also of establishing and maintaining, solely or conjointly with others, such public institutions for the improvement of our said colony and the comfort and well-being of the said emigrants as may be proposed, undertaken, or sanctioned by us, our heirs or successors, or the governor, lieutenant-governor or person administering the government, or by any person duly authorized in that behalf in our said colony and its dependencies."

The Capital was fixed at 300,000*l.* in 25*l.* shares, with power to increase it to 1,000,000*l.*; and with power also to borrow not exceeding 500,000*l.* on mortgage.

A Supplementary Charter, dated 4th of August, 1843, empowered the Directors, with the consent of a special Court of Proprietors, to borrow not exceeding 500,000*l.*, and to issue debentures.

In a petition presented to the House of Commons by the late Mr. Joseph Somes, then Governor of the Company, on the 16th of April, 1845,* (see page 78,) and in which the proceedings of the Company up to that date are very clearly narrated, they make the following statements:—

"At the end of the first quarter of 1843, the Government had, for the sum of 39,655*l.*, sold 5,168 acres of land, yielding a general average of 7*l.* 13*s.* 5*d.* an acre. At the same date, we had disposed of 224,720 acres for 280,840*l.*, or at a general average of 1*l.* 5*s.* an acre.

"During the brief period extending from the commencement of our operations in 1839 to their suspension in 1843, we had introduced into the colony nearly 9000 persons. The Government, exclusive of the Convict Boys, under 800.

"We had established three separate settlements. Our emigration had been carried on under the immediate inspection of the officers of the Government, and conducted in such a way as to call forth their unqualified praise. A large amount had been expended by us in public works; in constructing roads and bridges: in providing

* This petition, with several other documents relating to the same subject, was published in the Appendix to a *Report of the New Zealand Debate on the 17th, 18th, and 19th of June, 1845*, by Murray, in the same year.

facilities of access to the ports; and in extensive surveys, as well as in expeditions for the purpose of exploring the interior. We had made a provision for religious establishments a portion of the original scheme of our settlements. In each successive scheme, we had devoted to this provision a larger and larger proportion; proceeding always upon the principle of supplying funds, without distinction of denominations, in amounts equal to the sums raised by the parties themselves. Upon this principle, the majority of our settlers being members of the Church of England, the creation of a New Zealand Bishopric had been mainly effected by our efforts: and in the hope that our settlements would receive the advantage of the personal residence and example of the Bishop, our contributions, given upon the same principle, had formed a large portion of its earliest endowment. Other of our projects for the benefit of the colony had been frustrated by a refusal of the co-operation of the Government."

"We have obtained awards for above seven hundred thousand acres of land; have claims for several hundred thousand acres more; and have come under obligations to alienate above two hundred thousand; but we cannot obtain our title-deeds for a single acre.

"We have entered into four successive agreements with Her Majesty's Government; on the faith of these agreements we have expended nearly six hundred thousand pounds on public objects: we have scrupulously fulfilled every condition on our part; but as yet, not one condition has been fulfilled on the part of the Government."

The capital of the Company as yet paid up, amounts to £200,000. The shareholders have received the following dividends, from the earliest foundation of the Company up to the present time.

1. September, 1840.....	5	per cent.
2. April 23, 1841	10	"
3. November, 1841	5	"
4. April 6, 1842	5	"
5. October 10, 1842	2½	"
6. May 30, 1843	2½	"
7. October 10, 1843	2½	"

Total from 1839 to 1848... 32½ per cent.

In 1846, the Act was passed, authorizing the loan of 100,000*l.* to the Company by Her Majesty's Government, (see page 79.)

In April, 1847, the following accounts were published by the New Zealand Company:—

I.—EXPENDITURE from the 2nd of May, 1839, to the 5th of April, 1847, exclusive of 41,890*l.* paid to the Company's Shareholders, as Interest upon its Capital to the 5th of October, 1843.

Dates.	Home Establish- ment & Expenses.		Emigration Services.		Colonial Expenses.		Miscellaneous Expenses.		Totals.	
	£	s. d.	£	s. d.	£	s. d.	£	s. d.	£	s. d.
2nd May, 1839, to 5th April, 1845 .	50,106	13 6	211,754	16 2	172,704	14 9	133,435	2 0	568,001	6 5
6th April, 1845, to 5th April, 1846 .	4,025	9 2	635	3 10	22,686	19 11	3,183	1 5	27,530	14 4
6th April, 1846, to 5th April, 1847 .	3,652	5 2	108	13 6	20,163	18 8	6,674	2 0	30,598	19 4
Totals	57,784	7 10	212,498	13 6	222,555	13 4	143,292	5 5	636,131	0 1

* Including £15,000 deposited with Messrs. Overend, Gurney, and Co., to cover the guarantee given by the Company's Bankers upon bills to be drawn from the Colony by the Principal Agent.

II.—SALES OF LAND IN THE SETTLEMENT OF NELSON—THEIR AMOUNT AND APPROPRIATION.

Amount received for sales of land at Nelson	£162,240
Amount to be received for sales of land at Nelson	1,460
Total receivable for sales of land at Nelson, 108,840 acres	£163,700
APPROPRIATION.	

Funds.	Appropriated.		Expended.		Unexpended.		Over-expended.	
	£	s. d.	£	s. d.	£	s. d.	£	s. d.
Emigration 30-60ths .	81,850	0 0	79,441	6 8	2,408	13 4		
Establishing the Settlement . . . 10-60ths .	27,283	6 8	58,698	3 8			31,414	16 0
Religious uses 3-60ths .	8,185	0 0	5,070	18 0	3,114	2 0		
Establishing a College 3-60ths .	8,185	0 0			8,185	0 0		
Steam Navigation 4-60ths .	10,913	6 8			10,913	6 8		
For the Company 10-60ths .	27,283	6 8	27,283	6 8				
Totals	163,700	0 0	170,493	14 0	24,621	2 0	31,414	16 0

III.—OBLIGATIONS AND ENGAGEMENTS exclusive of those to the Purchasers of the Company's Lands and its Shareholders, and of Open Accounts in New Zealand.

Open accounts and contingencies in England, say	£10,000	0	0
Debentures not yet paid off	£54,000	0	0
Interest thereon to the dates of } their respectively falling due }	2,625	2	0
		56,625	2 0
Advance by H. M.'s Government		80,000	0 0
Investments and securities not immediately avail- able, but ultimately applicable to the reduction of liabilities, 12,938 <i>l.</i> 3 <i>s.</i> 4 <i>d.</i> , say		12,625	2 0
Balance	£134,000	0	0

The above are taken from the Appendix to the Twenty-second Report of the New Zealand Company, pages 14 to 17; they are dated the 23rd of April, 1847, and signed by GEORGE BAILEY, Accountant.

IV.—RECEIPTS AND EXPENDITURE of the NEW ZEALAND COMPANY, from the 6th of April, 1846, to the 5th of April, 1847.

AMOUNT IN HAND on the 6th of April, 1846—viz.:

	£	s.	d.	£	s.	d.
Cash in the house	30	7	8			
Ditto at the Bankers'	4,566	18	2			
Ditto with the Lay Association of the Free Church of Scotland, &c., to be hereafter accounted for	530	12	0			
Bills receivable	5,229	2	5			
				10,357	0	3

RECEIPTS.

Interest on investments, fees on transfers, and sundries	203	6	2
Loans raised upon debentures, in addition to previous £76,500	10,000	0	0
Loan from Her Majesty's Government (part of £100,000 authorized by the Act of Parliament)	80,000	0	0
Loan from the Bankers, in anticipation of the Loan last mentioned	5,000	0	0
Total Receipts	£105,560	6	5

EXPENDITURE.

HOME ESTABLISHMENT AND EXPENSES.

Rent, taxes, insurance, repairs, house expenses, and sundries	538	1	2	
Advertising and printing, books and maps, stamps, stationery, postage, carriage of parcels, and incidental expenses	1,068	7	7	
Furniture and fixtures	6	8	3	
Salaries of officers & others on the Company's Home Establishment	1,243	5	8	
Law and parliamentary expenses....	796	2	6	
				3,652 5 2

EMIGRATION SERVICE.

Allowance towards a cabin passage to Nelson, and expenses incidental to ships despatched to New Zealand under the Company's sanction and subject to its regulations, &c. ...	108	13	6
--	-----	----	---

COLONIAL EXPENSES.

Bills drawn from New Zealand, and expenses &c. incidental to the Colony, paid in England.....	4,410	4	7	
Proportion of salaries of Colonial officers paid in England	753	14	1	
				5,163 18 8

MISCELLANEOUS.

New Edinburgh deposits returned ..	12	0	0	
Interest on debentures	3,254	12	9	
Debentures paid off	32,500	0	0	
Interest on loans, on New Edinburgh deposits returned, and sundries	1,172	6	0	
Loans from bankers returned	20,000	0	0	
Land purchased by the Company at Wellington and Nelson, as a private estate	2,247	3	3	
				59,186 2 0

Total Expenditure £68,110 10 4

Cash in the house	21	4	1
Ditto at the Bankers'	12,434	7	8
Ditto with Overend, Gurney, & Co., against the Bankers' liability on bills to be drawn from New Zealand	15,000	0	0

EXPENDITURE—*continued.*

	£	s.	d.	£	s.	d.
Brought forward.....	27,455	11	9	68,110	19	4
Cash with the Lay Association of the Free Church of Scotland, &c., to be hereafter accounted for..	530	12	0			
Promissory Notes	9,463	3	4			
				37,449	7	1
Total.....				£105,560	6	5

N.B.—Of the Guarantee given by the Company's Bankers to meet Colonial Bills, there remains an unexhausted Balance of £15,938 7s. 0d.

(Signed) GEORGE BAILEY, *Accountant.*

We hereby certify that we have carefully examined the foregoing Accounts, and we declare the same to be correct.

(Signed) RICHARD EDWARD ARDEN, } *Auditors.*
JOSEPH DOWSON, }

V.—ASSETS AND LIABILITIES of the NEW ZEALAND COMPANY
on the 5th of April, 1847.

ASSETS.	£	s.	d.	£	s.	d.
Cash in the house	21	4	1			
Ditto at the Bankers'	12,434	7	8			
Ditto with Overend, Gurney, & Co., against the Bankers' liability on bills to be drawn from New Zealand	15,000	0	0			
Ditto with the Lay Association of the Free Church of Scotland, &c. to be hereafter accounted for..	530	12	0			
Promissory Notes	9,463	3	4			
				37,449	7	1
Investments	3,475	0	0			
Debts due to the Company.....	4,226	15	5			
				7,701	15	5
Estimated value of books and maps, plans of the settlements, and furniture and fixtures	1,346	18	1			
Balance in favour of the Company at Wellington, 31st March, 1846 }	8,392	8	0			
Balance in favour of the Company at Nelson, 31st March, 1846. }	7,380	0	1			

ASSETS—continued.

	£	s.	d.	£	s.	d.
Brought forward	17,119	6	2	45,151	2	6
Balance in favour of the Company at New Plymouth, 31st March, 1846	4,004	16	9			
Balance in favour of the Company at Otago, 31st March, 1846 ..	1,845	0	8			
				22,969	3	7
Total Assets, exclusive of the Company's Lands	£68,120	6	1			

LIABILITIES.

Liabilities for Expenditure in the Nelson Settlement, under Condi- tions of Sales of Land—viz.:						
For Emigration, (deducting 199l. 16s. 4d. taken as the esti- mated expenditure on emigra- tion at Nelson for the year 1847)	2,408	13	4			
Religious uses	3,114	2	0			
Establishing a College	8,185	0	0			
Steam Navigation	10,913	6	8			
				24,621	2	0
Due to sundry persons				10,602	16	9
Debentures issued on security of unpaid-up capital of 100,000l.				54,000	0	0
Loan from Her Majesty's Government				80,000	0	0
Bills to be drawn from the Colony by the Com- pany's principal agent				14,400	18	2
Bills drawn from the Colony under acceptance ..				1,537	8	10
Unclaimed dividends				110	0	0
Interest on debentures, unpaid				73	12	6
Capital paid up				200,000	0	0
Total liabilities on this date	£385,345	18	3			
Total assets as above, exclusive of the Company's lands				68,120	6	1
Balance, subject to deduction of the Company's lands	£317,225	12	2			

(Signed) GEORGE BAILEY, *Accountant.*

We hereby certify that we have carefully examined the foregoing
accounts, and we do declare the same to be correct.

(Signed) RICHARD EDWARD ARDEN, } *Auditors.*
JOSEPH DOWSON, }

VI.—LAND ACCOUNT of the NEW ZEALAND COMPANY on the
5th of April, 1847.

Land to which the claim of the Company is recognised by Her Majesty's Government, as stated in Mr. Hope's Letter of the 28th October, 1845	} Acres. 1,300,000
--	-----------------------

Deduct, land sold in the several settlements—viz.

At Wellington	Acres.	Acres.	
Sold prior to 5th April, 1846			127,959 $\frac{1}{4}$
At Nelson,			
Sold prior to 5th April, 1846	108,489		
Ditto ditto, but not before } brought to account.... }	351		
	————	108,840	
At New Plymouth,			
Sold prior to 5th April, 1846	14,158		
Ditto ditto, but not before } brought to account }	50 $\frac{1}{4}$		
	————	14,208 $\frac{3}{4}$	
		————	251,008 $\frac{1}{2}$

Balance, Unsold..... Acres 1,048,991 $\frac{1}{4}$

Add, land purchased by the Company as its
private estate—viz.

At Wellington	3,938 $\frac{1}{4}$		
At Nelson,			
Purchased prior to 5th } April, 1846	20,100		
Purchased since 5th April, } 1846	453		
	————	20,553	
		————	24,491 $\frac{1}{4}$

Total..... Acres 1,073,482 $\frac{3}{4}$

(Signed) GEORGE BAILEY, Accountant.

In April, 1847, the agreement already briefly described at page 82, and which was afterwards sanctioned by the Act 10 and 11 Vict., cap. 112, took place between the New Zealand Company and Her Majesty's Government. The following were its articles:—

"1. It is agreed that a Commissioner be appointed by Her Majesty to be a Commissioner for the affairs of the New Zealand Company.

"That the name of the person selected by Her Majesty be submitted to the Directors of the New Zealand Company, and the appointment take place on their signifying their approval.

"That this Commissioner attend all Meetings of the Directors, and have access to all books, papers, and accounts of the Company, and that the Company shall agree that no Resolution shall ever be adopted at any Meeting of the Directors without the assent of the Commissioner.

"That the Commissioner be paid a salary of Fifteen Hundred Pounds a year out of the funds of the Company.

"2. That during the period for which the present arrangement shall last, the Government shall give up to the Company the entire and exclusive disposal of all Crown Lands, and the exercise of the Crown's right of pre-emption of lands belonging to the Natives, in the Southern Government of New Zealand; and undertake during such period to execute any grants, leases, or mortgages, for which the Court of Directors and Commissioner shall engage.

"3. That during three years commencing the 6th of April ultimo, the Government shall engage to place at the disposal of the Company,—during the first year such sum of not more than Twenty-eight Thousand Pounds over and above any sum now payable to the Company under any former loan,—during the second year such sum not exceeding Seventy-two Thousand Pounds,—and during the third year such sum not exceeding Thirty-six Thousand Pounds,—as shall be required by the Company and the Commissioner from time to time, for the purpose of discharging the existing liabilities of the Company to an extent not exceeding Seventy-nine Thousand Pounds, and of conducting its colonizing operations.

"That all sums accruing to the Company in each year, beyond those which it is bound to expend for the benefit of the purchasers of its lands, shall be expended in furtherance of the general objects of the Company, with the view of diminishing the amount of advances which may be required from Her Majesty's Government.

"That during that period no interest shall accrue from any debt to the Government, nor for any claim to compensation on the part of the Company.

"That during the first year no dividend shall be paid to the proprietors of the Company's stock; nor any in either of the two following years, without the express sanction of Her Majesty's Government.

"That the Company shall at once give up all claim to lands in the neighbourhood of Auckland, and take the whole amount awarded to it elsewhere.

"4. That if the Company shall be in a condition, at the end of the three years, to continue its operations, the present arrangement

with respect to Heads 1 and 2 shall continue, and be made permanent either by a new Charter or by Act of Parliament, upon the Company agreeing to such restriction on its disposal of land, dividends, and application of funds, as shall then be agreed upon between the Company and Her Majesty's Government.

"That the Company shall, in that case, abandon all claim to compensation from the Government.

"That all advances already made, or within the period of three years to be made to the Company by the Government shall, in that case, be constituted as the Company's debt, the principal of which the Company shall be bound to repay by an annual payment of not less than one-fourth of its clear profits after payment of all expenses.

"5. That if, at the end of the three years, the Company shall be unable to continue its operations, Her Majesty's Government shall take the Company's assets, together with the liabilities contracted by it to third parties during that period with the assent of the Commissioner, and any debt which may still be due from it to the Nelson settlers.

"That all debts due from the Company to the Government shall be remitted, in consideration of the Company's admitted claim on the Government.

"That the lands now belonging to the Company, consisting of 1,048,991½ acres awarded to it and as yet unsold, together with 24,491½ acres held by it in virtue of purchase within its settlements, shall be taken by the Government at the rate of five shillings an acre.

"That the Company shall be entitled to payment of the sum so due to it, together with interest at the rate of three and a half per cent. thereon, out of the proceeds of all returns over and above the outlay for surveys and emigration, accruing from the sale of Crown lands in New Zealand, but not from any other source.

"That the New Zealand Company shall thereupon be forthwith dissolved, except for the purpose of receiving such annual payment.

"6. That neither the Crown nor the New Zealand Company shall, in any part of New Zealand, sell any lands not previously sold by them, for any sum less than twenty shillings an acre, nor expend less than ten shillings an acre of the proceeds of such sale in carrying out emigrants."

The three years mentioned will terminate in April, 1850.

The Company now possess Crown Grants for 400,000 acres of land in the Otago district, and 278,000 acres in the Wellington and Porirua districts; in all, 678,000 acres; and it is expected that further grants of land

in the Nelson and New Plymouth districts may by this time have been received by the Company's agents. But at present, they are not offering any land for sale, either in this country or in the Colony, except that comprised in the Otago settlement, the arrangements for which have been detailed at page 315. It is understood, however, that they have actually under consideration the regulations according to which land in all their settlements shall be so offered and licences for pasturage granted, both here and in New Zealand. When finally settled, such regulations will be obtainable on application at New Zealand House.

Except to the Otago settlement, the Company are not now granting free passages to emigrants. In that particular case, as will have been remarked at page 320, rule 25, the selection of emigrants lies entirely with the "Association of Lay Members of the Free Church of Scotland for promoting the settlement of Otago." The Company have recently been assisting a few labouring emigrants to reach the Colony, giving the preference among the applicants "to those who contribute most towards the passages of themselves and families, provided that in all other respects they are equally eligible."

The following are the *prices and conditions of passages to New Zealand* by the passenger-ships of the Company, which sail every two months. They are always first-class ships; and the arrangements made for the health and comfort of all on board have invariably been such as to gain the approbation of the Government Superintendent of emigration, as well as that of all visitors to them, whether at their departure from Great Britain, or at their arrival in the Colony.

" RATES OF PASSAGE, PROVISIONS INCLUDED.

	Chief Cabin, 'Tween Decks.	Fore Cabin.	Steerage Berth.	Steerage Cabin.
	Guineas.	Guineas.	Guineas.	Guineas.
Each person 14 years old and upwards . . }	45	25	15	20
Each child 7 years old and under 14 . . . }	27	15	9	12
Each child 1 year old and under 7 . . . }	18	10	6	8
Infants under 1 year old	—	—	—	—

" A separate agreement must be entered into with respect to Stern and Poop Cabins.

" A deposit is required of one-half the passage money, to be paid on securing the passage, and the remainder one day previous to embarkation.

" Freight is allowed free of charge, in the proportion of half a ton, or twenty cubic feet, to each adult passenger, for luggage only; and extra freight, at the discretion of the Directors, at the rate of 50s. per ton measurement; 25s. per ton dead-weight; and special articles as may be agreed on.

" An experienced surgeon is appointed, and medicines and medical comforts provided by the Company.

" A milch-cow is put on board for children of all classes, invalids, and the chief-cabin; some spices, and other extras for the chief-cabin, including the chief-cabin children; and yeast for converting a portion of the flour into bread for the same.

" The several articles of diet are varied from time to time, under the direction of the surgeon, so as to promote the health and comfort of the passengers, especially of children. Every article is of the best quality, and examined by the Company's inspector before shipment.

" The Commander of the vessel is allowed to lay in, at his own expense, and to supply to the chief and fore-cabin passengers, moderate quantities of the following articles, at the rates respectively stated—viz.

" Port wine	3s.	0d.	per bottle.
" Sherry	3s.	0d.	"
" Ale		10d.	"
" Porter		10d.	"

but no spirituous liquors are permitted to be sold on board, of any kind whatever.

" WEEKLY DIETARY.

ARTICLES.	Children of all Classes.	Chief Cabin.	Fore Cabin.	Steerage Cabin and Berth.
Prime India Beef . . .	..	1 lb.	$\frac{3}{4}$ lb.	$\frac{1}{2}$ lb.
Prime Mess Pork . . .	..	2 lbs.	$2\frac{1}{4}$ lbs.	$1\frac{1}{2}$ lb.
Preserved Meat, or Fish	$3\frac{1}{2}$ lbs.	4 lbs.	$2\frac{1}{4}$ lbs.	$1\frac{1}{2}$ lb.
Fresh Meat				
Biscuit	$1\frac{1}{2}$ lb.	$3\frac{1}{2}$ lbs.	$5\frac{1}{4}$ lbs.	$5\frac{1}{4}$ lbs.
Flour	$1\frac{3}{4}$ lb.	$3\frac{1}{2}$ lbs.	$3\frac{1}{2}$ lbs.	$1\frac{3}{4}$ lb.
Rice, Sago, or Outmeal	$1\frac{3}{4}$ lb.	$1\frac{3}{4}$ lb.	$1\frac{3}{4}$ lb.	$1\frac{3}{4}$ lbs.
Preserved Potatoes, if obtainable; if not, Rice, &c., to be sub- stituted				
Preserved Carrots . . .	..	..	..	..
Peas . . . . .	..	$\frac{1}{2}$ pint	$\frac{3}{4}$ pint	1 pint
Raisins	16 oz.	16 oz.	12 oz.	8 oz.
Suet	2 oz.	4 oz.	4 oz.	4 oz.
Butter . . . . .	..	8 oz.	8 oz.	8 oz.
Cheese . . . . .	..	8 oz.	..	..
Sugar	16 oz.	20 oz.	16 oz.	12 oz.
Tea . . . . .	..	4 oz.	3 oz.	2 oz.
Coffee . . . . .	..	4 oz.	3 oz.	2 oz.
Salt	2 oz.	2 oz.	2 oz.	2 oz.
Pepper . . . . .	..	$\frac{1}{4}$ oz.	$\frac{1}{4}$ oz.	$\frac{1}{4}$ oz.
Mustard . . . . .	..	$\frac{1}{2}$ oz.	$\frac{1}{2}$ oz.	$\frac{1}{2}$ oz.
Vinegar or Pickles . . .	..	$\frac{1}{2}$ pint	$\frac{1}{2}$ pint	$\frac{1}{2}$ pint
Tamarinds, Marmalade, or Treacle.	8 oz.	..	..	..
Milk	See below	See below	..	..
Water	14 qts.	28 qts.	$24\frac{1}{2}$ qts.	21 qts.

" MEMORANDUM FOR PASSENGERS.

" The ships sail on the days appointed; the comfort of individuals during the voyage very much depends upon the arrangements made by themselves before embarkation; exactness and punctuality are indispensable.

" The usual length of the voyage is about four months, or 120 days, and at whatever season of the year it may be made, the passengers have to pass through both very hot and very cold weather, and should therefore be prepared for both. Such articles should be

selected, whether of clothing or of furniture, &c., as are likely to be useful in the colony, and as occupy least space.

"All luggage must be alongside, and cleared, previous to the day fixed for leaving the docks. Each article should be distinctly marked with the name of the owner, and whether it is to be put into his cabin or the hold. In the cabin everything should be cleeted or otherwise secured before the ship begins to move; and, if possible, nothing whatever be left to be done at the last moment.

"Clearances, dock, and other charges, and the expense of reaching the port of embarkation, are required to be paid by the passengers themselves.

"No spirits or gunpowder are allowed to be taken on board.

"CHIEF-CABIN.

"The passengers provide their own furniture, bedding, and whatever else they consider necessary within their cabins.

"The Company or the owners of the ship supply everything that is required for the table, such as plate, linen, glass, &c., as well as provisions according to the established dietary as stated above.

"FORE-CABIN.

"Berths are constructed in each cabin, but the passengers find bedding and everything else for use during the voyage, excepting mattresses, bolsters, provisions, and cooking utensils.

"STEERAGE.

"Mattresses, bolsters, provisions, and cooking utensils are found by the Company; but blankets, sheets, and coverlets are not supplied, and of these the passengers must provide a sufficient stock for themselves and their families, at the rate of two blankets, six pairs of sheets, and a coverlet for each bed. They must also bring their own towels, soap, knives and forks, tin or pewter plates, spoons, and drinking mugs.

"The passengers must bring their own clothing; as a general rule, it may be stated, that the more abundant the stock the better for health and comfort; and all parties are particularly desired to observe that they will not be allowed to embark, unless they provide themselves with a sufficient supply for their health during the voyage. The lowest quantity should consist of the following—viz.

"Two complete suits of outer clothing, including two pairs of shoes; and one dozen changes of under clothing, including stockings.

"Each family should furnish itself with two canvas clothes' bags, as the heavy boxes and chests will be put away in the hold, and there will only be access to them once in every three or four weeks.

"The whole quantity of luggage for each adult passenger must not measure more than 20 cubic or solid feet. It should be divided into two or three boxes of not more than $2\frac{1}{2}$ or 3 feet long, by about

20 inches wide and 18 inches high, for the convenience of being more easily moved and got at.

"Extra freight must be paid for in *London*, at the rate of fifty shillings a ton. A great saving can be made by packing close, and not shipping boxes half filled.

"It is expected that, for the sake of themselves and of all on board, the passengers will pay the readiest attention, throughout the voyage, to the rules of the ship and the suggestions and regulations of the surgeon."

The above regulations and memoranda are dated 1st May 1848.

At New Zealand House may be inspected maps and drawings of various parts of the Company's territories, and of other districts in New Zealand; and some specimens and drawings of timber, flax, minerals, birds, and other indigenous productions of the Colony. In the Colonists' Room, to which there is free access, will be found files of the local newspapers and of the *New Zealand Journal*, besides several other publications relating to the Colony, Lloyd's List, and a London morning paper. Every necessary information is also readily afforded, and the greatest civility and attention paid to inquirers, by the Secretary, or by the Clerk of the Colonists' Room.

In Appendix C will be found a tabular account of all the ships, emigrants, &c., despatched to the Colony by the New Zealand Company, from their first preliminary expedition in 1839 up to September, 1848.

CHAPTER XIV.

Former Local Government of New Zealand. — Evils. — Present Government possesses equal Evils. — List of Ordinances passed by the Legislative Council.

UNTIL 1841, New Zealand was a dependency of New South Wales: and legislation on all subjects, including that of taxation, was carried on for the whole depen-

dency by a Lieutenant-governor, residing at Auckland, and a Council composed of his principal executive officers, (chiefly strangers to the Colonists,) together with two or three non-official members, who were named by the Lieutenant-governor from among the Colonists, and removable by him; but every act of his and of this Council was subject to the approval or disallowance of the Governor of New South Wales, as well as to that of the Secretary of state for the Colonies in London.

In May, 1841, New Zealand became a separate Colony; but the only change that took place was, that this virtually absolute legislative and executive authority, subject only to the veto of the Secretary of state in London, was in the hands of a Governor, instead of being in that of a Lieutenant-governor subject to the concurrence of a Governor above him. Nominally, the three senior Magistrates were the non-official members: but the Governor used to place in the commission of the peace, and at the head of the list, those persons whom he wished to appoint to seats in the Council. Nominally, the three non-official members were said to represent the Colonists:—but, in the first place, they were out-numbered by a majority of *ex-officio* members, and by the Governor, who presided, and had, moreover, a casting-vote besides his own; and, in the second place, obnoxious members were at once displaced by the Governor, notwithstanding their seniority, by the process above described.

At each of the settlements, there were stipendiary Magistrates, who had greater power in trying criminals than any two Justices of the peace; and who exercised, moreover, a vague kind of authority in other matters, as representatives of the Executive Government at Auckland. Graver offences were tried by Judges, appointed from England, and by juries taken from a jury-list, consisting of the male adults with the usual exemptions.

For a long while, there was not even a Coroner in some of the settlements.

The greatest inconvenience constantly resulted from this worthless method of government. Very often the inhabitants of the Cook's Strait Settlements heard, first by way of Sydney or Hobart Town, of the laws which had been made for them at Auckland, and had actually come into operation throughout the Colony for many weeks: and, notwithstanding the great numerical and material superiority of these Colonists, the taxes so arbitrarily imposed upon them were chiefly spent at the distant seat of legislation.

Another inconvenience arose from the capricious manner in which the power of disallowing laws passed by the Council was often exercised by the Secretary of state in England: so that some laws, when in actual operation, and when just beginning to work well, were suddenly replaced by the state of things which they had been devised to remedy, on the proclamation of such disallowance in the Gazette of the Colony. For instance, a Municipal Corporation, having been granted to Wellington, was becoming very useful, notwithstanding its very insufficient jurisdiction, because it provided for the management of some few local matters by the persons best acquainted with them: but when it had existed not quite a year, news arrived that the law by which it had been constituted was disallowed by Lord Stanley.

These laws, or ordinances as they are called in the Colony, were many of them so badly drawn up by the executive officers, who were often incapable, and totally free from the check of a *bonâ fide* deliberative assembly, that a very large proportion of the legislation during this period consisted of ordinances "to repeal or amend" former ordinances, on account of the discovery of technical blunders when they came to be tried by practice.

This state of things has been, as yet, but very little improved. In consequence of the abeyance of the imperfect Constitution which had been granted to New Zealand by the Act 9 & 10 Vict. cap. 103, and by the Orders in Council, Charter, and Royal Instructions issued in pursuance of it, the government of New Zealand still partakes of nearly the same absolute and arbitrary character, although with rather more pretensions to an infusion of the local representative principle. (See pp. 81, 84, 85, 86.)

New Zealand is now divided into two Provinces, called "New Munster" and "New Ulster," as already described at page 86; and it is understood that the southern part of the Middle Island, including Otago, will shortly be erected into a third Province.

Each of these provinces has a Lieutenant-governor. They reside at Wellington and Auckland respectively. Each Province is to have a Provincial Legislative Council, consisting of some members holding office, and some non-official members appointed to seats by the Lieutenant-governor, as by the Governor before, but removable either by him, or by the Governor-in-chief, or by the Secretary of state in London. For each Province the Lieutenant-governor and Provincial Council are to make laws and impose taxes, subject always to disallowance by the Governor-in-chief, or by the Secretary of state in London. And a civil list, to be expended according to the discretion of the Lieutenant-governor, is to be provided in the first instance from the supplies voted.

There is to be a general Council at Auckland, consisting of some members holding office in the general Government, and of some non-official members selected by the Governor-in-chief from the Provincial Councils, and removable by him. This general Council is to make laws and impose taxes for the whole Colony.

It is understood that Municipal Corporations, with very limited powers for local objects, will again be

erected in such large settlements as may desire it: and the Governor-in-chief has the power of altering the franchise in such boroughs as he may think fit, instead of being bound to that laid down by the Royal Instructions under the Act 9 & 10 Vict., cap. 103.

The Governor-in-chief has also the power of establishing the suspended Constitution, but founded on the so altered franchise, in either Province, at any time within the five years.

It will be seen that the governor-in-chief has still, until the end of the five years, really as complete control as before over the legislation and taxation of the whole Colony,—subject always, as before, to the veto of the Secretary of state in London, but to no control whatever from the Colonists themselves: as he will always have the power of displacing any member of either of the three Councils who may choose to oppose, even by speech, measures originated by his executive officers. Hitherto, the present Governor-in-chief has given some satisfaction by choosing from among the leading Colonists, instead of from among strangers as had formerly been the case, the executive officers of at least the southern Province, and appointing to an office under the general Government one of the principal Colonists of Nelson.

It is not easy to furnish an exact list of the Ordinances passed by the Legislative Council at Auckland from its first sitting up to the present time. The following list is taken from Mr. Grimstone's "*Statistics of the Southern Settlements*," omitting, however, the Ordinances enumerated by him as having been totally repealed or disallowed by the Secretary of state in England:—

Session, Number of Ordinance, &c.	Date of passing the Legislative Council.	TITLE.	Whether in operation, repealed, or other- wise.
4th Vic. Session I., 1841. No. 2.	1841. June 9.	<p>"An Ordinance to repeal within the said colony of New Zealand a certain act of the Governor and Legislative Council of New South Wales, made and passed in the fourth year of the reign of her present Majesty, and adopted under an Ordinance of the Governor and Legislative Council of New Zealand, for extending the laws of New South Wales to the said colony of New Zealand, and which said act of the Governor and Council of New South Wales, is intituled 'An Act to empower the Governor of New South Wales to appoint Commissioners with certain powers to examine and report on claims to grants of land in New Zealand,' and also to terminate any commission issued under the same, and to authorize the Governor of the colony of New Zealand to appoint Commissioners with certain powers, to examine and report on claims to grants of land therein, and to declare all other titles except those allowed by the Crown null and void."</p>	<p>Came into operation 10th June, 1841. Confirmed by her Majesty. Amended by No. 3, of Session III. Further amendment, No. 20, Session III.</p>
4th Vic. Session I. 1841. No. 3.	June 17.	<p>"An Ordinance to repeal within the said colony of New Zealand, the act of the Governor and Council of New South Wales, passed in the third year of her present Majesty's reign, intituled, 'An Act to repeal an Act, relating to the Revenue of Customs in New South Wales, and to provide for the general regulation thereof;' and also a certain other Act of the said Governor and Council of New South Wales, passed in the fourth year of the reign of her said present Majesty Queen Victoria, intituled 'An Act for increasing the Duties on Spirits, Wine, and other Goods and Mer-</p>	<p>Do. 18th June, 1841. Amended 20th June, 1844, by No. 6, of Session III. Amended by Nos. 6, 8, and 14, of Session VII, 1846.</p>

Session, Number of Ordinance, &c.	Date of passing the Legislative Council.	TITLE.	Whether in operation, repealed, or other- wise.
4th Vic. Session I. 1841. No. 4.	1841. June 24.	chandise, imported into the colony of New South Wales and its dependencies; and which said acts of the Governor and Council of New South Wales were adopted, and are now in force within the said colony of New Zealand and its dependencies; and to make provision for the collection of certain Duties on goods imported into, and for the general regulation of the Revenue of Customs in the colony of New Zealand and its dependencies." " An Ordinance for instituting and regulating Courts of General and Quarter Sessions, in the colony of New Zealand, and to authorize the holding of Petty Sessions within the same, and for defining their respective powers, and determining the places at which the same shall be holden, and for repealing within the colony of New Zealand, certain acts of the Governor and Council of New South Wales, adopted and now in force within the said colony of New Zealand."	Came into operation 25th June, 1841. Confirmed by her Majesty. In the interim partly repealed 5 Vic., Session II., No. 2.
No. 5.	June 23.	" An Ordinance for prohibiting the Distillation of Spirits within the colony of New Zealand."	Do. 24th June, 1841. Confirmed by her Majesty. In the interim repealed 8 Vic., Session III., No. 13.*
5th Vic. Session II. 1841. No. 3.	Dec. 23.	" An Ordinance to regulate the Constitution of Juries."	Do. 24th Dec., 1841. Confirmed by her Majesty. Amended by No. 2, Session III.
Session II. 1842. No. 4.	1842. Jan. 21.	" An Ordinance for extending the powers of Police Magistrates."	Do. 1st Mar. 1842. Confirmed by her Majesty. Repealed by No. 15 of Sess. VII., 1846.

* In this, and many other cases, the repealed Ordinance was still waiting the Royal Assent, when the list was made out.

Session, Number of Ordinance, &c.	Date of passing the Legislative Council.	TITLE.	Whether in operation, repealed, or o: her- wise.
5th Vic. Session II. 1842. No. 5.	1842. Jan. 21.	" An Ordinance to regulate summary proceedings before Justices of the Peace."	Came into opera- tion 1st Mar. 1842. Amended July 16, 1844, by No. 15, of Session III.
No. 9.	1841. Dec. 28.	" An Ordinance to provide for the Registration of Deeds and Instruments affecting Real Property."	Extended to Auck- land, August 15, 1842. Extended to Wel- lington and Nel- son, Oct. 1, 1845. Royal assent sus- pended.
No. 10.	1842. Jan. 18.	" An Ordinance to facilitate the Transfer of Real Property, and to simplify the laws relat- ing thereto."	Do. 1st March, 1842. Amended July 4, 1844, by No. 2, of Session III.
No. 11.	Feb. 21.	" An Ordinance to render certain Marriages valid."	Do. 22d Feb. 1842.
No. 12.	Feb. 10.	" An Ordinance for regulat- ing the sale of Fermented and Spirituuous Liquors."	Do. 1st Mar. 1842. Confirmed by her Majesty. Amended 17th July, 1844, by No. 21, Session III.
No. 13.	March 15.	" An Ordinance for Licens- ing Auctioneers."	Do. 25th April, 1842. Confirmed do. Amended 29th June, 1844, by No. 10 of Sess. III.
No. 15.	Feb. 21.	" An Ordinance to provide for the Regulation of Har- bours."	Do. 22d February, 1842. Amended July 16, 1844, by No. 17 of Session III.
No. 16.	March 14.	" An Ordinance to provide for the summary Recovery of Compensation for Damage done by Cattle Trespassing."	Do. 25th April, 1842. Confirmed by her Majesty. Amended Oct. 10, 1844, by No. 14 of Sess. III.
No. 17.	March 3.	" An Ordinance for impos- ing a tax upon Raupo Houses."	Repealed by No. 17 of Sess. VII., 1846. Extended to Auck- land 16th May, 1842. Do. to Wel- lington 30th Mar., 1843. Confirmed do. do.

Session, Number of Ordinance, &c.	Date of passing the Legislative Council.	TITLE.	Whether in operation, repealed, or other- wise.
5th Vic. Session II. 1842. No. 18. No. 19.	1842. March 15. March 15.	"An Ordinance to secure the Copyright of Printed Books to the Authors thereof." "An Ordinance to repeal an Ordinance enacted by the Governor of New Zealand, with the advice and consent of the Legislative Council thereof, whereby the laws of New South Wales were declared to extend to, and be in force in the colony of New Zealand."	Came into operation 16th March, 1842. Confirmed do. do. Do. do. 25th April, 1842. Confirmed by her Majesty.
Private Or- dinance. Session II. 1841. No. 1. 7th Vic. Session III. 1844. No. 1.	1841. Dec. 22.	"An Ordinance to simplify legal proceedings by and against the New Zealand Banking Company."	Do. Dec. 23, 1841.
No. 2.	Jan. 13.	"An Ordinance for establishing a Supreme Court."	Do. 14th January, 1844.
No. 3.	Jan. 13.	"An Ordinance to make temporary provision for the Constitution of Juries."	Amended by No. 3, of Session VII., 1846. In part repealed by No. 4 of same Session.
No. 5.	June 6.	"An Ordinance to amend the Land Claims Ordinance." Session I., No. 2.	Do. 14th January, 1844.
8th Vic. No. 6.	June 20.	"An Ordinance to appropriate the Revenue for the year 1844."	Do. June 7, 1844.
No. 7.	June 25.	"An Ordinance to amend an Ordinance enacted by the Governor and Council of New Zealand, Session I., No. 3, to repeal certain Acts of the Governor and Council of New South Wales, to make provision for the collection of certain Duties on Goods imported into, and for the general regulation of the Revenue of Customs in, the colony of New Zealand and its dependencies." "An Ordinance for the relief of Persons Imprisoned for Debt."	Do. June 21, 1844. Repealed Sept. 28, 1844, by No. 2 of Session IV. Re-enacted 9th April, 1845, by No. 4 of Sess. V. Amended by 6, 8, and 14, of Session VII., 1846.

Session, Number of Ordinance, &c.	Date of passing the Legislative Council.	TITLE.	Whether in operation, repealed, or other- wise.
8th Vic., Session III. 1844. No. 8.	1844. June 27.	"An Ordinance to establish Courts of Requests for the more easy and speedy Recovery of Small Debts."	Came into operation, Oct. 1, 1844. Do.
No. 9.	June 29.	"An Ordinance for appointing a Board of Trustees for the management of property to be set apart for the Education and Advancement of the Native Race."	Awaiting Royal assent.
No. 10.	June 29.	"An Ordinance to amend an Ordinance for Licensing Auctioneers."	Do. 30th June. 1844. Confirmed by her Majesty.
No. 11.	July 4.	"An Ordinance to amend an Ordinance to facilitate the transfer of Real Property, and to simplify the law relating thereto."	Do. July 5, 1844. Confirmed by her Majesty.
No. 12.	July 9.	"An Ordinance to provide for the establishment and regulation of Municipal Corporations."	Awaiting Royal assent.
No. 13.	July 11.	"An Ordinance to repeal an Ordinance for prohibiting the Distillation of Spirits within the colony of New Zealand."	Do. ..
No. 14.	July 11.	"An Ordinance to amend an Ordinance to provide for the Summary Recovery of Compensation for Damages done by Cattle Trespassing."	Came into operation 1st October, 1844. Confirmed by her Majesty. Repealed by No. 17 of Sess. VII., 1846.
No. 15.	July 16.	"An Ordinance to amend an Ordinance to regulate summary proceedings before Justices of the Peace."	Do. 17th July, 1844.
No. 16.	July 16.	"An Ordinance for the admission, in certain cases, of unsworn testimony in Civil and Criminal Proceedings."	Do. 17th July, 1844.
No. 17.	July 16.	"An Ordinance to amend an Ordinance to provide for the Regulation of Harbours."	Do. 17th July, 1844.
No. 18.	July 16.	"An Ordinance to exempt, in certain cases, Aboriginal Native Population of the colony from the ordinary process and operation of the law."	Came into operation 17th July, 1844. Repealed by No. 15 of Sess. VII.

Session, Number of Ordinance, &c.	Date of passing the Legislative Council.	TITLE.	Whether in operation, repealed, or other- wise.
8th Vic., Session III. 1844. No. 19.	1844. July 17.	"An Ordinance to provide a summary mode of abating the nuisance of Dogs wandering at large in Towns."	Came into operation 18th July, 1844. Confirmed by her Majesty.
No. 20.	July 17.	"An Ordinance to remove doubts respecting the Legal Estate in lands granted to Land Claimants."	Do. 18th July, 1844.
No. 21.	July 17.	"An Ordinance to amend an Ordinance for regulating the sale of Fermented and Spirituous Liquors."	Do. 18th July, 1844.
Private Or- dinances. No. 1.	July 11.	"An Ordinance for facilitating proceedings by and against a certain Joint Stock Company called the 'Union Bank of Australia,' and for other purposes therein mentioned."	Do. Jan. 1, 1845.
No. 2.	July 16.	"An Ordinance for the Naturalization of certain German Settlers in the colony of New Zealand."	Do. 17th July, 1844. Confirmed by her Majesty.
8th Vic., Session IV. 1844. No. 1.	Sept. 26.	"An Ordinance to confirm certain Rules, Forms, and Tables of Fees, touching the practice in the Supreme Court."	Do. 27th Sept. 1844.
8th Vic., Session V. 1845. No. 1.	1845. March 25.	"An Ordinance for raising a Militia within the colony."	Do. Mar. 26, 1845.
No. 2.	April 1.	"An Ordinance for appropriating the Revenue for the year 1845."	Do. 2d April, 1845.
No. 3.	April 3.	"An Ordinance for imposing Fees on the delivery of Crown Grants in certain cases."	Do. 4th April, 1845. Repealed by No. 11 of Sess. VII., 1846.
No. 5.	April 19.	"An Ordinance to make a further appropriation of the Revenue for the year 1845."	Do. April 20, 1845.
No. 6.	April 19.	"An Ordinance to empower owners and occupiers of land within certain districts to repair and maintain Highways and Public Works within the same, and to make and levy Rates for defraying the expenses thereof."	Not yet in operation.
No. 7.	April 22.	"An Ordinance to provide for the application of Fines imposed in cases of summary conviction for Assault."	Came into operation 23rd April, 1845.

Session, Number of Ordinance, &c.	Date of passing the Legislative Council.	TITLE.	Whether in operation, repealed, or other- wise.
8th Vic., Session V. 1845. No. 8.	1845. April 22.	"An Ordinance for bringing into operation certain Acts of the Imperial Parliament."	Came into operation 1st July, 1845.
Private Ordinances. No. 1.	April 3.	"An Ordinance for the Naturalization of certain persons in the colony of New Zealand."	Awaiting Royal assent.
No. 2.	April 3.	"An Ordinance for the Naturalization of certain German Settlers in the colony of New Zealand."	Came into operation 4th April, 1845.
9th Vic., Session VI. 1845, No. 1.	Dec. 13.	"An Ordinance to empower the Governor of New Zealand to regulate the importation and sale of Arms, Gunpowder, and other Warlike Stores."	Do. 21st Jan. 1846. Confirmed by her Majesty.
10th Vic., Session VII. 1846. No. 1.	1846. Oct. 8.	"An Ordinance for the naturalization of certain persons in the colony of New Zealand."	Awaiting Royal assent.
No. 2.	Oct. 9.	"An Ordinance to provide for the establishment and maintenance of a Constabulary Force."	Came into operation 10th October, 1846.
No. 3.	Oct. 12.	"An Ordinance to amend an Ordinance for establishing a Supreme Court, and to establish a Court of Appeals."	Do. 13th Oct. 1846.
No. 4.	Oct. 12.	"An Ordinance to regulate the appointment and duties of Sheriffs in the colony of New Zealand."	Do. 13th Oct. 1846.
No. 5.	Oct. 15.	"An Ordinance to regulate the appointment and duties of Coroners in the colony of New Zealand."	Do. 16th Oct. 1846.
No. 6.	Oct. 15.	"An Ordinance to authorize the importation of Wine, duty free, for Military and Naval officers serving in the colony of New Zealand."	Do. 16th Oct. 1846.
No. 7.	Oct. 15.	"An Ordinance for the Regulation of Prisons."	Do. 16th Oct. 1846.
No. 8.	Oct. 20.	"An Ordinance to amend the 'Customs Ordinance,' Sess. I., No. 3, and the 'Customs Amendment Ordinance,' Session III., No. 6."	Do. 21st Oct. 1846.
No. 9.	Oct. 26.	"An Ordinance for the support of Destitute Families and Illegitimate Children."	Do. 27th Oct. 1846.

Session, Number of Ordinance, &c.	Date of passing the Legislative Council.	TITLE.	Whether in operation, repealed, or other- wise.
10th Vic., Session VII. 1846. No. 10.	1846. Oct. 26.	"An Ordinance for establishing Standard Weights and Measures, and for the prevention of the use of such as are false and deficient."	Came into operation 27th October, 1846.
No. 11.	Nov. 3.	"An Ordinance to repeal the 'Crown Grants Ordinance,' Session V., No. 3, and to impose Fees for the delivery of all Crown Grants."	Do. 4th Nov. 1846.
No. 12.	Nov. 5.	"An Ordinance to confirm certain Rules, Forms, and Tables of Fees touching the practice of the Supreme Court."	Do. 6th Nov. 1846.
No. 13.	Nov. 6.	"An Ordinance to appropriate the Revenue for the year 1847."	Do. 7th Nov. 1846.
No. 14.	Nov. 6.	"An Ordinance to alter certain Duties of Customs."	Do. 7th Nov. 1846.
No. 15.	Nov. 7.	"An Ordinance to repeal the 'Police Magistrates Ordinance' and the 'Native Exemption Ordinance.'"	To come into operation on the 1st May, 1847.
No. 16.	Nov. 7.	"An Ordinance to provide for the establishment of Resident Magistrates' Courts, and to make special provision for the Administration of Justice in certain cases."	By Proclamation at any time the Governor may think fit, but throughout the colony on the 1st May, 1847.
No. 17.	Nov. 10.	"An Ordinance to repeal the 'Cattle Trespass Ordinance' and the 'Cattle Trespass Amendment Ordinance,' and to provide for the summary recovery of compensation for damage done by Cattle Trespassing."	Came into operation on the 1st January, 1847.
No. 18.	Nov. 12.	"An Ordinance to regulate the removal and the making and repairing of Arms, Gunpowder, and other Warlike Stores, within the colony of New Zealand."	Do. do.
No. 19.	Nov. 16.	"An Ordinance to provide for the prevention by summary proceedings of unauthorised Purchases and Leases of Lands."	Do. 17th November, 1846.

Session, Number of Ordinance, &c.	Date of passing the Legislative Council.	TITLE.	Whether in operation, repealed, or other- wise.
10th Vic., Session VII. 1846. No. 20.	1846. Nov. 18.	"An Ordinance for establishing Courts of Sessions of the Peace."	To come into operation by Proclamation whenever the Governor shall deem fit.
No. 21.	Nov. 18.	"An Ordinance to make provision for the safe custody of, and prevention of offences by, Persons dangerously Insane, and for the care and maintenance of Persons of Unsound Mind."	Came into operation on the 19th November, 1846.
No. 22.	Nov. 18.	"An Ordinance to authorise compensation in Colonial Debentures, to be made to certain claimants to land in the colony of New Zealand."	Do. do.

Several alterations have been made in the above Ordinances since November, 1846, and several new ones have been passed; but it is impossible to obtain a perfectly correct list of them to a more recent date.*

CHAPTER XV.

Preparations necessary for a Colonist.—Special Education.—What to Learn.—Languages.—Mathematics.—Arts founded on them.—Geology.—Botany.—Chemistry.—Surgery.—Agriculture.—Music.—Cookery.—Various other useful branches of knowledge.—Political Economy.—What to buy for Exportation, and how to Export.—Clothes.—Saddlery, Harness, &c.—Carriage.—Cattle.—Sheep.—Horses.—Dogs.—House.—Furniture.—Fire-arms, &c.—Agricultural Instruments.—Boats.—Mathematical Instruments.—Musical Instruments.—Cricket Apparatus, &c.—Birds.—Game.—Seeds and Plants.—Money.—Land-Orders, or Land.—Books, &c.—Engravings.—Hints for the Passage.—What to do on Arrival.

It will not, perhaps, be thought impertinent to the object of this work, to point out to the intending Colonist of what preparations he stands in need. It has not

* The Ordinances, when finally confirmed, are published in the papers laid before Parliament; and may be found on looking over a series of those papers relating to New Zealand.

been uncommon for persons to engage in colonization who were totally devoid of the slightest knowledge, not only of the country to which they were going, but of what it was necessary to take with them, and of what they would have to do on their arrival. For instance, among the early Wellington Colonists, there were some who took their skates with them, and others who imagined they had discovered marble, on seeing a vein of quartz. This is only to be equalled by the ignorance of that British Government, which, during the war of 1812 with the United States, sent out water-tanks from England for the use of the frigates which were to sail on the fresh-water lakes of Canada.

It has been too common a mistake to suppose that any one may fairly expect to succeed in colonization without as careful an education for that purpose as he would require for any other pursuit. Young men receive a special education for the army, the navy, the Church, the bar, physic, or commerce: perhaps it is still more required in order to be well prepared for the duties of a good Colonist. If, indeed, systematic colonization from this country should ever be promoted on a large scale, it will be found most important to establish schools and colleges in which such an education shall be given.

WHAT TO LEARN.

It will not be attempted here to lay down all that this education should comprise: but in alluding to the peculiar advantages of certain kinds of knowledge, the simplest and most efficacious means of acquiring them will be pointed out; and every intending Colonist of New Zealand is strongly urged to devote as much time, labour, and expense, as may be suitable to his particular means, in thus becoming ready for his future life.

LANGUAGES.

French.—There are many French whaling-ships and men-of-war in the South Seas, French settlements at Tahiti and at the Marquesas Islands, and one in New Zealand itself.

German.—Many Germans emigrate every year to the Australian colonies, and there are some in New Zealand. A few South Sea whalers are fitted out from Bremen and Hamburgh.

Spanish.—The trade and communication between New Zealand and the Spanish colonies, both in the Philippine Islands and in South America, is constantly increasing.

MATHEMATICS.—It seems almost needless to say how important is a good knowledge of Mathematics. It is absolutely essential, as a mere step to the acquisition of several arts and sciences which are among the most useful to a Colonist: among these are **LAND-SURVEYING, CIVIL ENGINEERING, MECHANICS** and a knowledge of **MACHINERY, ARCHITECTURE, and NAVIGATION.**

On *Land-Surveying*, a book recommended to the beginner is *Practical Geodesy*, by J. Butler Williams: Parker, 1846. The use of the instruments is only to be acquired by actual practice, under the direction of an experienced surveyor, capable of teaching what he knows. By a knowledge of land-surveying, the Colonist may often save himself much expense and doubt. As a pursuit, too, it is particularly profitable in newly-settled countries.

Civil Engineering is now taught in a college established at Putney for the especial purpose, and lectures on the subject are also given at University College, by Professor Harman Lewis, M.A. Besides the class-books used there, the colonist should read Stephenson's *Civil Engineering in America*. This author forcibly describes how to make the most of rough materials for great works in new countries. The student's attention should be especially directed to the *construction of roads and bridges, piers, jetties, and wharves, embankments and flood-gates, canals, locks, and mill-dams, wells, aqueducts (both open and covered), and the tunnels, shafts, galleries, and other works practised in mining operations.* He should, if possible, observe such work actually in progress, as well as learn the principles on which it is done. There is no lack of opportunities for such observation in this busy country.

Mechanics.—A sound knowledge of mechanics is of the greatest use in a colony, where every one has occasion to move heavy bodies, such as spars, houses, ships, &c., and desires to do so in the most effectual way, and with the least expensive application of labour. In the first operations of founding a settlement, the man who knows how to make the best use of a crane or derrick for landing goods, how to fix and pull on a rope in the best way, where to put a wedge in splitting up a log &c., has a manifest advantage over one who does not possess that knowledge, however simple it may seem. Sailors are always invaluable in these matters, from their constant practice

in overcoming mechanical difficulties. Lectures are given on the *Mechanical principles of Engineering* at University College, by Professor Eaton Hodgkinson, F.R.S. The student is recommended to read *Müller's Physics*; *Bird's Natural Philosophy*; *Arnott's Physics*; *Kater's Mechanics* (from *Lardner's Cyclopædia*); and *Mosley's Mechanics*.

Machinery.—After acquiring a knowledge of the elementary parts of machines, their formation, combination, and application to various manufactures, accompanying such study with personal observation of the machinery always open to inspection at Manchester, Birmingham, and our other great manufacturing emporiums, the colonist should especially turn his attention to those classes of machinery employed in *saw-mills, flour-mills, and oil-mills,* flax and hemp-works, rope-walks, and looms*, and in *agricultural and mining operations*,—whether the power employed be *wind, water, the labour of animals, or steam*. Lectures are given at University College on *Machinery*, by Professor Bennet Woodcroft.

Architecture should be studied, with regard both to public buildings and to private residences, and with a view no less to the knowledge and economical use of various materials, than to the attainment of good taste in design. Lectures on *Architecture and Construction* are given at University College by Professor Donaldson, M.I.B.A. They are divided into two portions,—one treating of *Architecture* as a fine art, and the other as a science. The following books on the subject are especially recommended:—*Loudon's Cyclopædia of Cottage, Farm, and Villa Architecture*; *Tredgold's Elementary Principles of Carpentry*; and *Gicill's Chambers's Civil Architecture*.

Navigation.—A very useful branch of knowledge in so maritime a country as New Zealand. It may readily be acquired during the sea-voyage, in conjunction with *Seamanship* and *Marine Surveying*. The best book on the subject is *Raper's Navigation*.

GEOLOGY.—This is most important, as a knowledge of geology and mineralogy not only may lead to the discovery in various places of the minerals with which there is every reason to believe that New Zealand abounds, but also serves to acquaint the student with the nature of the soil and sub-soil which he may expect in the neighbourhood of various kinds of rocks. It will teach him, too, how to detect limestone, marble, granite, &c., and indeed, indicate to him whereabouts he should look for them. Descriptions, too, of tracts of country traversed in exploring expeditions, are much more valuable when they comprise information on this and other scientific subjects. Lectures on *Geology* are given at King's College by Professor Ansted, M.A., F.R.S.; and at University College by Professor

* With a view to pressing oil from the seeds of the titoki and of the New Zealand flax. See pp. 143, 148.

Andrew Crombie Ramsay. These Lectures can be illustrated by visits to the Geological Department of the British Museum; and to the Museum of Economic Geology in Craig's Court; which are both open to the public.

The following books are recommended to the student:—

Sir H. de la Bêche's How to Observe Geology; *Griffin's Treatise on Mineralogy (from the Encycl. Metrop.)*; *Lyell's Elements of Geology*; *Lyell's Principles of Geology*; *Ansted's Geology*; *Mantell's Wonders of Geology*; and *Phillips's Mineralogy*, edited by Allan.

BOTANY should be acquired, in order to be able to furnish accounts of indigenous plants, to understand how those from other countries can best be introduced and acclimatized, and to be aware of the useful qualities possessed by each plant of whichever kind. Dr. Lindley's Lectures at University College, which begin in April, and last till the end of July, are generally allowed to be the best on the subject. His books should also be studied. These are—

Lindley's School Botany, *Lindley's Elements of Botany*, *Lindley's Theory of Horticulture*. Also *Jussieu's Cours de Botanique (published by Baillière)*.

Learn how to collect and prepare dried plants, in order to be sent to England from the colony. Printed directions for this purpose are to be procured, by a bonâ fide Colonist or Traveller, at the British Museum, on application to the Curator of the Botanical Department.

CHEMISTRY.—The Colonist will never regret having learned how to test and analyse various substances, such as Metallic Ores of various kinds, Building-stone, Coal, Limestone, Soils and Manures of all sorts, Plants suitable to the production of drugs, colouring matter, or dye-stuffs, &c., &c. An ordinary agriculturist of modern times is expected to know something of chemistry: and such knowledge, if complete, may be advantageously applied to Brewing and many other profitable processes. Lectures on *Chemistry*, both *Theoretical and Practical*, so as to include *Chemical Manipulation, Analysis, and Experiment*, are given at King's College by Professor W. A. Miller, M.D.; and at University College by Professor Fownes. At both institutions there are excellent laboratories. There is also a College of Practical Chemistry, in Hanover Square. The best books are:—*Kane's Elements*; *Turner and Gregory's Organic and Inorganic Chemistry*; *Parnell's applied Chemistry*; *Johnston's Agricultural Chemistry*; and *Liebig's Agricultural Chemistry*.

SURGERY.—The Colonist should learn *how to bleed, set a broken or dislocated limb, and bind wounds*. If he can even learn *how to amputate a limb*, so much the better. A comparatively short attendance on the Demonstrations at Bartholomew or Guy's Hospital will impart this knowledge. An excellent Hand-book on the subject is, *Household Surgery*, by John F. South, published by C. Cox, 1847.

A more scientific book of reference is *Druitt's Surgeon's Vade Mecum*. Churchill. 1841.

AGRICULTURE in general, including the knowledge of Horses, Sheep, and Cattle of all kinds, and a thorough acquaintance with the different systems of Drainage and modes of Constructing Fences, is only to be acquired by some experience. The best way is to be apprenticed for some year or two to a good farmer on a large scale. There is, indeed, an Agricultural College at Cirencester, in Gloucestershire.

Books to be studied.—The Volumes of the *Library of Useful Knowledge on British Husbandry, Cattle, Sheep, Horse, Dog, and Pig*. The *Book of the Farm*, by Henry Stephens, in 3 volumes, Blackwood and Sons, 1842, is a most complete and scientific work, which the Colonist should certainly possess.

Care should be taken to acquire this knowledge without any prejudice in favour of methods now practised in England; for in many cases, ruder processes may be found more suitable to colonial means, and in others, the difference in climate will make a difference in methods of cultivation. With this precaution, the Colonist must derive advantage from having made himself a thoroughly good practical as well as theoretical agriculturist before leaving the mother-country. Especially he should become acquainted with the *due rotation of crops*, only adapting it to the different circumstances of the colony, but bearing carefully in mind the principle on which it is founded, of renewing the productive powers of the soil before it becomes irretrievably exhausted. An excellent work, which cannot be too much in the hands of the Colonist, is *The Farmer's and Emigrant's Handbook*, 2nd edition, published by Appleton & Co., of New York, in 1845. It must be remembered that much of it, which applies to the Continent of America, does not to New Zealand,—especially where Climate is referred to: but the greater part of the contents are of the utmost consequence to the beginner in any Colony.

VETERINARY SURGERY should also be acquired as fully as possible: and generally all that relates to the Breeding of Cattle, Sheep, and Horses; the latter especially, as New Zealand will soon vie with Australia, which already supplies many horses to the cavalry of the East Indies. *By all means learn how to shoe a horse.*

MUSIC is an accomplishment of infinite value to the possessor and his or her friends, as a recreation in the intervals of a Colonist's labour, and as a relief to the solitude of a distant location. It should be learned *before* starting on the voyage. Nothing is so disagreeable as a fellow-passenger who is *learning* to sing or to play some instrument.

COOKERY.—Ladies intending to colonize will of course learn it. There is in New Zealand such variety and abundance of the best materials for food, that even *Soyer's Book* may be studied and

packed up for the colonial library. To men, some knowledge of cookery, such as making bread, &c., comes not amiss in exploring expeditions ; and the ability to kill and clean a hog or a sheep is far from useless.

CARPENTERING and Turning, and the use of the Axe in felling or splitting timber, should be acquired.

The following Arts are also recommended for study ; though as to most of them it is needless to point out how they can be acquired :—

Drawing and Painting.

Ship Building and Rigging.—This is very important. The abundance of timber, and the number of havens on the long line of coast, ensure the building of many vessels in the colony.

Curing and Smoking Beef and Pork, Hams, Bacon, Fish, &c.

Tanning is likely to be a great trade in New Zealand, as hides will soon abound, and there are plenty of excellent tan-barks—(See pp. 142 and 265). At Bermondsey there are extensive tanneries, well worthy of observation and study.

The Art of Defence in all its branches, including *Fencing* and the *Broadsword Exercise, Boxing, Wrestling, Shooting (with Fowling-piece, Rifle, and Pistol,) &c.*

Sailing, in boats or small vessels.

Rowing, with sailors' oars, in rough water.

Steering a vessel, either rowing or sailing. Especially the use of the steer-oar in whale-boats, as this is commonly met with in New Zealand.—(See p. 155.)

Swimming is indispensable ; and *Riding* and *Driving* constantly requisite.

Political Economy, as far as it relates to colonization. On this subject a few works are recommended to the student, for careful and attentive perusal :—

England and America. Bentley. 1831.

Report of a Committee of the House of Commons on the Disposal of Waste Lands in the British Colonies. 1836. And Evidence appended to the same.

The Earl of Durham's Reports on British North America ; especially those relating to Waste Lands and Immigration. 1839.

Grahame's History of the United States. 4 vols. Smith and Elder. 1836.

De Tocqueville's Democracy in America.

Stuart's Three Years in the United States.

Letters from Canada and the United States. By J. R. Godley, Esq. Murray. 1840.

The Bushman. By — Landor, Esq. 1847.

Reports of, and Evidence before, a select Committee of the House of Lords on Emigration from Ireland. 1847-8.

A Voice from the Bush. By John Sidney, Esq. Smith and Elder. 1847.

- Recollections of Australia. By — Hodgson, Esq. 1847.
 Political Economy. By John Stuart Mill, Esq. Parker. 1848.
 Lectures on Colonization and Colonies. By Professor Merivale.
 2 vols. Longman. 1842.
 Sir William Molesworth's Speech on Colonial Expenditure.
 Ridgway. 1848.

WHAT TO BUY AND TAKE WITH YOU.

CLOTHES.—As to those required for the voyage, the outfitters can always give good information; but a few hints may be acceptable.

The length of the voyage is on an average 120 days; and as no water is allowed for washing clothes, it is necessary to provide a sufficient stock of linen for this time. By stowing away in canvas bags that which has been used, and occasionally airing it on deck in fine weather, much of it may be preserved for washing on arrival, and subsequent use in the bush.

Take rough, strong clothing for the voyage, and much of it will serve afterwards in the colony. Thin clothing is required for about one month of the passage passed within the tropics; and thick warm clothing for rather more than a month of cold damp weather passed in the latitude of about 41° S., between the Cape of Good Hope and the end of the voyage. Both kinds are available in New Zealand afterwards. Have no fear of taking too much strong useful clothing: it will always fetch its value: finery only is superfluous. A suit or two of dress clothes lasts a long while in a colony.

A good Scotch *maud*, or *plaid*, and a *Mackintosh sheet* to spread under your blankets, prove useful on exploring parties. A *Mackintosh air-bed*, too, has been found useful. The Bishop of New Zealand once used one as a canoe, while on an expedition through the interior. (See "*Annals of the New Zealand Diocese*," p. 101.)

Take plenty of broad-brimmed straw hats, cloth forage-caps, with oilskin covers, and sailor's tarpaulin hats. You are sure to lose two or three on the voyage.

Shoes.—Thick shoes, with cork soles, are requisite for walking on the wet deck. Take a good stock of boots and shoes of all kinds, especially stout shooting boots, with plenty of nails in the soles, riding-boots, and fishing-boots, for use in the colony. Such as are not wanted during the voyage should be packed in cases lined with tin and soldered down. On arrival they should be greased and kept in a dry place. They are always the better for a long seasoning before use.

Take a good stock of **SADDLERY**, *Harness*, *Whips*, *Spurs*, &c., as they can always be sold at a profit, if not wanted for use. The *saddle* should be fitted with holsters, saddle-bags, and rings before and behind, with straps to fit for fastening on blankets or a valise. A pack-saddle or two, and a set of colt breaking apparatus, will be found of use. Take both cart harness and gig harness.

CARRIAGE.—A strong modern *dog cart*, or *taxed cart*, will be most serviceable. You can make a packing-case of the body, and pack the shafts, wheels, and springs separately, so as to cost little in freight. At any rate, take *wheels* and *springs*; the rest can be made in the colony.

CATTLE.—Those imported into New Zealand from Australia are chiefly of the short-horned breed. By all means, if you can afford it, take a thorough-bred bull or cow, of the best kinds, from England. It is of the utmost importance, if you intend to be an owner of flocks and herds, to begin with stock which you know to possess genuine blood. By early application to the broker of the ship in which you are going, you may generally secure a free passage for a cow with her calf, in order that the cabin table may be supplied with milk; so that you will only have to insure against loss and to provide food. Otherwise, you have to pay also for the freight of water and provisions, for fittings and attendance. A cow should be sent, if possible, with her first calf by her side. A bull should be two years old when put on board. The cost will vary according to the ship, and the arrangement that can be made. As some guide, here is a rough account of the expenses actually incurred on a bull that was sent from England to Wellington in the year 1844:—

Cost of bull (say)	£12	0	0
Provisions, fittings, and attendance on voyage	10	0	0
Freight, primage, and charges	20	0	0
Insurance on £50, at 21 per cent. (with policy, 5s. 3d.)	10	15	3
Total cost landed	82	15	3

The provisions for the voyage for a cow and calf will cost about 8*l*. The insurance is against all risks, *including mortality and jetsam*, and varies, according to the season of the year and other circumstances, from 12 to 21 per cent.

SHEEP.—Take thorough-bred rams and ewes, of sorts famous for their fleece. Remember always, that, excepting the insurance, it costs no more to take out a valuable than a comparatively worthless ram. Count Gersdorff is the owner of a flock of Merino sheep, celebrated for their excellence of fleece and beauty in other respects, at his estates of Hermsdorff and Jannowitz, near Dresden, in Saxony. He asks 50*l*. each for his rams, and 5*l*. each for his ewes, delivered at Hamburgh. The Russian government bought 200 ewes of him at this price in the year 1847. Two sample fleeces (of young rams) may be seen at New Zealand House on application to the Clerk of the Colonists' Room; and the Count will gladly show his flocks to intending purchasers on the spot. Sheep-farming may also be seen in great perfection, and on a large scale, at several places in the Highlands of Scotland.

The following is an account of the cost of two rams and four ewes of Lord Western's Merino breed, which were sent from London to Wellington in September, 1845:—

	£.	s.	d.
One ram and two ewes cost..	30	0	0
One ram and two ewes cost..	18	0	0
Freight, primage, and charges	32	8	0
Shepherd on board	2	12	6
Fitting long-boat	2	10	0
One ton of hay	6	0	0
Three sacks of oats	3	0	0
Three sacks of bran			
Half-a-ton of turnips			
Insurance on 150 <i>l.</i> at 15 $\frac{3}{4}$ per cent.	23	12	6
Policy	0	8	6
	<hr/>		
	24	1	0
	<hr/>		
	£118 11 6		

HORSES.—Although a good stock is imported from Australia, the Colonist should take well-bred horses, if within his means. Horses fit for draught purposes are rare in the Australian colonies: and the importer of really good Clydesdale mares would probably do well. It is of course waste of money to ship any horses not of first-rate qualifications and undoubted pureness. They require the greatest vigilance and care, whether during embarkation, on the voyage, or on landing.

DOGS.—The most useful kinds are the following:—*Terrier*, for killing rats; *Newfoundland*, or *Water-spaniel*, for shooting wild-fowl, and crossing rivers; *Boar-hound*; the same, by crossing with the *Bloodhound*, for a watch-dog, and with the *Scotch Deer-hound*, to breed boar-hounds; *Pointer*, for quail-shooting; *Scotch colly*, and other *Shepherd's dogs*. The best way to carry dogs, is to have a kennel fitted for them in, or under, the long-boat. The freight charged is usually from 3*l.* to 5*l.* You must take oatmeal, or spoilt navy biscuit, as food. You will be able to obtain straw enough for bedding from the casks of bottled liquors, &c., opened during the passage. Let your dog have plenty of exercise about the decks, but have his kennel fastened so that you alone can open it, and never let him out when he will be in the way of either passengers or crew.

HOUSE.—When the first Colonists went to the settlements in Cook's Strait, they took with them many wooden houses which had been constructed in England, so as to take to pieces, pack, and be put together again on landing. This was a very necessary precaution on arriving in a land where there was sure to be no sawn timber ready for them. At the present time, however, there are numerous saw-mills at all the existing settlements, which supply excellent

building timber at lower prices than it can be carried out from England; and the cost of labour in erecting the house is very little more in one case than the other. It is well to take out all kinds of fixtures required for fitting a house, a small stock of fire-bricks, fire-grates, dogs for wood-fires, kitchen-ranges, stoves, boilers, &c., and some *corrugated iron or zinc* will be found very handy for roofing houses or verandahs quickly. Remember generally, that the timber, and shingles for roofing, are in abundance in the colony; and take with you all other materials. It is even wise to take *doors* and *window frames*, with a good stock of glass for them.

The ready-made wooden houses which have been mentioned are made chiefly by Manning, of 251, High Holborn. It is also worth the Colonist's while to look at the *iron houses* made for exportation by Cottam and Hallam, Oxford-street.

The iron Venetian shutters, made to wind up and down, would be useful. Edgington's *Square Double Tents*, of moderate size, (say eight to ten feet square inside,) are of great use during the first operations.

The Colonist who is anxious to carry with him the memorials of the Fine Arts of the old world, may do so at comparatively little cost by purchasing at the British Museum casts in plaster of the antiques contained in that institution. In a publication entitled "*A Synopsis of the Contents of the British Museum*," there is a list of these casts and of their prices. Some of them, especially the bas-reliefs, could be conveyed to the colony in packing-cases at little cost, affording very tasteful ornaments, whether for the public buildings or for the larger rooms of private residences.

FURNITURE.—As a general rule, take that which fills the least space in proportion to its usefulness. *Iron bedsteads*, for instance, should have the preference over cumbrous wooden ones, which can be made in the colony. *Iron rocking-chairs*, too, pack within a very small space, and are made so as to be very comfortable. Ladies should take their *pianos* by all means. Ornamental furniture can be made from the beautiful indigenous woods.

IRONMONGERY.—Generally very useful. Take especially *iron fencing, gates, and guards for young trees*. A few *boat anchors* and *chains* will be of use. Also, two or three distinctive brands, with your initials, for marking horses and cattle, with letters four inches long; as well as a smaller one for marking cases and other goods.

FIRE-ARMS AND OTHER WEAPONS.—Take a good double-barrelled fowling-piece, holster and pocket pistols, and a good rifle. The colonist is recommended to make himself acquainted with the recent invention of the *cycloid ball* ($7\frac{1}{2}$ to the lb.), which is thrown by the ordinary Ordnance rifle to the distance of 600 yards with great accuracy, and, with less certainty, as far as 800, and even 1200 yards. Mr. Lancaster, of Bond Street, has recommended this invention for adoption in England, and will explain it to any person

seeking information on the subject. It is almost needless to mention shot, lead, bullet-moulds, wadding, &c. Whatever powder you take should be at once handed over to the chief officer of the ship, for deposit in the magazine. Mark the parcels with your name. Take a *sabre* and an *infantry sword*, both of the last regulation. A very useful kind of *sheath-knife*, with belt attached, is made for exportation to the Spanish West Indies, by W. & S. Butcher, of Sheffield. It costs about 17s., and serves many purposes, from that of a small bill-hook downwards. The colonist need hardly be told to provide himself with *bill-hooks*, *pruning-knives*, &c., of the best quality, fitted into belts for the waist.

Excellent *boar-spears* are made at Paget's, Piccadilly. A few of these will be useful. Take also eel-spears and grains.

AGRICULTURAL INSTRUMENTS.—As a general rule, unless you are going to a perfectly new settlement, do not burden yourself with any that are bulky, as well as easy of construction, or with such, recently brought into use in England, as are from the delicacy or complexity of their formation difficult of repair. Take the wheels and iron-work of carts and drays, the bodies of which can be made in the colony. Take ploughs complete in the first instance: hereafter the wood-work will be done in the colony. Do not omit to take *spare iron-work*, such as *coulters*, *plough-shares*, *chains*, &c.: these are constantly destroyed in the rough work of breaking-up new land.

Bullocks are generally used in agricultural operations in the Australian colonies and in New Zealand. They are harnessed with *iron hames*, and a wooden yoke over the neck. The bullock-dray, used instead of a waggon, has a pole, to the end of which the yoke is fastened.

The Colonist's attention should be directed to the following articles, with which he must provide himself according to his means and his intentions.

For clearing and cultivating *timbered land*:—

American axes, of various sizes.

Common English axes. (The natives can use these best).

Wedges, of various sizes, mallets, and spare rings for them, cross cut saws, and pit-saws.

Log-chains.

Waggons, bullock-drays, and timber-drags.

Wheelbarrows, spades, shovels, and hoes, rakes, and pitchforks.

Augers (half-inch and inch), chisels, and other tools, hammers, spikes, screws, and nails.

Pickaxes, and crowbars.

For cultivating and cropping either timbered or open land, you will require,—

Breaking-up and other ploughs.

Harrows, sickles, and reaping-hooks.

Scythes, cradles, and snaths.

Padlocks and other locks, staples, and hinges for gates and barn-doors.

Chaff-cutting machines.

New Zealand promises to be a great turnip country: so the Colonist should provide himself with one of the recently invented *turnip-cutting machines* most to his mind. Do not forget churns, pans, pails, and other articles required for the Dairy. Among others, *perforated zinc* for windows.

Inspect Ainslie's or Clayton's Drain-Tile Machines, and procure a good stock of *draining tools* of all kinds.

A *Horse-drill* will prove useful on open land, and in a few years' time, when the stumps shall have been eradicated, on land reclaimed from the forest.

A *Farm Engine* for distributing liquid manure will be taken by good farmers. And generally, indeed, with the above-mentioned precaution of taking nothing which is too difficult of repair, it is well to carry with you machines which tend to economize hand labour, always dear in new countries. If you can afford it, by all means take a *Thrashing-machine*, adapted for horse-power, but so arranged that either *wind or water power* may be easily applied to it, in case of need. Procure from Messrs. Ransome and May, of Ipswich, a Catalogue of the Agricultural Implements manufactured by them, and select therefrom. A *Treatise on the Implements of Agriculture*, price 9s., has been written by Mr. J. A. Ransome, and published by Ridgway.

BOATS, &c.—In large ships there is always room for a good-sized open boat to be turned bottom upwards over the long-boat. This becomes of the greatest use in landing goods, and is always valuable in so maritime a country. John Thompson, of Rotherhithe, made some excellent boats for the early Wellington Colonists, and for the Company. The best size is about three or four tons' burthen, carvel-built, coppered and copper-fastened, about 30 feet long, built for sailing as well as rowing, with all the thwarts moveable except that in which the mast is stepped, a rudder, a fore-sail, and fore and-aft main-sail, boat-hook, anchors and chain, and double set of good ashen oars. These latter, indeed, are a good investment of money, and always saleable. The freight of such a boat will be about 16*l*. The cost, complete, about 90*l*. to 100*l*. Spare canvas and duck, and sailmaker's twine, palms, and needles, are also useful. Boat-sails, indeed, may often be made on the passage at a cheap rate by a sailmaker among the emigrants, or by one of the crew in his leisure time.

Twine suitable for nets, and netting needles, may be of service in the same way during the voyage. A good sean, ready for use on arrival, is almost invaluable on the sea-coast of New Zealand, which abounds with fish.

MATHEMATICAL INSTRUMENTS.—The Colonist will best acquire a knowledge of those required for surveying by reading *Simms's 'Treatise on the Principal Mathematical Instruments.'* This book will also instruct him in the use of them. Every one should learn the use of the *pocket-sextant*, and provide himself with that and a good *pocket-compass*. Good *boat-compasses*, and even *ships' compasses* are also useful.

A *portable telescope*, such as is used for deer-stalking or by military men, in a *leathern case with belt to sling over one shoulder*, is almost indispensable to the owner of large herds of cattle, in order to distinguish his brand at a distance.* Troughton and Simms, of Fleet Street, are the best mathematical instrument makers; Dollond, in St. Paul's Churchyard, the best telescope-maker.

MUSICAL INSTRUMENTS.—According to each person's taste and knowledge. The bugle and cornet à-piston would be heard to advantage among the echoes of the beautiful mountain scenery.

CRICKET APPARATUS is of service almost all the year round, and the game is already in great vogue.

QUOITS, and other requisites for athletic out-of-door exercises suited to fine weather, are also perfectly appropriate.

BIRDS.—Every one should try to introduce *Pheasants* and *Partridges*, which would both do well in all probability. As to the former, do not take out too many cock-birds: one to every eight or nine hens is the best proportion.

If possible, take *Rooks*, both for the sake of the peculiarly English associations connected with them, and also for the sake of their usefulness in destroying insects.

Pea-fowl, *Swans*, and *Guinea-fowl*, are also desirable emigrants.

GAME.—It would be most desirable to introduce *Red deer* and *Fallow-deer* into the Colony, as both would be sure to increase rapidly and flourish. The Australian Agricultural Company imported several head of deer into Van Diemen's Land some years ago; but the cost of transport, and the result of the experiment, is not known.

Hares would also do well. They should be shipped as leverets, and care should be taken not to give them too much soft food; but a sufficient supply of carrots &c. may be preserved in a wholesome state during the whole journey, by burying them in a cask filled with sand. There is no destructive animal of any kind in New Zealand, so that game would be sure to increase rapidly. *Kangaroos* from Australia, and *Lamias* of various kinds from South America, might probably be introduced with advantage.

SEEDS AND PLANTS.—Although many English as well as foreign plants have already flourished in New Zealand, sufficiently to bear seed, there is no harm in taking some of *choice kinds*, even of the commonest things. Among the seeds most important are *wheat*,

* See pp. 169, 446.

barley, oats, rye, buckwheat, maize, turnips, swedes, mangold wurzel, rape, tares, vetches, lucerne, peas, beans, linseed, caraway, coriander, clover, and grasses of all kinds. The seeds should be carefully collected, if possible, by the colonist himself, or, at any rate, by some sure friend. It is a great mistake to depend for your supply even on the best seedsmen. Remember that if you chance to get rubbish or inferior seed, it will be another year before you can repair the error. Mr. Swainson, in describing his meadows on the banks of the Hutt, in January, 1847, and the sorts of grasses already growing in them, dwells strongly on the quantity of inferior seed which had been brought out by colonists. He mentions, as the grasses at that time most wanting, *Phleum pratense* (Timothy grass) and *Cynosorus cristatus* (dog's-tooth grass.)* A gentleman who brought in 1842 some alfalfa seed (a kind of lucerne) from Chili, had obtained seed so carelessly collected, that the principal part of the crop consisted of South American weeds. So remember, if possible, to pick your seeds yourself, and mark on the parcel when and where you saw it growing. It is almost impossible here to enumerate all the seeds that may be usefully taken; as a general rule, whatever is useful in England will be as much so in New Zealand; and, moreover, many plants that flourish in warmer countries, such as the South of France, Spain, Portugal, and Italy, may be expected to succeed in the colony.

Of those plants or seeds which have been introduced into England from warmer countries, the colonist should procure his stock from the region of their original growth. Again premising that it is not pretended to put down all that may be taken, the following seeds are especially recommended to notice:—

From England.—*Haw and other Thorns; Furze or Gorse; Heather; Acorns; Horse Chesnuts; Beech nuts; Blackberry; Flower Seeds and Garden Vegetables (except Potatoes) of all kinds, and such English fruits as will propagate by seed.*

From abroad or from hothouses:—*Melon, Gourd, Pumpkin, and Cucumber; Tomato; Portuguese and Spanish Onion; Almond; Olives; Peach, Apricot, and Nectarine; Orange and Lemon; Chesnut, (the best are from near Naples); Acorns of the Cork Oak from Spain or Italy.*

All seeds should be picked when fully ripe, and carefully kept dry during the voyage. Various means of doing this have been tried, such as soldering in tin cases, hermetically sealing, &c. But perhaps the best way of all, is to wrap your seeds in separate bags of thick brown paper, and put all these bags together in a strong canvas sack, which must be so laid in a dry place, as to be easily got at during the voyage; then you must choose fine dry sunny days at intervals, on which the sack may be emptied out, and each paper bag carefully examined; if any have become at all damp, hang them up to the

* See page 151.

roof of the cabin, or other convenient place until dry, and then restow them. The stern cabin in the poop is the best place for keeping your seed-bag.

PLANTS.—In many instances, cuttings or plants must be taken out rather than seeds. Wooden cases filled with sand or earth, and covered with a strong glazed frame, are provided for this purpose. After choosing what plants you will take, the best plan is to have them packed by some nurseryman who is in the habit of selling plants for exportation, such as Loddige of Hackney, or Knight and Perry of King's Road West, Chelsea.

After packing, all the joints of the case should be hermetically sealed with some cement impenetrable to the air or salt water. The glazed frame should be covered with a wire guard to prevent breaking. The boxes should be then fixed to the deck in some light position, well out of the way of the sailors' manœuvres, which will be pointed out by an officer of the ship. On the edge of the poop is the most convenient place.

The most useful plants are:—*Fruit trees of all English kinds, including Raspberry, Currant, and Gooseberry cuttings; Forest trees of ditto; Vine, Olive, and Mulberry; Lemon and Orange; Hop-ses; Strawberry plants; Rhododendron, Azalea, and Camellia; Rose, Geranium, and other Flowers.*

With regard to such plants as are found both in England and in warmer countries, remember, as in the case of the seeds, to select the migrating specimen from that temperature, whether natural or artificial, which is most congenial to its perfect development.

It is not easy to determine whether a parasitical plant like the *mistletoe* can be transported, either in seed or as a plant; but to a British Colonist, the experiment of planting the symbol of the ancient Druids in the Britain of the South Seas, should at least seem worth trying.

Many of the superior nurserymen, such as Messrs. Knight and Perry, of King's-road West, Chelsea, who are assiduous in collecting exotic plants which may be adapted to English horticulture, whether in the hot-house or out of doors, would probably be willing to make arrangements with respectable Colonists, to supply them, not only at their departure, but periodically afterwards, with such English and foreign seeds and plants as they might require, on condition of receiving an equivalent in return of select New Zealand seeds and plants. Such an arrangement might at any rate be carried out between the Horticultural Societies at home and those in the colony, with the additional advantage to the latter of a place in the publications of the Home Society. The same plant-boxes might be filled with European plants by the nurseryman, and with New Zealand plants by the colonist. Thus a more complete knowledge would soon be obtained of the best ways for preserving plants and seeds during the long sea-voyage, and also of the vegetable productions best adapted for interchange.

MONEY.—There are three ways of taking out capital to the colony:—

1. Take gold. This is probably the best way of all. Pack your sovereigns in a strong wooden box, and pay freight and insurance upon them. The insurance is $1\frac{1}{2}$ per cent. The freight in ordinary ships is $2\frac{1}{2}$ per cent.; but the New Zealand Company have made arrangements so as to charge only 1 per cent. freight on specie in their ships. The whole cost of transport will therefore be, in an ordinary ship, 4, in a Company's ship, $2\frac{1}{2}$ per cent.*

2. Pay the money into the Union Bank of Australia, No. 38, Old Broad-street, City, and take in exchange Letters of Credit on their branches in the colony. For this transaction, however, the Bank now charges 2 per cent., having until very lately charged 4 per cent.; and, moreover, the letters of credit are not honoured in specie, but in local notes of the Bank, promising to pay in bills at thirty days' sight, bearing 2 per cent. premium, on other Australian branches. This Bank has so complete a monopoly of the interchange of money between England and the colony, that its other charges are equally exorbitant. It charges 8 per cent. discount on a private bill drawn on a party in the colony, and endorsed by two approved names in London. It charges 2 per cent. premium in the colony for bills drawn by the local Branch on the Bank in London; 5 per cent. discount on approved private bills on London drawn by parties in the colony; and 10 per cent. per annum discount on local bills of exchange, current for not exceeding three months.

The following are some particulars relating to the UNION BANK OF AUSTRALIA:—

DIRECTORS.

Robert Brooks, Esq.	Charles Edward Mangles, Esq.
Robert Carter, Esq.	Thomas Sands, Esq., Liverpool.
James John Cummins, Esq.	James Bogle Smith, Esq.
Robt. Gardner, Esq., Manchester.	James Ruddel Todd, Esq.
John Gore, Esq.	William Wilson, Esq.
Benjamin E. Lindo, Esq.	Thomas Young, Esq.

TRUSTEES.

George Carr Glyn, Esq.
John Gore, Esq.
James John Cummins, Esq.

BANKERS.

Messrs. Glyn, Halifax, Mills, & Co.

SOLICITORS.

Messrs. Beddome and Weir.

SECRETARY.

Samuel Jackson, Esq.

* If the sum be above 500*l.*, a reduction is made in the rate of freight

COLONIAL INSPECTOR.

John Cunningham M'Laren, Esq.

AGENTS.

The Bank of Ireland.

The National Provincial Bank of England.

The National Bank of Scotland.

Liverpool The Bank of Liverpool.*Bristol* Messrs. Charles Hill & Co.*Portsmouth* . . . Messrs. Grants & Gillman, *Bankers*.*Plymouth* The Devon & Cornwall Banking Company.

EXTRACTS FROM THE TENTH ANNUAL REPORT, presented to the Proprietors, on the 17th July, 1848:—

“ In their Supplementary Report, presented in January last, the Directors briefly communicated the substance of Mr. M'Laren's very satisfactory Report of inspection, made on his return from visiting the Branches in Van Diemen's Land, and New South Wales.

“ The accounts since received from the Managers fully justify that report; and although the depressed state of the wool market in England, in addition to the high price of labour in Australia, must for a time press heavily upon the colonial settlers and the trade, yet the Directors are glad to be able to state, from their recent advices, that the Inspector and Managers are prepared for the events that may arise, and are prudently adopting measures to protect the interests of the Bank.

“ The steps taken by Government to promote emigration will afford most timely and important relief to the colonies, and it is very gratifying to the Directors to find that the value and necessity of a well regulated system of emigration and colonization is fully recognised by the legislature at home, and felt by every one who understands the mutual interests and relative circumstances of the colonies and the mother country.

“ The improvement which has taken place in the internal condition and general circumstances of the New Zealand colonies, has induced the Inspector to open a Branch at Auckland, the seat of government, to which Mr. Alexander Kennedy has been appointed Manager. The Branch had only commenced its operations at the date of the last advices.

“ The Directors now proceed to submit their annual statement of accounts, the general result of which enables them to declare a dividend at the rate of 6 per cent. per annum on the entire paid up capital of the Bank, to be payable in London on the 1st of August, and in the colonies as soon as the Inspector shall fix, after receipt of advices.

“ The dividend will be paid free of income tax, and, in order to equalize the division, 7*d.* in the pound will be added upon such dividends as are paid in the colonies.

<i>Liabilities.</i>		£	s.	d.
Bills Payable		107,072	5	0
Sundry Balances		4,358	5	7
Reserve Fund (10 per cent.)....	£56,384 16 1			
Profit and Loss	45,863 13 2			
		102,248	9	3
Paid up Capital		820,000	0	0
		<u>£1,033,678 19 10</u>		

<i>Assets.</i>		£	s.	d.
Branch Accounts (<i>Balance</i>)		426,686	5	0
Bills Receivable		123,652	6	10
Investments, Government Stock, and Loans on Security		464,269	7	7
Insurances and Open Policies, &c.		9,027	14	2
Cash.....		10,043	6	3
		<u>£1,033,678 19 10</u>		

Statement of Profits.

Balance of Undivided Profit at June, 1847	37,677	10	11
To which are now to be added Profits for the Year ending at the Branches 31st Dec. 1847, and at London Office 30th June, 1848, after de- ducting amount of bad debts to the above-mentioned date	£63,762	6	11
Deduct one-tenth for Reserve Fund	6,376	4	8
		57,386	2 3
		<u>£95,063 13 2</u>	
Deduct Dividend paid at Midsummer, 1847	£24,600	0	0
Ditto ditto Christmas	24,600	0	0
		49,200	0 0
Balance of Undivided Profit at this Date	£45,863	13	2

Reserve Fund.

At June, 1847, as per Statement	50,008	11	5
Add to June, 1848, as per Contra	6,376	4	8
		<u>£56,384 16 1</u>	

"COLONIAL ESTABLISHMENTS.

"*Colonial Inspector.*—John Cunningham M'Laren, Esq.

"**NEW SOUTH WALES.**—**SYDNEY:** *Local Directors*—John Gilchrist, Esq.; W. Fane de Salis, Esq.; William Fanning, Esq. *Manager*—James Sea, Esq. **BATHURST:** *Local Directors*—George Busby, Esq.; William Lee, Esq. *Manager*—David Kennedy, Esq. **MELBOURNE:** *Local Directors*—William Highett, Esq.; William Lonsdale, Esq.; Thomas Wills, Esq. *Manager*—William Fletcher, Esq. **GEELONG:** *Local Directors*—Foster Fyans, Esq.; John M. C. Airey, Esq. *Manager*—J. Matheson, Esq. **PORTLAND:** *Local Director*—James Blair, Esq. *Manager*—Charles Robertson, Esq.

"**VAN DIEMEN'S LAND.**—**HOBART TOWN:** *Local Directors*—Alexander McNaughton, Esq.; Askin Morrison, Esq. *Manager pro tem.*—N. Gresley, Esq. **LAUNCESTON:** *Local Director*—Philip Oakden, Esq. *Manager*—Mervyn Mann, Esq.

"**NEW ZEALAND.**—**WELLINGTON:** *Manager*—Alexander Macdonald, Esq. **NELSON:** *Manager pro tem.*—E. D. Sweet, Esq. **AUCKLAND:** *Manager*—Alexander Kennedy, Esq."

Should colonization proceed with vigour, it will become absolutely necessary for the Colonists to establish a Bank of their own, conducted on more equitable principles. This is one of the matters in which the absentee owners of land in New Zealand might render the actual colonists valuable service, and at the same time provide themselves with an economical channel of remittance between themselves and their agents.

3. The third method is to buy a private bill of exchange or letter of credit drawn on the colony by some party in London. These may often be bought at par, or the drawer will sometimes even pay from two to five per cent. discount, rather than pay eight per cent. to the Bank. But the colonist must be wary of buying a bad bill. He should inquire both as to the drawer and as to the party drawn on; and should peruse the letter advising a balance to the credit of the drawer. Inquiry should be made of the Clerk of the Colonists' Room at New Zealand House, who is well acquainted with most of the merchants and landowners connected with New Zealand in this country, and with their representatives in the colony.

LAND ORDERS AND LAND.—In former chapters will be found details of the methods of buying in this country, from the Company, land in their different settlements. Many landowners, however, reside in England: and they frequently have portions of land, included in the original sales of the Company, to be bought on good terms. But here, again, the colonist must be cautious, in buying of a stranger, or in buying land of which he can obtain no account from some one who has actually seen it and can give him

some description of it. By referring back to the former part of this book, the intending purchaser will find a general description of most of the districts already sold by the Company: and he should ascertain in what part of any such district the land in question is situated, whether any of it be cleared, cultivated, or tenanted, and how far it lies from the nearest road to the chief town of the settlement.

Owing to the withholding of the Company's titles for so long in all the settlements except Otago, the only title deeds at present are the original land-orders from the Company, the certificates of selection, and the certificates of transfer in the Company's books. The land-orders were issued in duplicate, and are signed by three Directors and by the Secretary of the Company, the certificates of selection are signed by the Clerk of the land-office and the Company's Agent in the particular settlement, and the certificates of transfer by the Secretary of the Company. In many cases one part, and in some cases both parts, of the Land-order, and in almost all cases the certificate of selection remains in the colony with the owner's agent: but as a general rule, from which there may be exceptions, the purchaser should not be satisfied without at least *one part of the land-order, the Secretary's certificate of transfer, and a letter in duplicate from the vendor to his agent in the colony, ordering him to hand over all other documents relating to the land in question to the buyer or his assigns.* The Secretary, before issuing his certificate, requires a printed form to be filled up, signed by both vendor and purchaser, requesting him to register the transaction. The printed form is supplied at New Zealand House. A fee of 5s. is charged on each transfer certificate.

Whether you buy from the Company, or from a private individual, do not buy *too much land*. Nothing is more out of place in the colony, than a man possessed of vast tracts of land, but with no capital to make them available.

In buying from private individuals, the purchaser will do well to try and suit himself before leaving England; as most of the absentee landowners have granted no power of sale to their agents in the colony. If he cannot succeed, he will always be able to select afterwards from the land saleable in the colony. The Company, as will be seen by their regulations, hold out great inducements to purchasers of land-orders in this country. In their new settlements, indeed, but a very small portion of land is reserved for sale in the colony: and the first choice of allotments is invariably open to the earlier purchasers in London.

There are some few persons in England, holders of extensive grants of land about Auckland and other northern parts of the Colony, who occasionally offer portions of their grants at very low prices, having originally paid a mere trifle for them. The intending purchaser will do well to remember that in buying such land, he

would be investing his money in a part of the country where all chance of a large immigration fund has been lost by the reckless manner in which land has been alienated by the Crown to private individuals : * and where, therefore, there is little hope of a steady supply of labour, or of any of those institutions and circumstances tending to give an increased value to land, which are the result of systematic colonization, such as has been, and is, carried on by the New Zealand Company and the Colonizing Associations connected with it. Especially let him weigh the advantages of abundant religious and educational provision made by those Associations in the Southern settlements, as contrasted with the total want of it in the hap-hazard settlements of the North.

BOOKS, MAPS, and ENGRAVINGS.—Every person who intends to adopt New Zealand as his future home will take care to supply himself with a good collection of these cheerful companions. It would be presumption to point out what particular books should be taken : but it may not be amiss to direct attention to such as relate especially to New Zealand. In Appendix D is a list of all publications that are known to have been made relating to New Zealand.

Arrangements can easily be made after arrival and settlement in the colony for the formation of book-clubs, to be supplied periodically with such new publications as they may desire. Before starting, each family should arrange so as to receive regularly a file of some weekly London paper. Those which, like the *Spectator*, *Examiner*, and *Athenæum*, contain full notices of literary, dramatic, and musical subjects, are the most satisfactory to a colonist.

Good engravings will be a great ornament to the rooms of the colonist who cannot afford to take valuable paintings with him. All the engravings that have ever been published can be seen at the British Museum, where there is a room set apart for them, open to

* In a despatch dated November 11, 1847, Governor Grey reports that "within a tract of country extending seven miles on every side of Auckland, only 3600 acres of land are left unclaimed, whilst upwards of 10000 acres of this small quantity is quite unavailable, being covered with rocks;" and that "even within a radius of 12 miles from Auckland, but very small portions of land remain, which are not claimed by the penny-an-acre purchasers." In a subsequent despatch, dated December 4, 1847, he adds, "much injury has been inflicted upon the colony, by these grants of land having been given to people, who in many instances cannot, and in other instances never intend to use them, as also by the public having lost a large extent of land, which those who have obtained it could now sell for from 7*l* to 10*l*. per acre, whilst the means of emigration and of making roads have been lost to the colony."—*Par. Papers, N. Z.*, presented by command, September, 1848, pp. 11—14.

any respectable person who chooses to apply for admittance. Take the engravings carefully packed, in cases lined with tin, and soldered : frames can be made from the handsome indigenous woods of New Zealand.

A FEW HINTS FOR THE PASSAGE.

This interval of about four months may be easily turned to some account by the really industrious passenger. After the first troubles of sea-sickness are over, study of any kind is most welcome as an aid to get over the tediousness of the voyage.

If the habit have not been acquired before, *learn to keep a diary*. No matter how little there may be to record; make it a point to jot down something every day; if you can think of nothing else, copy the ship's daily log. The main point is to acquire the habit of keeping a daily journal. It is impossible to over-rate the utility of this practice when once thoroughly acquired.

Fix upon some particular subject to be studied during the voyage. A great deal of any subject may be learned by four months' assiduous application, and the daily progress made will furnish matter for the diary.

There can be no better opportunity for learning the use of the sextant and other astronomical instruments; and navigation and seamanship generally, which are always useful.

It is almost needless to recommend as much exercise, on deck, as the weather will allow. If you want a good salt-water bath, remember that, except in very rough weather, the decks are washed at sunrise, or soon after, every morning. So go on deck in a bathing-dress, and let the sailors throw pails of water over you.

HINTS ON ARRIVAL IN THE COLONY.

If you have chosen to take part in the foundation of a perfectly new Settlement, the first thing to be done is to erect some shelter for your family and for your goods. Until each person shall have chosen his land, a

spot will probably be allotted for temporary occupation, to any one applying for it, by the Company's Agent or Chief Surveyor. If you are going to a settlement already established, find a lodging for your family and store-room for your goods in the first instance.

In either case, as soon as ever this preliminary step shall have been taken, start off to see your land, if you have bought any in England. If you have bought a Land-order in England, hasten to examine carefully all the land from which you have a right to select, and choose as soon as ever you are enabled. If you intend to buy land in the colony, ascertain at once what land is for sale there, and go to see it. In any case, do not waste time in idleness, or be too long looking about you without an object. Determine quickly what you intend to do, and then set about it.

Do not listen to people who force their acquaintance on you in order either to grumble at hardships real or imaginary, or to praise inordinately everything in the colony: such persons constantly annoy new-comers, from the time of the ship's arrival in the port until the Colonist has entered steadily upon his adopted life; you may generally depend on it that they are actuated either by self-interest, or by foolish vanity and idleness. Avoid them, and judge very much for yourself. This advice is of course intended for perfect strangers, knowing no one in the place where they arrive, and not possessing a sincere and earnest letter of friendly introduction to some experienced Colonist. The guidance of such a friend is undoubtedly most valuable. If really at a loss for advice, apply to the New Zealand Company's Agent in the particular settlement. He is less interested in setting you wrong, and more interested in setting you right, than probably any one else there; and he is sure to possess the most knowledge on the very points in which you want it.

Whether you buy land in the colony, or have bought a Land-order from the Company entitling you to select

land there, *neither buy nor select any land till you have seen and carefully examined it.*

The book already recommended, the *American Farmer's and Emigrant's Handbook*, begins with these words:—

“Those emigrants who decide upon purchasing wild land, whether forest or prairie, should be exceedingly cautious in every stage of the business. Everything depends on making a good selection. We have known persons to toil on for years, with little advantage to themselves, and then give back the land they had purchased and partly paid for, simply because of having made a bad choice at the outset. A mistake of the kind alluded to, is a most serious one to the new settler. Besides the waste of time and money it occasions, it tends to discourage him, and seldom does he fully recover from the disaster. The emigrant should not be in too great a hurry to get settled. Although it is desirable that he get a home as early as practicable, and begin his arduous labours, it is poor policy to purchase without much consideration. It is of the very highest importance that he *see the land before purchasing it.* On this point we cannot be too urgent. As a general rule, it is utterly unsafe to buy land on the strength of glowing advertisements, or the representations of ordinary land-agents. There are most honourable exceptions to this rule, of course, but they are few. We repeat, *buy no land until you have seen and carefully examined it.*”—pp. 1 & 2.

All localities in New Zealand appear to be equally healthy. The settler will then select his location with a view to its proximity, by good roads, to a good market; and he should especially have an eye to the convenience of churches, schools, medical men, a Post-office, and the like. All these things are very desirable, and to secure them it were better to be satisfied with a less quantity of land, or that of a poorer quality.

Again, quoting from the *American Hand-book*—

“The convenience of a *grist-mill* should not be overlooked. We have known of very great hardships endured in some regions, from the want of means of getting bread-stuffs properly ground. It will be well to make particular inquiries on this point before purchasing.

“In short, let the settler consider the various conveniences which will render his life, and that of his children, comfortable, and in the outset secure as many of them as he can. It is far better to buy a small quantity of land with good advantages, than a large

quantity without them. Your children will need instruction, and you should not place yourself beyond the reach of schools, or the prospect of schools at an early day; the time of sickness will come, and you will want medical attendance: the hour of mourning and serious reflection may arrive, and the consolations of religion from the lips of the Christian minister will be truly welcome. See, therefore, that there be a reasonable prospect of having all these things at no distant day in your new home."—p. 12.

The *quality* of wild land may be judged of, if timbered, by the kinds and size of the trees. That is generally the best soil, on which the *Rimu*, *Totara*, *Mai*, and *Kahikatea* pines, interspersed with *Tauu* and *Rata* trees, grow to a large size. The trees should, as a general rule, be tall, and branching only near the top.

If the trees be low in size, or scraggy, the soil is clayey and cold. The *Manuka* tree, and the *Tawai* or Black birch, are commonly signs of inferior clayey or stony land. The *Pukatea* in abundance, or a great prevalence of the parasitical *Kiekie** among the branches of that and other trees, is a sign of wet and swampy lands.

Take an iron ramrod with you, sharpened at the end. By this means you can tell whether knobs or knolls, on the surface of uneven land, are caused by rocks and large stones, or not. You will also be able to ascertain whether the subsoil be clayey or the reverse, which you could not otherwise so readily determine, as the *top* of all timbered land is usually covered with the black mould of decayed vegetable matter.

The quality of fern land, or of grassy and shrub-covered land, is much more easily determined by the eye. The height of the fern, the luxuriance of the grass and shrubs, are excellent guides. On inferior land, the fern is stunted, the grass grows in scattered wiry tufts, flax is very scarce and quite dwarfish, and other shrubs almost unseen. An unmixed growth

* See pages 140 to 149, for descriptions of the trees here mentioned.

of stunted *manuka* is a bad sign, a quantity of *ti*-shrubs, commonly called the cabbage-tree, a very good one. Of open land, that should be preferred which has some timber upon it, or which is not too distant from a cheap supply. Timber is wanted for fuel, fencing, and house-building; though the proximity of coal and the knowledge of building the earthen houses called *Pisé** will do away with its necessity for the first and last of those purposes.

Do not purchase *too much* land; especially if you take it on credit. Many is the man who, in America and other new countries, has been ruined by not being careful in this particular. Land-holders and land-agents are too apt to induce the purchaser to buy freely; especially if he make a pretty good down-payment.

It is usually the custom for persons selling to require one-fourth or one-fifth of the purchase-money down, and the balance in four or five equal annual instalments; the interest on the amount due to be paid every year. In the early history of a settler, ready money is not plentiful; and it will make a very great difference whether he has to pay the interest on a large or on a small sum. Besides this, a small farm well cultivated is better than a large one poorly tilled. The author of the American *Hand-book*, so often quoted, and from whose words much of this advice is adapted to the circumstances of New Zealand, says:—

“ We have had the very best opportunities of understanding this subject, and we earnestly advise the reader to be moderate in his purchase of land. In all our experience, we have scarcely ever found an individual who could manage to pay for and clear over a hundred acres; the majority are not safe in contracting for more, nor indeed for so much.”—p. 15.

Another plan is to take a lease of the land, with a purchasing clause, enabling you to buy at a fixed price, or at a valuation, at certain fixed periods. Leases are

* For an elaborate description of the methods of making *Pisé* houses, see the *Farmer's and Emigrant's Handbook*, pp. 72 to 80.

generally granted free of rent for the first three or four years, on condition of clearing and fencing in, or draining, a certain amount of land. In this case, there is no down-payment; and the rent does not commence immediately, like the interest of the purchase-money remaining due; so that this arrangement is a better one for the tenant and intending purchaser, as it enables him to apply the whole of his capital to the improvement of the land. He should take care, however, to have it clearly expressed in the lease, if a *valuation* be mentioned, whether it is to include his own improvements or not, at the end of the fixed period, and make his calculations accordingly. It will probably be found best to name a *fixed* price in the purchasing clause, as the tenant will be less likely to expend his capital in improvements, if they are to augment the price which he is ultimately to pay.

Let land-owners not be too anxious for high rents at first, or for large down-payments, or to sell too extensive allotments to individuals. In the early stages of the settlement, it is far more important to all, including the land-owner, to have the cultivators succeed, than to produce a large immediate revenue from unimproved land.

Having entered into contract for such a quantity of land as you have reason to believe you can pay for, *have it surveyed*. Do not omit this. You will thus avoid much future trouble and annoyance. In the case of selecting land with an Order from the New Zealand Company, this is done by their Surveyor who puts you in possession.

The sooner you get deeds of your land, the better. In case of a lease, get that executed immediately.

Before building a house on timbered land, it is essential to clear and burn off a sufficient space round the spot first. From a neglect of this precaution, some settlers have had their wooden houses destroyed, when they set fire to the fallen timber. Do not clear too

much at once; and if in a windy situation, leave belts of timber standing so as to protect the cleared spots from the force of the wind. Leave your belts broader than you intend them finally to be: the trees on the edge will die off, as it takes some time for trees, which during many years have had only their tops exposed, to become habituated to a freer atmosphere. After you have burned off your first clearing of a few acres, then build your house, and remove your family, and such of your goods as are immediately required, from their first location on landing. But it will be as well not to build this first habitation, even on your own ground, in too permanent a manner: if you have as much as 100 acres of timbered land together, it is very likely that you will not discover the best site for a house within that space, until you shall have cleared nearly the whole of it.

As soon as possible after landing, put your seeds and plants into a bit of *good* land. If you cannot get any of your own, or of a friend's, ready in time, hire a piece: especially if the best season for sowing or planting be passing away.

If you have imported cattle or sheep either from England or from New South Wales, keep them up at first, or they will be apt to gorge themselves with the poisonous *tutu*-plant.* This does not apply at all to horses, asses, mules, goats, or pigs; which may be turned out to graze at once without fear.

With a view to the collection in the Colony of scientific information and specimens of Natural History, to be sent to England, procure the *Printed Directions* which have been framed on the subject in the different departments of the British Museum; copy, from La Pérouse's *Voyages*, the instructions which were issued to the members of that expedition by the French scientific bodies; and read a book called *What to Observe*, 1 vol. 8vo, by Colonel Jackson, Secretary of the Royal Geographical Society.

* See p. 148.

APPENDICES.

APPENDIX A.

STEAM NAVIGATION TO NEW ZEALAND, AND
NEW ZEALAND COAL.

In the *New Zealand Journal* of 22nd May, 1847, No. 195, page 153, there is the following :

"ABSTRACT of the performance of the *Inflexible* steam-sloop, Commander J. C. Roseason, on her passage from Spithead to the Cape of Good Hope, and subsequently from the Cape to Sydney, New South Wales, and thence to New Zealand."

Date.	Coal Consumption.		Distance run by patent log.	Under steam or sail.
1846.	Tons.	Cwt.		
August 10	20	1	111 $\frac{1}{2}$	Steam.
" 11	16	6	177 $\frac{1}{2}$	Steam.
" 12	14	7	186	Steam and sail.
" 13	9	15	186	Ditto.
" 14	9	8	174	Ditto.
" 15	9	12	172 $\frac{1}{2}$	Ditto.
" 16	10	10	188	Steam.
" 17	10	15	165	Steam and sail.
" 18	10	11	176 $\frac{1}{2}$	Ditto.
" 19	9	13	176	Ditto.
" 20	11	13	194 $\frac{1}{2}$	Ditto.
" 21	9	1	182	Ditto.
" 22	8	9	173 $\frac{1}{2}$	Ditto.
" 23	12	19	190	Ditto.
" 24	11	5	167	Ditto.
" 25	10	17	194	Ditto.
" 26	10	16	188	Ditto.

Date.	Coal Consumption.		Distance run by patent log.	Under steam or sail.
1846.	Tons.	Cwt.		
August 27	11	8	178 $\frac{1}{2}$	Steam and sail.
" 28	11	10	164 $\frac{1}{2}$	Ditto.
" 29	15	12	159	Ditto.
" 30	13	2	162	Ditto.
" 31	8	9	153	{ Steam and sail, and partly sail alone.
Sept. 1	..	..	137	
" 2	..	..	141	Ditto.
" 3	..	..	156	Ditto.
" 4	..	..	165	Ditto.
" 5	..	..	177	Ditto.
" 6	..	..	144	Ditto.
" 7	3	9	121	{ The first part sail, the latter steam.
" 8	12	4	186	
" 9	13	10	192	Steam and sail.
" 10	13	15	188	Ditto.
" 11	13	0	195	Ditto.
" 12	11	2	165 $\frac{1}{2}$	Ditto.
" 13	10	16	182	Ditto.
" 14	11	4	153	Steam.
" 15	11	7	127	{ Steam—the latter part sail alone.
" 16	..	..	90	
" 17	9	12	132 $\frac{1}{2}$	Sail.
" 18	..	..	186	Partly sail, partly steam.
" 19	..	..	144 $\frac{1}{2}$	Sail.
" 20	..	..	52	Ditto.
" 21	..	..	85 $\frac{1}{4}$	Ditto.
" 22	..	..	107	Ditto.
" 23	..	..	83	Ditto.
" 24	..	..	195 $\frac{1}{2}$	Ditto.
" 25	..	..	164	Ditto.
" 26	4	2	108	{ Steam and sail (at St. Helena).
" 27	8	11	80	
" 28	6	1	50	Ditto.

Arrived in Table Bay.

Distance run by patent log—

	Miles.
Under sail	2226 $\frac{3}{4}$
Under steam and sail	5429

Total in 50 days..... 7725 $\frac{3}{4}$

Consumption of coals.....374 tons, 12 cwt.

“In the second voyage from Simon's Bay to Port Jackson, Sydney, from November 8 to December 13, the distance run was—

	Miles.
Under sail	1036
Steam and sail	5356

Total in 36 days..... 6392

	Tons.	cwt.	qrs.
Consumption of coals during the voyage...	458	10	0
Do. do. per day	15	3	2
Do. do. per hour	0	13	0

“It appears the *Inflexible* steamer ran 1231 nautical miles against a dead foul wind, during which time she spoke the *Wanderer* brigantine, and *St. George* fast-sailing merchantman, and reported the former 12 days and the latter 6 days before their arrival at Port Jackson; after making which port the *Inflexible*, in the words of our correspondent's letter, was “ready to sail for Auckland, New Zealand, with 480 tons of coal in her bunkers, three months' provisions and water for her increased complement of 160 men, 20,000*l.* in specie, and two officers and 34 rank and file of the 65th regiment and their baggage.”

“The *Inflexible* arrived at Auckland from Port Jackson on the 25th of January, having made the journey between those places (a distance of 1300 miles) in seven days.”

In the *New Zealand Journal* of the 9th and 23rd October, 1847, Nos. 205 and 206, there is a detailed account of this voyage. There is only room here for the following extracts:—

“The *Inflexible* measures 1122 tons, and was built at Milford Haven in 1846. Her engines are of older construction, and were originally intended for another ship, as the appearance of the cylinder shafts above deck tends to show. Her two direct acting marine engines are of the nominal horse power of 375 horses, and are fitted with the expansive gear. Her four boilers are oblong shaped, with three flues to each. The engine-room is about one-half less than in the old engines; this great saving is owing chiefly

to the cranks being placed, and acting directly above the cylinders. The operation of the expansive principle is that which effects the great saving in the expenditure of fuel. As the action of the wind on the sails assists in propelling the vessel, there is, therefore, so much the less steam power required in order to maintain the necessary speed. By the plan introduced of cutting off the steam in its passage to the cylinder, and causing the piston to work expansively, this saving is effected, both simply and efficiently, and is regulated with accuracy, according to the state of the weather and the speed attained. On the passage to Australia, sufficient steam was generated by the employment of nine, and frequently only six flues out of the twelve, to acquire a speed of from seven to eight knots. The usual practice is to work the engine expansively, excepting when the speed is reduced to six knots—on which occasion the full steam is then applied. When the wind is strong in favour, with a moderate sea, the steam power employed on the expansive system is little more than what may be just necessary to turn the paddles. Great facilities are afforded during the application of the expansive principle for cleaning out the boilers, which can be done in turn, without diminishing the ordinary speed, and by frequently performing it, the accumulation of sediment is prevented, thereby promoting the preservation and safety of the boilers. Coal boxes are ranged between the machinery, and sides of the vessel, and are thus made subservient to preserve the vital parts against injuries more peculiar to war steamers. The capacity of the *Inflexible* for fuel is 500 tons. Her large paddle boxes, although fitted with a life-boat on each, and comprehending places for culinary and other useful purposes, are an obstruction during head winds and heavy seas. By the frequent alternate emersion and immersion of the paddle wheels, much power is lost in ocean steaming, and the application of the screw principle on this voyage is still a desideratum promising greater results. The plan of 'disconnecting' has been in use by war steamers for some time, but is effected in the *Inflexible* on a different principle from that formerly in use, and which occupies one-tenth of the time; it is that of the friction strap, and merely requires the turning of two screws, and striking aside the keys which connect the parts, in order to set the paddles free of the engine.

"On her departure from Devonport on the 9th August last, the *Inflexible* had 392 tons of coals in her boxes, considerably less than her quantum; 80 tons of patent fuel intended for her use having been left behind—probably in consequence of the large amount of dead weight already on board, being not less than 150 tons, exclusive of fuel. The total weight of cargo, fuel, engines, boilers, water, stores, ammunition, &c., was estimated at 1200 tons. She then drew fifteen feet six inches forward, and fifteen feet ten inches aft; immersion of paddle wheels five feet seven inches.

* * * * *

"She made St. Helena Bay, Cape Colony, on the 27th, and was at anchor in Saldanha Bay and Table Bay, on the 28th September, having accomplished the total run from Devonport in forty-nine days, of which thirty-two days was under steam, and seventeen under sail only. From the point of divergence on the 28th August to the 28th September, the distance run per log was $4363\frac{3}{4}$ nautical miles, nearly 1500 over the direct course. Her average speed during this period was 140 nautical miles per diem.

"The time under steam, $13\frac{1}{2}$ days.

" " " sail, $17\frac{1}{2}$ "

"Average speed under steam, 158 nautical miles.

" " " sail, only $127\frac{1}{2}$ "

" " consumption of fuel per diem, when under steam, 12 tons 6 cwt.

"The public service required the *Inflexible* to remain six weeks at the Cape Colony, and having discharged a portion of her dead weight, and taken on board 460 tons of coal, she left Simon's Bay at two p.m. of the 8th November, and arrived at Sydney at half-past eight p.m. on the 13th December.

"The passage from the Cape was performed, therefore, in 35 days $6\frac{1}{2}$ hours, of which period 160 hours, equal to 6 days 16 hours, was under sail only, and the remaining 28 days $14\frac{1}{2}$ hours under steam. During eight days of the passage the practice was to disconnect each morning, and get up steam towards nightfall, and on two days and nights the steamer proceeded under canvass. The draught of water in Simon's Bay at starting was fourteen feet six inches forward, and sixteen feet aft—the immersion of paddle wheels five feet six inches. On arrival in Port Jackson she drew thirteen feet, and had about five tons of coal remaining in the boxes. Her average consumption, therefore, on the passage was 15 tons 17 cwt. daily while under steam.

"This passage of the *Inflexible* is memorable, inasmuch as it is the first steam passage from the Cape to Sydney (from England to the Cape, and thence to India, has been frequently done); and it is the longest run at one stretch of any steamer under steam in the annals of steam navigation."

The *Inflexible* passed through Bass's Straits, and anchored in Sydney Harbour on the 13th of December, 1846.

"The speed per log given in the sketch of the voyage, is the average speed during twenty-four hours. The aggregate of the daily runs on the whole passage, from the Cape to Sydney, is 6100 knots per log, whereas the actual distance is 6600, and allowing for extra latitude being made, the actual ground gone over could not be less than 6700 nautical miles.

"The average speed per log, per diem, was 181 1.8th— $7\frac{1}{2}$ per hour:

	days.	n. m.	per diem.	per hour.
"Of which under steam.....	25	4635	185 2.5	$7\frac{3}{4}$
Of which under sail only	2	344	172	$7\frac{1}{2}$
Of which under part steam and part sail	8	1421	177 2.8	$7\frac{1}{2}$
	35			
Total miles per log.....		6400		

"Taking the actual distance gone over by the *Inflexible* at 6700 nautical miles, the average speed on the passage was 190 miles per diem, or eight knots per hour, very nearly.

"During the passage, the wind came from a westerly direction during 20 days; an easterly direction 10 days; and variable 5 days.

"The following is a brief summary of the whole voyage from England:—

	N. Miles.
"The distance from Plymouth Sound to Table Bay, <i>via</i> Madeira and Cape de Verde	6150
"The distance from Simon's Bay to Port Jackson	6600
"Total distance from England to Sydney, <i>via</i> Cape of Good Hope.....	12,750

Nautical Miles traversed:—
days. hours. per log. per day. per hour.

"Number of complete days under steam	57	4	10,115	177	$7\frac{1}{2}$
Ditto ditto under sail only	19	12	2,572 $\frac{3}{4}$	132	$5\frac{1}{2}$
Ditto ditto under part sail	8	0	1,421	177 $\frac{5}{8}$	$7\frac{1}{8}$

"Plymouth Sound to Port Jackson 84 16 14,108 $\frac{3}{4}$

"Total coal consumed on the passage, 847 tons. Average consumption per diem, 14 tons. Average number of miles for each ton of coal, 13. Average consumption of fuel per horse power, per hour, $3\frac{1}{2}$ lbs.

* * * * *

"From the brief summary of the passage from the Cape to Sydney already given, it will be observed, that although westerly winds prevailed during 20 days, and were generally strong—sometimes increasing to a gale—steam was not let off. The whole time of her proceeding under sail was 2 days and part of 8 days. Strong south-westerly winds, and a heavy sea from the same direction, are characteristic of this passage above 40° south latitude, at which parallel of latitude the *Inflexible* ran 3000 miles. By keeping up steam during the prevalence of these strong favourable winds, the paddle-wheel steamer saves wear and tear, and steers steadier. The pos-

sibility of taking full advantage of these winds by the application of the screw principle, and saving fuel, affords good grounds for supposing that the expenditure of fuel, small as it is by the paddle-wheel steamer, will be considerably reduced by the screw application, and without diminishing the speed. The screw principle might also beneficially be applied on the latter part of the passage from England to the Cape, as large paddle-boxes catch head winds, and thereby impede the progress of the steam vessel.

"Not the least of the many satisfactory results attending the voyage of the *Inflexible*, is the excellent order in which she arrived, and the entire absence of any wear and tear."

The following despatches relate to the quality of the New Zealand coal, from Massacre Bay, hitherto tried:—

FROM GOVERNOR GREY TO EARL GREY.

. "Government House, Auckland, March 29, 1847.

"MY LORD,—I have the honour to enclose a copy of a report from Captain Hoseason, R.N., of her Majesty's steam sloop *Inflexible*, upon the nature and quality of New Zealand coal, and upon its fitness for the use of steam vessels. I am happy to state that this report is of a very favourable nature; and there can, I think, be no doubt that these Islands (coal being abundant in many parts of them) will afford great facilities for the employment of steam vessels in this part of the world, and that the expense of the war steamer stationed here will shortly be materially lessened, from the comparatively low prices at which coals ought now to be supplied.—I have, &c.,

"The Right Hon. Earl Grey, &c. (Signed) "G. GREY."

"H.M.S. *Castor*, Auckland, New Zealand, March 27, 1847.

"SIR,—In accordance with the wish conveyed in your Excellency's letter of the 24th inst., I directed Commander Hoseason to report on the nature and quality of New Zealand coal put on board her Majesty's steam sloop *Inflexible* for trial, on that vessel's recent visit to Nelson; and I have now the honour to enclose a copy of that officer's letter to me on the subject.—I have, &c.,

(Signed) "C. GRAHAM,

"Captain and Senior Naval Officer at New Zealand.

"His Excellency Governor Grey, &c."

"H.M.'s steam sloop '*Inflexible*,' at Auckland,
"March 27, 1847.

"SIR,—In compliance with your request contained in your letter of the 24th instant, that I should report on the nature and quality of the coal put on board her Majesty's steam sloop under

my command (at the Colonial expense by his Excellency Governor Grey), at Port Nelson, with a view to try its fitness for the use of steam-vessels, I have the honour to inform you that I have taken the opinion of Mr. Tucker, the first engineer, on the subject, and have received a most favourable report on the same.

"I am enabled, moreover, to prove this by the duty done by the coal; for we find by a comparison with the best Newcastle (Australia) coal, obtained at Sydney, the following to be the result:—

"NEWCASTLE (AUSTRALIA) COAL.— $14\frac{1}{2}$ revolutions on third step of expansion 24 cwt. per hour.

"NELSON COAL.— $15\frac{1}{2}$ revolutions on third step of expansion, 25 cwt. per hour.

"Thus it will be seen that, from about equal quantities of fuel, equal work has been obtained; but there is one peculiarity in the Nelson coal, which is, being much slower in combustion than the Newcastle coal, and therefore would not furnish steam for the cylinders with equal rapidity to enable the vessel to go at her greatest speed in smooth water; but it is far more economical when all weathers are considered; this would make it highly advantageous when mixed with Newcastle (Australia) coal, as the bad qualities of both would be counteracted.

"In justice, however, to the Nelson coal, I ought to observe that it is mere surface coal, and not obtained from a pit like the coal of Newcastle; and has been for more than six months lying on the open beach, where it was placed for the use of the *Driver* had she touched at Nelson.

"As only thirty-three tons were received for trial (that being all on the spot), I am not able to make as full a report as I could wish. Should you, therefore, be pleased to order a larger quantity to be placed at the depôt at Wellington (I would advise not less than 100 tons), obtained, if possible, from a little below the surface, and subject to rejection if, on inspection, it be deemed not equal to that already received on board, I do not doubt but that I shall then be able to make a full and satisfactory report.—I have, &c.,

(Signed)

"J. C. ROSEASON, Commander.

"Captain Graham, C.B., H.M.S. *Castor*, &c."

APPENDIX B.

THE following Documents relate to the Government Revenue and Expenditure, &c. The Official Account of that for Wellington separately, for the year 1847, has not yet, it is believed, been published.

NORTHERN DIVISION.†

Year.	POPULATION.				SHIPPING.			IMPORTS & EXPORTS.		REVENUE & EXPENDITURE.			
	Females.	Births.	Marr- ages.	Deaths.	In wards Direct		Tonnage Coastwise Inwards.	Tonnage Coastwise Outwards.	Value of Imports.	Value of Exports.	Revenue.	Expenditure.	
					No. of Ships.	Tonnage.							
1840	750	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	£2,020	16	3	£20,189 18 6½	
1841	2,200	..	..	..	51	10,599	..	9,094	£79,731	36,818	7	2	35,676 17 3½
1842	3,598	..	..	..	117	26,752	127	28,786	116,519	21,959	15	3	43,011 19 10
1843	3,427	..	..	..	97	21,888	104	21,389	70,400	12,404	0	8	30,335 11 7
1844	3,467	163	14	56	85	18,861	82	17,982	36,501	7,355	13	11	26,240 12 4
1845	4,304	154	12	32	51	8,502	50	6,508	44,329	7,494	16	8	26,900 1 11
1846	4,655	..	..	..	98	21,167	101	22,439	84,953	13,901	4	0	24,710 0 10
Total Northern Division					499	107,769	560	106,198	432,433	101,954	13	11	207,065 2 4

SOUTHERN DIVISION.

1840	1,300	..	..	..	74	18,922	48	13,518	9,141	11,510	53,626	....	836	5	9	1,550 19 11
1841	2,800	..	..	..	117	28,216	92	21,636	10,996	13,147	132,771	12,321	4,425	9	2	4,524 9 10
1842	7,144	..	..	..	93	23,363	85	20,139	10,679	10,315	120,804	29,688	13,468	7	7	10,610 1 9
1843	8,254	28½	30½	28½	92	22,154	97	20,340	8,285	9,188	60,859	32,081	13,351	12	4	13,006 3 3
1844	8,480	450	46	85	104	6,497	54	6,573	9,235	9,024	50,060	28,505	9,789	17	7	12,386 11 10
1845	8,470	426	52	53	50	10,714	56	8,527	7,491	9,243	70,521	34,363	6,478	2	10	13,251 18 1
1846	8,380	333	39	65	56	10,714	56	8,527	7,491	9,243	70,521	34,363	9,414	16	2	26,553 15 4
Total Southern Division																
503																
109,796																
432																
90,733																
55,827																
62,427																
488,641																
151,405																
57,764																
11																
5																
81,984																
0																
0																
Total of the Colony for }																
the years mentioned																
1,002																
217,565																
938																
196,931																
55,827																
62,427																
921,074																
159,719																
5																
4																
289,049																
2																
4																

* Author of "Statistics of the Southern Settlements," and late Secretary to the Superintendent of the Southern Division.

† The Northern Division includes Auckland and Russell; the Southern, Wellington, Nelson, Petre, New Plymouth, and Akaroa.
‡ For Wellington only.

The following is an extract from a recent *New Zealand Journal*:

“CUSTOMS’ REVENUE OF NORTHERN AND SOUTHERN SETTLEMENTS.

	1846.			1847.		
	£	s.	d.	£	s.	d.
“ Auckland.....	11,155	10	9	17,970	19	1
Wellington	6,368	14	10	15,551	3	2
Nelson.....	1,070	1	7	1,361	1	5
Russell	447	7	9	626	13	11
New Plymouth	212	17	0	163	10	10
Total	19,254	11	11	35,673	8	5

“ The above figures show that there has been an increase in the customs of 16,418*l.* 16*s.* 6*d.*, or nearly 100 per cent. accession of duties, and consequent increase of trade during the year ending 5th of January last.’

“ The total increase thus gained in the whole Colony is not quite so great as that above stated, being actually 86 per cent. But it is worthy of remark, that the amount of increase exhibited by the Southern Settlements, is very far above that rate, while that of the Northern is proportionately below it. Arranging the above figures in a somewhat different order, the results are:—

	1846.			1847.		
	£	s.	d.	£	s.	d.
Auckland.....	11,155	10	9	17,970	19	1
Russell	447	7	9	626	13	11
	11,602	18	6	18,597	13	0
Wellington	6,368	14	10	15,551	3	2
Nelson.....	1,070	1	7	1,361	1	5
New Plymouth	212	17	0	163	10	10
	7,651	13	5	17,075	15	5

“ Thus the rate of increase for the Northern Settlements is a little more than 60 per cent.; and that for the Southern Settlements 123 per cent., notwithstanding the deficiency of New Plymouth. Next year the colony of Otago will still further swell the revenue of the Southern Settlements.

“ The Auckland paper from which these returns are taken, makes the following remarks upon them:—

“ A comparative statement of the Customs’ Revenue, collected at

the several ports in New Zealand, during the years ended 5th of January, 1847, and the same date in 1848, is also published. The total sum collected during the former period was 19,254*l.* 11*s.* 11*d.*; and during the latter, 35,673*l.* 8*s.* 5*d.*, showing an increase for the last year over the former of 16,468*l.* 2*s.* 8*d.* The Auckland increase is stated at 6,815*l.* 8*s.* 4*d.*, while that of Wellington is put down at 9,182*l.* 8*s.* 4*d.*, but this is owing to the presence of a large naval and military force which it was found necessary to maintain at Wellington and Wanganui during the past year. The total sum collected at Auckland, during the year 1847, amounts to 17,970*l.* 19*s.* 1*d.*; at Wellington, during the same period, 15,551*l.* 3*s.* 2*d.*

“It must, however, be remembered, that the naval and military force which had heretofore made its expenditure exclusively at Auckland and Russell, has been increased at those places to a still greater degree than at Wellington. The regular military forces quartered in New Zealand have been about equally divided between the Northern and Southern districts: but the Pensioners, or New Zealand Fencibles, with their wives and children, and their principal and other commanding officers, have been entirely quartered in the immediate neighbourhood of Auckland; and, moreover, the Commander-in-Chief, Major-General Pitt, with all his staff, also resides at Auckland.”

A STATEMENT of the Vessels that have sailed for New Zealand from the United Kingdom, either Chartered by the New Zealand Company or under the Company's sanction; together with the number of persons that have proceeded to the Colony, as passengers by each vessel:—

VESSEL.		DEPARTURE.		ARRIVAL.		PASSENGERS.									
No.	NAME AND TONNAGE.	DATE.	PORT.	SETTLEMENT.	DATE.	CABIN.			STEERAGE.			TOTAL.		General Total.	
						14 years of age and upwards.			Under 14 years of age.			Male.	Female.		
						M.	F.	U.	M.	F.	U.				
1.	Tory.....	1839. May 6	Gravesend	Port Nicholson	1839. Aug. 16	6	..	..	..	..	..	..	6	..	6
2.	Cuba.....	July 31	..	..	1840. Jan. 3	8	..	..	22	..	..	..	30	..	30
3.	Oriental	Sept. 15	..	..	" Feb. 1	18	3	..	62	36	13	22	93	61	154
4.	Aurora	" 18	..	..	March 7	14	6	1	50	35	26	14	91	55	146
5.	Adelaide .....	" "	..	..	March 7	20	8	4	45	47	28	20	97	79	176
6.	Duke of Roxburgh	Oct. 5	Plymouth	..	Feb. 19	15	11	8	7	37	41	27	21	87	80
7.	Bengal Merchant	31	Glasgow	..	March 2	22	7	6	53	36	21	13	102	59	161
8.	Glenbervie	" 20	Gravesend	..	" 7	2	..	..	..	..	..	..	2	..	2
9.	Bolton	Nov. 19	..	..	April 20	9	9	6	56	45	54	44	125	107	232
10.	Coronandel	Dec. 13	..	..	Aug. 29	5	..	..	7	9	12	8	24	17	41
11.	Brougham	1840. Feb. 16	..	..	June 25	5	..	..	..	..	..	..	5	..	5
12.	Platina.....	" 24	..	..	July 6	1	..	..	1	..	..	..	2	..	2
13.	Martha Ridgway	July 5	..	..	Nov. 14	12	5	5	59	57	47	36	123	102	225
14.	London.....	Aug. 13	..	..	Dec. 12	23	9	5	57	62	38	31	123	105	228
15.	Blenheim	" 25	Greenock	..	" 27	7	3	6	76	49	25	27	114	83	197

16. Slatts Castle	500	Sept. 14	Gravesend	Port Nicholson	1841.	4	1	1	65	62	43	48	113	111	224
17. Lady Nugent	600	Oct. 21	..	..	Jan. 25	13	2	2	70	57	71	46	156	107	263
18. Olympus ..	500	Dec. 8	..	..	April 20	11	2	..	43	38	20	45	74	85	159
19. Bailey	163	" 23	..	..	" 10	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..
20. Lord William Bentinck	444	Jan. 7	..	..	May 22	4	4	..	63	54	65	52	132	110	242
21. Cath. Stewart Forbes..	457	Feb. 5	..	..	June 24	3	..	..	71	61	23	18	97	79	176
22. Tyne.....	500	April 6	..	Auckland	Aug. 9	11	1	..	31	28	15	12	57	41	98
23. Prince Rupert	500	" 21	..	Lost at Cape } of Good Hope }	..	19	10	7	27	19	17	20	70	55	125
24. Whithy	347	" 27	..	Nelson	Sept. 18	15	..	..	44	..	..	..	59	..	59
25. Will Watch	251	" 27	..	..	" 8	12	..	..	33	..	..	..	45	..	45
26. Arrow	212	May 21	..	Port Nicholson	Aug. 28	6	..	..	52	47	43	60	101	107	208
27. Arab.....	484	June 3	..	..	Oct. 16	3	..	..	69	57	44	46	116	104	220
28. Gertrude	560	" 19	..	..	Nov. 1	3	1	..	50	38	47	39	112	79	191
29. Oriental	506	" 22	Plymouth	New Plymouth	" 19	9	2	6	..	..	..	..	..	..	..
30. Mandarin	425	Aug. 6	Gravesend	Wellington	Dec. 21	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..
31. Lloyds	500	Sept. 11	..	Nelson	1842.	2	3	2	1	71	83	58	88	134	222
32. Mary Ann	600	" 24	Deal	..	Feb. 11	10	4	3	48	45	49	34	110	88	198
33. Fifehire	557	" 26	..	..	Jan. 28	12	7	1	46	41	29	34	88	82	170
34. Lord Auckland	482	" 27	..	..	" 19	16	2	1	42	40	34	39	93	81	174
35. Brougham	250	Oct. 2	Gravesend	Wellington	Feb. 7	18	3	2	1	1	..	..	21	6	27
36. Clifton	820	" 2	..	..	" 9	3	1	..	80	68	68	67	151	136	287
37. Birman	544	" 13	..	..	" 18	1	..	..	68	65	53	48	122	113	235
38. Bolton	540	" 29	..	Nelson	March 1	6	..	..	74	81	67	63	145	144	289
39. Timandra	382	Nov. 2	Plymouth	New Plymouth	Feb. 24	4	3	..	50	51	59	42	115	97	212
40. Martha Ridgway	621	" 6	Liverpool	Nelson	Mar. 30	12	4	..	63	57	51	48	126	109	235
41. London.....	388	" 17	Gravesend	..	April 5	13	2	4	39	41	44	38	100	85	185
42. Clifford	461	Dec. 18	..	..	May 3	3	5	4	41	40	29	38	77	84	161
43. London	612	1842.	..	Wellington	" 1	13	6	3	68	68	69	54	153	131	284
44. Sir Charles Forbes	400	Jan. 2	..	Nelson	Aug. 23	3	..	..	59	56	24	30	86	86	172
45. Thomas Harrison.....	400	May 26	..	..	Oct. 25	6	1	..	55	50	46	34	107	85	192

APPENDIX C—continued.

VESSEL.		DEPARTURE.		ARRIVAL.		PASSENGERS.									
NAME AND TONNAGE.	DATE.	PORT.	SETTLEMENT.	DATE.	CABIN.			STEERAGE.			TOTAL.		General Total.		
					14 years of age and upwards.	Under 14 years of age.	Under 14 years of age.	14 years of age and upwards.	Under 14 years of age.	Male.	Female.				
No.	1842.				M.	F.	M.	F.	M.	F.	M.	F.			
46. Olympus.....	June 16	Gravesend	Nelson	1842. Oct. 28	5	..	35	37	28	34	68	71	139		
47. George Fyfe	" 16	"	Wellington	Nov. 7	36	16	22	21	9	14	74	55	129		
48. Blenheim	July 1	Plymouth	New Plymouth	" 7	26	10	32	32	23	23	86	73	159		
49. New Zealand.....	" 4	Greenock	Nelson	" 4	3	..	39	42	34	29	76	71	147		
50. Thomas Sparks.....	" 27	Gravesend	"	1843. Feb. 18	26	6	24	18	13	10	66	36	102		
51. Bombay	Aug. 1	"	"	1842. Dec. 14	15	4	37	44	26	28	86	83	169		
52. Prince of Wales.....	Sep. 2	"	"	" 23	19	15	48	43	36	31	106	95	201		
53. Essex	Sept. 3	Plymouth	New Plymouth	" 2	2	..	39	37	17	20	59	57	116		
54. Indus	Oct. 1	Gravesend	Nelson	1843. Feb. 5	2	1	53	40	25	31	79	72	151		
55. Phoebe.....	Nov. 16	"	"	Mar. 29	38	10	35	36	25	19	108	75	183		
56. St. Paul	Dec. 26	Hamburgh	"	" ..	6	3	50	31	22	20	81	59	140		
57. Tyne	1843. Feb. 9	Gravesend	Wellington, Nelson, and New Plymouth	" ..	20	4	5	2	3	..	25	6	31		
58. Ursula	May 20	"		" ..	27	8	3	2	1	35	14	49	
59. Himalaya	Sep. 1	"		" ..	35	14	10	8	45	22	67	
60. Theresa	Nov. 20	"		" ..	25	9	12	9	10	7	1	48	27	75	
61. Bella Marina.....	1844. Jan. 26	"	Hamburgh	" ..	21	10	7	4	..	..	28	14	42
62. Skold	April 21	"		" ..	4	1	39	27	35	34	79	62	141		

APPENDIX D.

LIST OF PUBLICATIONS RELATIVE TO NEW ZEALAND.

(Those marked * are especially worthy of attention.)

- *1770-80. Cook's Second and Third Voyages.
- 1807. Some Account of New Zealand, by John Savage, Surgeon.
- *1817. Narrative of a Voyage to New Zealand, by J. L. Nicholas,
2 vols. Black.
- 1824. Journal of a Ten Months' Residence in New Zealand, by
Major Cruize.
- *1830. The New Zealanders (Library of Entertaining Knowledge).
- 1832. Busby's Information on New Zealand and Australia.
- 1832. Narrative of Nine Months' Residence in New Zealand, by
Augustus Earl, draftsman to H. M. S. *Beagle*.
- 1835. Yate's Account of New Zealand.
- 1836. Ellis's Polynesian Researches. Fisher.
- *1837. The British Colonization of New Zealand, published for the
New Zealand Association.
- *1838. Official Documents relative to New Zealand, with Observa-
tions by Dr. Hinds. Parker.
- 1838. Polack's Residence in New Zealand, 2 vols.
- 1839. Emigration Fields, by Patrick Mathew. Longman.
- *1839. New Zealand in 1839, or Four Letters to Lord Durham, by
John Dunmore Lang, D.D. Smith, Elder, and Co.
- 1839. Ward's Information on New Zealand, and Supplementary
Volume. Parker.
- 1839. Alison's Speech on New Zealand, at Glasgow. Effingham
Wilson.
- 1839. Popular Account of New Zealand. Glasgow, Lumsden.
- 1839. Walton's Twelve Months' Residence in New Zealand.
Glasgow, W. R. M'Phun.
- 1840. Johnson's Plain Truths on the New Zealand and Australian
Settlements. Smith, Elder, and Co.
- 1840. Campbell's Present State, &c., of New Zealand. Smith,
Elder, and Co.
- *1840. Rev. Montague Hawtrey's Address to New Zealand Colonists.
- *1840. Bishop of London's Letter to the Archbishop of Canterbury,
on Colonial Bishops.
- 1841. Hodgskin's Eight Months in New Zealand.
- 1841. Letters from Emigrants, published by the New Zealand
Company.
- 1841. Carpenter's Relief for the Unemployed. Strange.
- *1841. Hon. H. W. Petre's Account of New Zealand. Smith,
Elder, and Co.
- 1841. Bright's Handbook for New Zealand Emigrants. Hooper.

1842. Heaphy's New Zealand. Smith, Elder, and Co.
1842. New Zealand, &c. (New Library of Useful Knowledge.) Cradock.
1842. Chapman's New Zealand Portfolio. Smith, Elder, and Co.
1842. Bell and Young on New Zealand Flax. Smith, Elder, and Co.
1842. How to Colonize, by Ross Donnelly Mangles, Esq., M.P. Smith, Elder, and Co.
1842. New Zealand, Nelson—by Kappa. Smith, Elder, and Co.
1842. Fox's Colonization of New Zealand. Smith, Elder, and Co.
1842. Latest Information as to New Plymouth. Smith, Elder, and Co.
1842. Translation of Professor Ritter's Colonization of New Zealand. Smith, Elder, and Co.
1842. New Zealand, by Charles Perry, Esq. Boone.
1842. New Zealand, by R. G. Jameson, Esq.
1842. Ward's Information on New Zealand, 4th Edition. Parker.
- *1842. Bidwell's Rambles in New Zealand.
- *1843. Speech of Charles Buller, Esq., M.P., on Systematic Colonization. Murray.
- *1843. Dieffenbach's Travels in New Zealand, 2 vols. Murray.
1843. Lieut. Wood's Pamphlet on New Zealand. Richardson.
1843. Jennings's New Zealand Colonization. Richardson.
1843. Letters from Settlers. Smith, Elder, and Co.
- *1843. Letters from the Bishop of New Zealand, published by the Society for the Propagation of the Gospel. Rivington.
- *1844. New Zealand, Part I., published by do. Rivington.
1844. Stokes's Letter to Lord Devon on the Wairoa Massacre. Longman.
1844. Supplements to the "New Zealand Gazette" of the 26th of August, 1843, and the "Nelson Examiner" of the 6th of January, 1844.
1844. The New Zealanders and their Lands, by Dandeson Coates, Esq. Hatchards.
1844. Christian Remembrancer, No. 40. Burns.
1844. Donlan's Letter to Absentee Landholders. Aird.
1845. Brown's New Zealand and its Aborigines. Smith, Elder, and Co.
1845. Dr. Martin's New Zealand and its Affairs. Simmonds.
1845. Scheme of the Free Church Colony at Otago. Glasgow.
1845. Marjoribanks's Travels in New Zealand. Smith, Elder, and Co.
1845. Brodie's Past and Present State of New Zealand. Whittaker.
- *1845. Edw. Jerningham Wakefield's Adventure in New Zealand, 2 vols. Murray.
- *1845. Views in New Zealand, illustrating the above. Smith, Elder, and Co.

1845. Letters from Wanganui. Churton.
 1845. Lieut. Wood's New Zealand and its Claimants. Richardson.
 1845. The New Zealand Company, its claim to Compensation considered. Seeley.
 *1845. The Colonies and the Colonial Government, by Colonel the Hon. Sir Edward Cust. Hatchards.
 *1845. Supplement to the "Spectator" newspaper, exclusively on New Zealand. 4th January, 1845.
 *1845. New Zealand, Part II., by the Society for the Propagation of the Gospel. Rivington.
 *1845. New Zealand, Part III., do. do.
 *1845. Report of the Debate on the 15th, 17th, and 19th of June, on New Zealand. With an Appendix, containing:—
 1. The Petition of the New Zealand Company; 2. The Petition of the New Zealand Colonists; 3. The Resolution of the Select Committee in 1844; 4. A List of the Division on the New Zealand Debate. Murray. 285 pp.
 1846. New Zealand, in the March Number of the "Westminster Review."
 1846. Brees's Pictorial Illustrations of New Zealand.
 *1846. Angas's Illustrations of New Zealand.
 1846. Angas's Savage Scenes in Australia and New Zealand.
 1848. The Emigrant's Guide to New Zealand. Stewart and Murray.

REPORTS AND PUBLICATIONS OF—

- The Society for Promoting Christian Knowledge;
 *The Society for the Propagation of the Gospel in Foreign Parts;
 *The Church Missionary Society;
 The Wesleyan Missionary Society;
 The London Missionary Society;
 The Aborigines Protection Society; and
 *The New Zealand Company, commencing in 1840.
 *The New Zealand Journal, commencing in 1840.
 Knight's (Quarterly) Colonization Circular, commencing in 1841.
 The New Zealand Government Gazette, commencing in 1841.
 The Minutes and Proceedings of the Legislative Council of the Colony, commencing in 1841.
 The Colonial Ordinances, commencing in 1841.
 Rules and Orders touching the Practice of the Supreme Court of New Zealand, 1844.

ACTS OF PARLIAMENT.

1828. 9 George IV., c. 83. An Act to provide for the Administration of Justice in New South Wales and Van Diemen's Land, and for the more effectual Government thereof, and for other purposes relating thereto. [25th July, 1828.]

1840. 3 and 4 Victoria, c. 62. An Act to continue until the 31st day of December, 1841, and to the end of the then next Session of Parliament, and to extend the Provisions of an Act to provide for the Administration of Justice in New South Wales and Van Diemen's Land, and for the more effectual Government thereof, and for other purposes relating thereto. [7th August, 1840.]
1842. 5 and 6 Victoria, c. 36. An Act for regulating the Sale of Waste Land belonging to the Crown in the Australian Colonies. [22nd June, 1842.]
1842. 5 and 6 Victoria, c. 107. An Act for regulating the Carriage of Passengers in Merchant Vessels. [12th August, 1842.]
1843. 6 Victoria, c. 22. An Act to authorise the Legislatures of certain of Her Majesty's Colonies to pass Laws for the admission, in certain cases, of Unsworn Testimony in Civil and Criminal Proceedings. [31st May, 1843.]
1846. 9 and 10 Victoria, c. 42. An Act to authorize a Loan from the Consolidated Fund to the New Zealand Company. [3rd August, 1846.]
1846. 9 and 10 Victoria, c. 382. An Act to grant certain powers to the New Zealand Company. [18th August, 1846.]
1846. 9 and 10 Victoria, c. 82. An Act to amend an Act of the present Session for authorizing a Loan from the Consolidated Fund to the New Zealand Company. [26th August, 1846.]
1846. 9 and 10 Victoria, c. 103. An Act to make further provision for the Government of the New Zealand Islands. [28th August, 1846.]
1847. 10 and 11 Victoria, c. 103. An Act to amend the Passengers' Act, and to make further provision for the Carriage of Passengers by Sea. [22nd July, 1847.]
1847. 10 and 11 Victoria, c. 112. An Act to promote Colonization in New Zealand, and to authorize a Loan to the New Zealand Company. [23rd July, 1847.]
1848. 11 Victoria, c. 5. An Act to suspend for Five Years the operation of certain parts of an Act of the tenth year of her present Majesty, for making further provision for the Government of the New Zealand Islands, and to make other provision in lieu thereof. [7th March, 1848.]

PARLIAMENTARY PAPERS.

1835. Correspondence respecting an Expedition for the Recovery of British Subjects detained by the Natives. No. 585.
1836. Report of Select Committee on the Disposal of Lands in British Colonies. H. G. Ward, Esq., in the Chair. 1st August, 1836. No 512.

- 1836. Report of Select Committee on Aborigines. Sir T. F. Buxton in the Chair. August, 1836. No. 538.
- 1837. Report of Select Committee on Aborigines. Sir T. F. Buxton in the Chair. 26th June, 1837. No. 425.
- 1838. Report of Select Committee of the House of Lords on the State of the Islands of New Zealand. Earl of Devon in the Chair. No. 680.
- 1838. Bill for the Provisional Government of British Settlements in the Islands of New Zealand. Prepared and brought in by the Honourable Francis Baring and Sir George Sinclair. 1st June, 1838.
- 1839. Treasury Minute sanctioning an advance out of the Revenues of New South Wales for a Consul to New Zealand. No. 469.
- 1840. Commissions appointing T. F. Elliot and R. Torrens, Esqs., and the Honourable Edward E. Villiers, Colonial Land and Emigration Commissioners. No. 35.
- 1840. Vessels cleared out in 1838 and 1839. No. 197.
- 1840. Despatches from the Governor of New South Wales relative to New Zealand. No. 560.
- 1840. Report of Select Committee on the Petition of the Merchants and Bankers of the City of London respecting the Colonization of New Zealand. Lord Eliot in the Chair. 3rd August, 1840. No. 582.
- 1840. Report of the Colonial Land and Emigration Commissioners since the commencement of the year 1840. No. 613.
- 1840. Correspondence relative to New Zealand from 1st December, 1838, to 18th March, 1840. [No. 238.]
- 1841. Correspondence relative to New Zealand from 9th February, 1840, to 3rd May, 1841. No. 311.
- 1842. Laws and Ordinances passed by the Governor and Council of New Zealand, 4 and 5 Victoria, 1841. No. 61.
- 1842. Bill for regulating the Survey and Sales of Land belonging to the Crown in the Australian Colonies and New Zealand. Prepared and brought in by Lord Stanley and Mr. G. W. Hope. 22nd March, 1842. No. 124.
- 1842. Papers respecting the Debt due by the Government of New Zealand to the Colony of New South Wales. No. 408.
- 1842. Estimated Revenue and Expenditure of New Zealand for one Year. No. 493.
- 1842. General Report of the Colonial Land and Emigration Commissioners, 30th July, 1842. No. 567.
- 1842. Estimated Revenue and Expenditure of New Zealand for one Year, commencing 2nd May, 1841. No. 568.
- 1842. Correspondence relative to New Zealand from 18th May, 1841, to 5th August, 1842, together with a Return of Government Land Sales. No. 569.

1842. Account of the Receipts and Expenditure of the Colony of New Zealand from 2nd May to 31st December, 1841. No. 583.
1843. Correspondence relative to the New Zealand Estimates. No. 134.
1843. Bill to authorize Unsworn Testimony in the Colonies. No. 164.
1843. Correspondence relative to Emigration, and to the Sale of Colonial Lands. No. 323.
1843. General Report of the Colonial Land and Emigration Commissioners. 23rd August, 1843. No. 621.
1844. Laws and Ordinances passed by the Governor and Council of New Zealand, 5 Victoria, 1841-42. No. 61.
1844. General Report of the Colonial Land and Emigration Commissioners. 2nd April, 1844. No. 178.
1844. Return of Income and Expenditure of New Zealand for the Years 1840-42; also, of Population, Ships, Customs, Duties, and Charges of Collection, in 1841 and 1842 (in continuation of No. 583, of Session 1842). No. 328.
1844. Report of Select Committee on New Zealand. Viscount Howick in the Chair. 23rd July, 1844. No. 556.
1844. Abstract of Colonial Blue-Books for the Year 1842, and of Military and Naval Expenditure for the Colonies in 1843. No. 608.
1844. Letter from the Secretary of the Church Missionary Society to Lord Stanley relative to the Affairs of New Zealand. No. 641.
1845. Despatches from Lord Stanley to Governor Fitzroy, dated respectively 13th and 17th August, 1844. No. 1.
1845. Return of the Date at which each Colony or Foreign Possession of the British Crown was captured, ceded, or settled; its Population, Government, Exports, Imports, and Vessels entered and cleared in the Year 1842. No. 49.
1845. Letters from Mr. Willoughby Shortland, late acting Governor of New Zealand; and from Mr. James Busby, late British Resident. No. 108.
1845. Correspondence respecting Debentures, Taxes, and the Sale of Land by the Natives. No. 191.
1845. Fifth General Report of the Colonial Land and Emigration Commissioners. 20th March, 1845. No. [617.]
1845. Correspondence relating to the Manakau New Zealand Company. No. 245.
1845. Return of all Claims for Land preferred before the Commissioners of Land Claims in New Zealand, by or on behalf of any persons who were, in 1838, Missionaries, Catechists, or Schoolmasters of the Church Missionary Society; also, of all Claims for Land other than those included in the above. No. 246.

1845. Despatches from the Governor of New Zealand from 18th April to 16th September, 1844 (in continuation of No. 131). No. 247.
1845. Account of Grants, Endowments, and Appropriations made for the purpose of Religious Instruction or of Education in the Colonies for the Years 1840, 1841, and 1842. (No. 176.)
1845. Correspondence between Lord Stanley and the New Zealand Company as to the establishment of a Proprietary Government in New Zealand. No. 357.
1845. Despatches from the Governor of New Zealand from the 16th September to the 19th December, 1844 (in continuation of No. 247). No. 369.
1845. Returns relating to Claims to Land in New Zealand, Pre-emption of Land, &c. &c. No. 378.
1845. Correspondence between the Government and the New Zealand Company between the 19th June and the 6th July, 1844. No. 517.—I.
1845. Correspondence relative to an Attack on the British Settlement at the Bay of Islands by the Natives of New Zealand. No. 517.—II.
1845. Report of Select Committee on Colonial Accounts. Dr. Bowring in the Chair. 17th July, 1845. No. 520.
1845. Return of Agents for the Colonies at present acting in Great Britain, and recognised as such by the Colonial Office. No. 623.
1845. Bill to amend an Act for regulating the Sale of Waste Lands belonging to the Crown in the Australian Colonies, and to make further provision for the management thereof. Prepared and brought in by Mr. G. W. Hope and Mr. Bingham Baring. 8th August, 1845. Nos. 605, 645.
1845. Correspondence relative to the original Constitution of the Legislature of New Zealand. No. 660.
1845. Letter from Lord Ingestre to Lord Stanley on the 24th July, 1845, and the Reply, relative to the Affairs of the New Zealand Company. No. 661.
1846. Sixth General Report of the Colonial Land and Emigration Commissioners. 30th April . . . No. [706.]
1846. Bill to authorize New Zealand Loan No. 435.
1846. Bill to make further provision for New Zealand Government No. 623.
1846. New Zealand Loan Act Amendment Bill No. 624.
1846. Return respecting H. S. Chapman, Esq., (New Zealand) No. 63.
1846. Papers respecting Land Claims (with Plans) New Zealand No. 203.
1846. Correspondence relative to a Loan in aid of New Zealand No. 271.

1846. Further Correspondence relative to New Zealand No. 337.
 1846. Further Papers relative to New Zealand (with a Plan) No. 448.
 1846. Further Papers relative to New Zealand (with a Plan) No. 690.
 1846. Correspondence respecting Mr. Halswell, New Zealand No. 722.
 1846. Correspondence with Lieutenant-Governor Grey, New Zealand No. [712.]
 1847. Seventh General Report of the Colonial Land and Emigration Commissioners. 30th April . . No. [809.]
 1847. Bill (No. 2.) to promote Colonization in New Zealand No. 663.
 1847. Correspondence with Governor Grey No. [763.]
 1847. Correspondence with Governor Grey No. [837.]
 1847-8. Further Papers relative to the Affairs of New Zealand No. 641.
 1847-8. Correspondence with Governor Grey No. [892.]
 1847-8. Further Correspondence No. [899.]
 1847-8. Bill to suspend Act respecting New Zealand Government No. 31.
 1848. Further Papers relative to New Zealand, presented by command, September, 1848, in continuation of Papers presented January, June, and December, 1847, and February, 1848.
 1848. Eighth General Report of the Colonial Land and Emigration Commissioners. 30th April.

Besides the works above enumerated, there have frequently appeared articles on New Zealand in *Simmonds's Colonial Magazine*, the *Colonial Gazette*, *The Times*, *Chronicle*, and other morning and evening papers.

Maps of New Zealand, and of many of the Harbours and Districts separately, have been published by Wyld, of Charing-cross, Arrowsmith, of Soho-square, and Smith, Elder, and Co., Cornhill. Many of Wyld's maps and charts are very inaccurate. Arrowsmith's last map is by far the most authentic and recent yet produced. The publications of Smith and Elder, chiefly of separate districts in the Southern Settlements, are published for the New Zealand Company, from their official surveys.

I N D E X.

A.	Page		Page
ABORIGINES, 49, 51, 65, 70, 77, 82, 99, 100, 113, 120, 174, 187, 193, 202, 211, 222, 230, 238, 248, 263, 271, 285, 287, 296, 338, 342, 350, 354, 357, 376, 387, 397, 401		Auckland Town described . . .	345
Accounts of New Zealand Com- pany . . .	411	Awaroa River and Valley . . .	385
Acts of Parliament, List of, re- lating to New Zealand . . .	482		
Admiralty Bay . . .	223	B.	
Aglionby, Village of . . .	103	Banks . . .	198, 271, 382
Valley . . .	237	Banks's Peninsula . . .	327
Agreement between Government and Company, 1840 . . .	68	Baring's Bill, 1838 . . .	62
Agreement qualified, by Lord Stanley, 1843 . . .	75	Barley . . .	151, 246
Agreement with Lord Grey, 1847 82, 416		Baron de Thierry . . .	53, 57
Agricultural Instruments, &c. . .	447	Barrier Island . . .	346
Returns, 190, 264, 288, 379		Barristers and Solicitors, 201, 272, 290	
Agricultural Society . . .	247	Bay of Islands . . .	396
Akaroa Harbour . . .	334	Plenty . . .	357
Albatross . . .	165	Beans . . .	152
Almanack, Cook's Strait . . .	202	Beer . . .	182, 246
Alps, Southern . . .	41, 214, 293	Bees . . .	171, 251, 280
Animals, Indigenous . . .	153, 247	Birds, for exportation . . .	449
Introduced . . .	165, 247, 280	indigenous . . .	161
Anise-plant . . .	149, 246, 304	introduced . . .	166
Anniversary Festival . . .	202	Bishop, appointment of . . .	70
Ants . . .	170	Blind Bay . . .	215, 219
Aorere Valley and District . . .	219	Blow-fly . . .	171
Aotea Harbour . . .	352	Blueskins . . .	309
Apteryx, or Kiwi . . .	162	Bluff Harbour . . .	307, 310
Arapawa Island . . .	226	Boats . . .	155, 448
Arthur, Lake . . .	237	Bold Head . . .	238
Association, Canterbury . . .	1, 86	Books, &c., for a Colonist . . .	438, 457
List of Members . . .	3	List of, relating to New Zealand . . .	480
Preliminary Arrange- ments . . .	8	Boundary between Provinces . . .	86
Association, Sketch of Plan . . .	4	British Government first esta- blished . . .	64
Association, New Zealand, of 1837 . . .	59	British Resident, 1831 . . .	56
Association of Lay Members of Free Church of Scotland . . .	81, 314	Brothers Rocks . . .	93, 231
Astrolabe Roads . . .	222	Buildings . . .	191, 264
Auckland, Foundation of . . .	66	Building-stone, (<i>see</i> Stone)	
District described . . .	339	Buller, Mr. Charles . . .	32, 78
Harbour described . . .	344	River . . .	236
		Burnham Water . . .	107
		C.	
		Capabilities of New Zealand . . .	27
		Cape Campbell . . .	234
		Foulwind . . .	236
		Carriage, &c., for exportation . . .	444
		Cask-staves, timber for . . .	246

	Page
Caterpillars	170
Cats	167
Cattle	169, 309, 444
Wild	128, 169
Cemeteries	197
Centipedes	170
Churches, 95, 96, 103, 110, 186, 211, 264, 275, 377	189
Civil Suits	189
Clay	175, 251
Climate, 46, 129, 212, 240, 280, 311, 355, 362, 402	422, 443
Clothes, for Voyage, &c.	231
Cloudy Bay	306
Clutha (or Molyneux) River and Plains	306
Coal, 37, 212, 217, 220, 225, 251, 266, 282, 312, 471	377
College, St. John's, Auckland	64
Colonists, embarkation of first	423
Colonists' Room at New Zealand House	26
Colonizing, Old English spirit of	75, 77
Committee, House of Commons, 1844	62
Company, New Zealand, 10, 19, 68, 97, 97, 100, 103, 106, 111, 175, 210, 251, 274, 284, 291, 297, 303, 314, 334, 341, 407, 453, 456, 459	347
Company, New Zealand Land, of 1839	426
Company, New Zealand, of 1825, 53, 347	70, 409
Constitution, proposed for New Zealand	35, 51, 226
Controversies between Govern- ment and Company	93, 231
Cook, Captain	341
Cook's Strait, narrow part of, 93, 231	177, 258,
Coromandel Harbour	375, 374
Cost of clearing Land, 177, 258, 375, 374	444
Cost of exporting Cattle, &c.	202, 271
Cricket Club	168, 264
Crime	223
Croisilles Harbour	223
Crown Grants to New Zealand Company	83, 297, 418
Customs' Duties	194

D.

Debate of 1845 in House of Commons	78
Deer, for exportation	250, 305, 449
De Thierry, Baron	53, 57
Directory, Auckland	382
Diocese of New Zealand	378
Military and Naval	207
Nelson	272
New Plymouth	290
Wellington	205

	Page
Distances from Wellington to various places	35
Dogs	166, 445
Ducks	166
wild	164
Dunedin	299
D'Urville Island	222
Dusky and Chalky Bays	308
Dye-woods	142, 143, 366

E.

Earthquakes	43, 136
East Bay	226
East Coast of Middle Island	326
Eastern entrance of Queen Char- lotte Sound	230
Education	185, 268, 288, 325
necessary for Colonists	436
Eels	161
Elliott, Port	111
Entry Island	127
Epuni, the Chief	101
Exchange	200
Exports, probable	182
Extent of New Zealand	34
Eyre, Lieutenant-Governor	85

F.

Face of the Country, 45, 87, 94, 138, 208, 214, 219, 245, 273, 293, 326, 341, 383	194
Fees in the Nature of Taxes	376
Fencibles, Royal New Zealand	112
Ferry	194, 446
Fire-arms, &c., for exportation, 194, 446	322
First Party of Otago Colonists	169
Fishes	169
Fitzroy, Governor, (<i>see Governor</i> .)	281
Flax, European	145, 225, 280
indigenous, or <i>phormium</i> <i>tenax</i>	166
Fowls	291
Free Church of Scotland Colony	207
Freemasons' Lodge	419
Free Passages	223
French Pass	67
Penal Settlement projected	152
Fruit-trees introduced	446
Furniture for exportation	140, 145
woods, indigenous, 140, 145	

G.

Game, for exportation	449
Gardening Calendar	131
Garrison	207, 213, 376, 398
Gecse	166
Gladstone, Mr., suggestions made by the N. Z. Company to	79
Glendavar Farm	107

	Page		Page
Goats	170	Independence proclaimed, 1835	57
Gorge of the Hutt	105	Inflexible, H.M. Steam-sloop, 217, 465	
Manawatu	88, 120	Influence of Climate on Soil	139
Government Finance, 195, 268,		Insects, indigenous	170
289, 380, 472		Iron	277, 281
Governor Fitzroy, 32, 75, 78, 81,		Ironmongery	446
115, 285, 291, 367			
Governor Grey, 22, 79, 80, 266,		J.	
286, 291, 294, 382, 457, 471		Jacob's River	307, 310
Governor Hobson, 64, 75, 295, 334, 339		Johnsonville, village of	110
Granite	235, 282		
Grain	150, 281	K.	
Grasses	151	Kaikoura District	127, 214, 235
Grasshopper	170	Mountains	41, 214
Green Jade	313	or Lookers-on Inlet	326
Grey and Greenstone Rivers	238	Kaipara Harbour	398
Grey, Governor, (<i>see Governor.</i>)		Kaipara-te-ao River and Plains	234
Guard Island	223	Kaitaia	386
Guinea-fowl	166	Kaituna Pass	224, 233
		Kaiwara-wara stream and village	99
H.		Kapiti Island	127
Happy Valley, Nelson	221	Karori district and road	97
Wellington	108	village	98
Harbour District, Wellington	107	Kauri timber	342, 365
Harbours, excellence and abun-		Kawia Harbour	352
dance of	45	Kenepuru District	111
Hauraki, Gulf of	341	Kerikeri River	395
Hauriri Harbour and Plains	89	Kororarika	397
Hawks	164		
Hawtrey Bay	107	L.	
Height of Mountains	41	Lakes, 42, 88, 107, 117, 121, 210,	
Herongate Farm	102	236, 295, 298, 305, 313, 332, 337,	
Hints for the passage and on		355, 394	
arrival	458	Lambton Harbour	93
Hints on preparation for intend-		Lampreys	161
ing Colonists	436	Land, distribution of, 175, 209,	
Hobson, Governor (<i>see Governor</i>)		251, 283, 367, 457	
Hogs, wild	167, 312	price and rent of	176, 374
Hokianga Harbour	392	purchase of	315, 419
Honey	173	sold at Otago	325
Hongi, the Chief	53, 54	Land-orders and Land, how to	
Hops	152, 246	buy	456, 459
Hopital Bay, or Port Chal-		Land-sharking	54, 63, 71, 81
mers	301, 303	Law-courts	201, 270
Horokiwi district	112	Legislation	69, 77, 423
Horowenua district and lake	117	Library	198, 271, 323
Horses	167, 445	Lime	175
Horticultural Society	201, 247	Limestone	220, 251
Hospital	206	List of Books relative to New	
Hotels	95, 96, 200, 201, 271	Zealand	480
House	445, 463	Live Stock	191, 261, 288
Howick, Lake	237	Lizards	153
Huatoki and Henui Rivers	275	Locust	170
Hutt, valley of the	100	Lookers-on, or Kaikoura Inlet	326
Lower	101	Lowry Bay	106
Upper	105	District	120
		M.	
I.		Maize	149
Imports and Exports, 192, 266,		Makara District	108
288, 380, 398, 473			

	Page
Mana, or Table Island	128
Manawatu River and District	116
Manganese	367
Mangold-wurzel	159, 381
Mangonui Harbour	390
Manufactories	191, 265
Manukao Harbour	348
Maps relating to New Zealand	487
Marble	396
Marsden, Rev. Samuel	5
Massacre Bay	219
Mathematical Instruments	449
Maunga-Tautari Hills	354
Mechanics' Institute	198, 271
Melons	150
Melville Cove	225
Mercury Bay	357, 362
Meteorological Tables, 134, 242, 311, 363, 404	
Milford Haven	308
Mills, 95, 99, 103, 110, 115, 119, 265, 289	
Milton Bay	229
Minerals . . 33, 44, 174, 281, 345, 367	
Missions and Missionaries, 49, 52, 57, 60, 65, 70, 95, 114, 212, 278, 280, 292, 309, 342, 350, 351, 362, 353, 354, 358, 359, 360, 362, 387, 388, 390, 392, 393, 394, 395, 401	
Moerangi	308
Molyneux (<i>see Clutha</i>)	
Mokau River	280
Money, how to export	452
Mosquitoes	171
Motueka river and district	221
Motupiko river and district	221
Motupipi	220
Mount Albert	94, 108
Carmel	384
Cook	95
Edgumbe	41
Egmont	41, 273
Victoria	108
Mountains, Ruahine	88
Tatarua	88
Volcanic	41
Moutere river and district	221
Mungaroa Valley	105
Music	441, 449
N.	
Nanto-Bordelaise Company	334
Neck Harbour	310
Nelson, Foundation of	69
District described	214
Haven	215
Town of	270
New Plymouth, district of	274
Town of	275
River	307

	Page
Newry farm	103
Newspapers	262, 271, 382
Newton, or Waitohe Bay	227
Ngahauranga stream	99
Nickel	282
Northern extremity of North Island	383
O.	
Oats	15
Odd Fellows' Lodge	201, 207
Official Report on New Zealand	
Coal	471
Ohariu District	109
Ohau River and District	115
Ohio District	108
Omnibus	204
Opinions as to the capabilities of	
New Zealand	27
Ordinances of Legislative Council	428
Otago District described	293
Harbour described	300
Terms of purchase of land	
at	315
Otaki River and District	115
Owls	164
Oysters	161, 247, 362
P.	
Pakiritahi Valley	106
Parliamentary Papers relative to	
New Zealand, List of	483
Parramatta Point	111
Parrots	163
Passage, particulars respecting,	419, 458
Patea River	274
Peafowl	166
Pelorus Sound	224
Petre, Town of	210
Pheasants	166
Phormium tenax	145, 225, 280
Piako River	360
Pigeon Bay	333
Pigeons	163
Pigs	167
Pilots	93, 304
Pipe-clay	251
Pitone road	98
village	100
Plants and Seeds for exportation	449
Ploughing-match	247
Population, 183, 211, 213, 262,	
287, 309, 325, 334, 337, 338, 376,	397, 473
Porirua district	112
harbour	111
road	110
Port Ashley	328
Chalmers	301, 303
Cooper	328
Gore	225

	Page		Page
Port Hardy	223	Sandy Bay	383
Nicholson	90	Seals	160
Somes	310	Season for Whale-Fishery	154
Underwood	231	Seasons	46, 130
Position of New Zealand	35	Seeds and Plants to be exported	449
Postal Arrangements	203	Shakspeare Bay	226
Potatoes	149	Sheep	170
Price and Rent of land	176, 258	Sheep-farming	122, 248, 444
Prices Current	179, 261, 287, 375	Ship Cove	226
Productions, Natural, 140, 212, 246, 280, 312, 365		Shipping	192, 268, 380, 398, 473
Provinces, boundary between the	86	Shipping despatched by New Zealand Company	476
Pukerua, village of	113	Signals at Port Nicholson	94
Q.		Singing-birds	165
Quail	164, 312	Soil	138, 210, 245, 280, 365
Queen Charlotte Sound	226	Solicitors and Barristers	201, 272, 290
R.		South Wanganui Harbour	235
Races	113, 115	Spider	170
Rangitikei River	208	Statistics, 126, 183, 211, 262, 287, 325, 376, 397, 473, 476	
Rangitoto Hills	280, 353	Steam Communication between England and New Zealand	36, 465
Rats	167	Steam Docks, facilities for	217
Rauparaha, the Chief	74, 83	Stewart's Island	310
Religion	186	Stone, Building	174, 282, 345, 396
Resemblance of New Zealand to British Isles	44	Sugarloaf Islands and Point, 273, 277	
Resemblance of New Zealand to Italy	43	Sulphur	359, 367
Resident, British, 1831	56	Summary of Information contained	1
Revenue and Expenditure, Government, 195, 268, 288, 374, 380, 472		Summary, Historical	50
Richmond, Fort	103	Summary of available land in Nelson District	239
Roads, 97, 98, 99, 100, 106, 110, 245, 275, 278, 388		T.	
Rocky Point	235	Table Island	128
Ruahine Mountains	88	Taieri plain	305
Ruapehu Mountain	41	Takaka Valley and District	220
Russell	397	Tamaki Inlet and District	345
S.		Taranaki, or New Plymouth District	273
Saddlery, &c., for exportation	443	Tararua Mountains	88
Sailing Directions, Astrolabe Roads	222	Taupo Lake	42
Sailing Directions, Auckland Harbour	344	Tauranga Harbour	358
Sailing Directions, Manawatu River	118	Te-awa-iti Village	230
Sailing Directions, Nelson Haven	218	Terawiti, Cape	109
Sailing Directions, New Plymouth Roads	276	Tettcott Farm	107
Sailing Directions, Otago Harbour	303	Thames, Frith, River and Valley of the	341, 359
Sailing Directions, Port Hardy	223	Tide in Cook's Strait	231
Sailing Directions, Port Nicholson	90	Timber, for Cask-staves	246
Sailing Directions, Wanganui River	209	Indigenous	140
Salubrity of Climate	49	Introduced	152
Sand-fly	171	Tin	367
		Tobacco	153
		Tokomairiro Plain	305
		Tonga Roro Mountain	41
		Tory Channel	226
		Town District, Wellington	108
		of Wellington	94
		Treaty of Waitangi	66

	Page
Turakina River	208
Turkeys	166
Turnips	152, 281

U.

Union Bank of Australia, 198, 271, 452
--

V.

Vegetable Productions,	
indigenous, 140, 246, 365	
introduced	149, 246
Vessels registered	192, 266
Victoria Haven, Massacre Bay	222
Vine	131, 246, 248
Volcanic action, traces of	42
Voyage, length of	36, 465

W.

Wade's Town	98
Wages	181, 262, 287, 375
Wai-a-te-ruati River	337
Waiho River, &c. (<i>see Thames</i>).	
Waikanae River and District	114
Waikato River and District, 350, 356	
Waikouaiti Village	309
Waimate, Bay of Islands	394
Cook's Strait	278
Waimea, River and Plain	221
Waingarua Harbour	351
Wai-nui-o-mata District	120
Waiongona River	278
Waiora Lake, Banks's Peninsula	337
Otago	305
Waipa River and Plains	353
Wairarapa, plain or valley of, 88, 121	
road	106

	Page
Wairau, Massacre of	74, 115, 235
Plain	231
River	232
Wairoa River	398
Waitangi River, Bay of Islands	395
Middle Island	338
Waitemata, or Auckland Harbour	344
Waitera River	278
Waitohe, or Newton Bay	227
Pass	228, 233
Waitotara and Wenuakura Rivers, 279	
Waiwakaio River	275
Waiwetu River	102, 104
Wakapuaka District	221
Wangaihu River	208
Wanganui River and District	209
South	235
Wangaroa Harbour	391
Wars, Native	55
Water-power, 44, 99, 100, 113,	
116, 117, 128, 289, 359, 395	
Watt's Peninsula	107
Wellington, District of	87
Town of	94
Whaling-stations, 55, 128, 154,	
193, 230, 276, 308, 337	
Whales	153
What Intending Colonists should	
<i>buy</i>	443
What Intending Colonists should	
<i>learn</i>	436
Wheat	150
White Bluff	234
Island	42, 357, 359
Wild Cattle	128, 169, 225
Ducks	164, 225
Hogs	167
Windmills	95, 103
Winds, strong	48

Domesticated Animals considered with reference to Civilization and the Arts. With Woodcuts. By Mary Roberts. 3s. 6d.

Wild Animals; their Nature, Habits, and Instincts: and the Regions they Inhabit. With Woodcuts. By the same. 3s. 6d.

Recreations in Physical Geography, or the Earth as it is. By Miss R. N. Zornlin. With numerous Woodcuts. 6s.

Recreations in Geology; with a Discourse on the Nature and Advantages of the Science. By the same. Many Woodcuts. 4s. 6d.

The World of Waters; or Recreations in Hydrology. By the Author of "RECREATIONS IN GEOLOGY, PHYSICAL GEOGRAPHY," &c. 6s.

Recreations in Astronomy. By Rev. Lewis Tomlinson, M.A. Many Woodcuts. 4s. 6d.

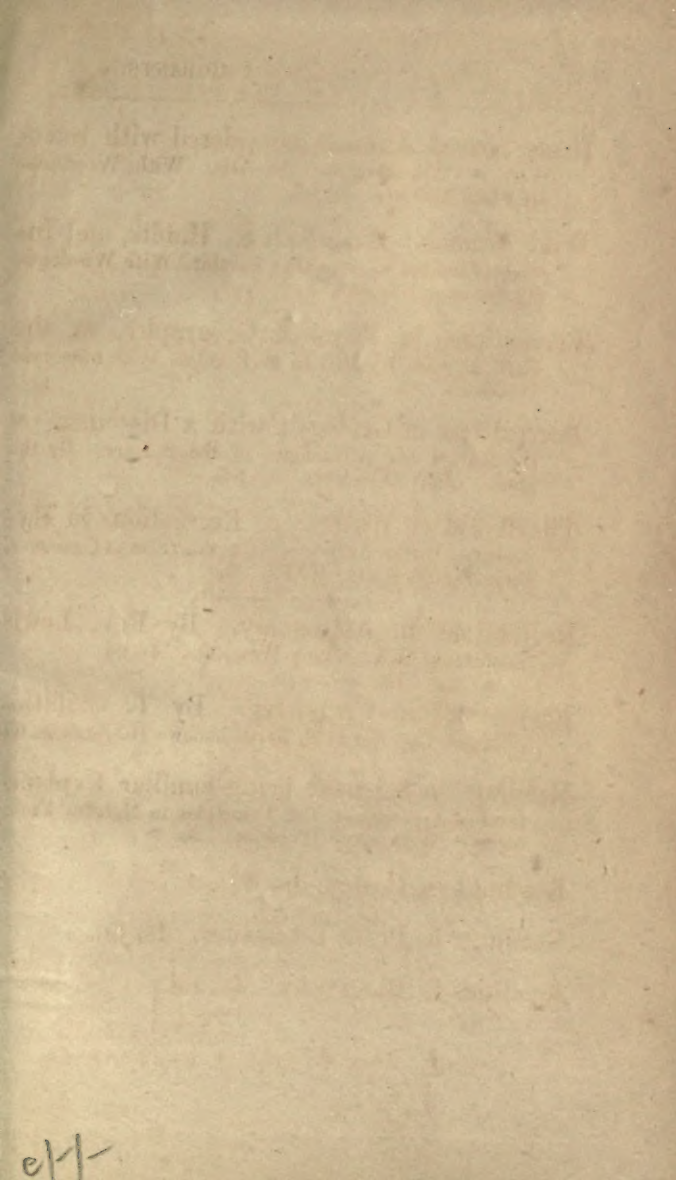
Recreations in Chemistry. By T. Griffiths. Chemical Lecturer to St. Bartholomew's Hospital. 4s. 6d.

Readings in Science; being familiar Explanations of Appearances and Principles in Natural Philosophy. With many Woodcuts. 5s.

Readings in Poetry, 4s. 6d.

Readings in Prose Literature. 4s. 6d.

Readings in Biography. 4s. 6d.



University of California
SOUTHERN REGIONAL LIBRARY FACILITY
405 Hilgard Avenue, Los Angeles, CA 90024-1388
Return this material to the library
from which it was borrowed.

NON-RENEWABLE

REC'D LD-URL

AUG 19 1998

SEP 15 1998

ILLUSTRATION

DUE 2 WKS FROM DATE RECEIVED

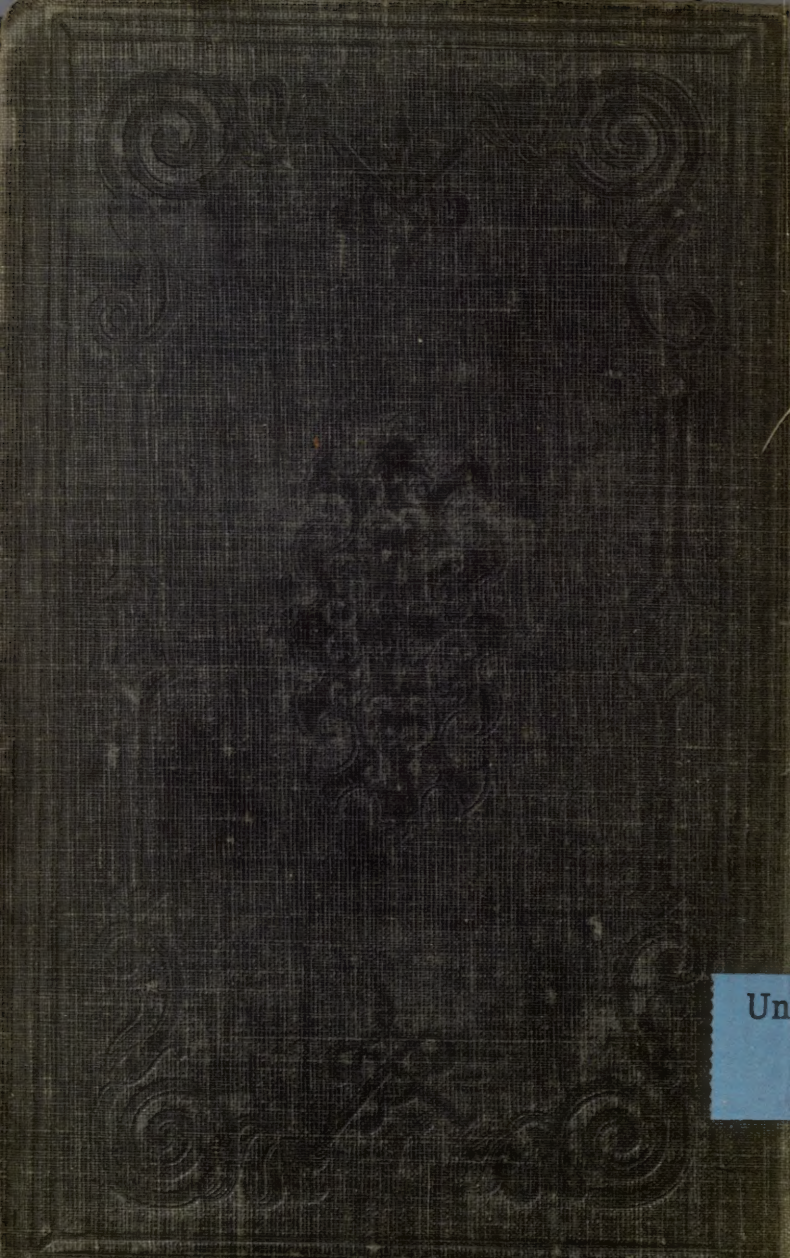
UC SOUTHERN REGIONAL LIBRARY FACILITY



A 000 665 156 6

Building Use

BUILDING USE



Un